













25



188  
D74  
1755  
Rare  
V.2

A

# S U M M A R Y,

Historical and Political,

O F T H E

First Planting, Progressive Improvements,  
and Present State of the BRITISH Set-  
tlements in NORTH-AMERICA.

C O N T A I N I N G

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| I. The History of the Provinces and Colonies of New-Hampshire, Rhode-Island, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jerseys, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia; their several original Settlements and gradual Improvements; their Boundaries, Produce and Manufac- | tures, Trade and Navigation, Laws and Government.   |
|  | II. Their Natural History, Religious Sectaries, Paper Currencies, and other Miscellanies.                         |
|  | III. Several Medical Digressions, with a curious Dissertation on the Treatment of the Small-Pox, and Inoculation. |

By WILLIAM DOUGLASS, M.D.

V O L. II.

HISTORIANS, like sworn Evidences in Courts of Law, ought to declare the WHOLE TRUTH (so far as comes to their Knowledge) and nothing but the TRUTH.

BOSTON, NEW-ENGLAND, Printed:

LONDON, re-printed for R. BALDWIN in Pater-noster-Row.

M.DCC.LV.









THE  
CONTENTS

Of VOL. II.

Introduction	1
Treaty with Abnaukie Indians	3
Nova-Scotia affairs continued	7
Cape-Breton affairs continued	9
Paper currencies continued	13
Massachusetts-Bay hurt by Sh — administration	17
A plan of this summary	19

Province of NEW-HAMPSHIRE 22

Claims in property and jurisdiction	ibid.
A digression concerning colony legislatures	33
A dispute between the governor and representatives	35, 73
British and French claims in America	43
Legislature and courts of judicature	48
Produce, trade and navigation	50
Miscellanies	51
A digression of America timber and naval stores	52

Colony of RHODE-ISLAND 76

The fundry original settlements	77
Government or jurisdiction	85
Paper currencies continued	87
The number of people and valuations	89



# C O N T E N T S.

Boundaries of the colony	90
Courts of judicature	94
Produce, trade and navigation	98
Pretensions to a further extent of jurisdiction	102
A case of ministerial lands	104
Valuations continued	107
Paper currencies continued	ibid.
Metallick ores	108
Digression concerning religious sectaries	102
Societies for propagating religion	119
Miscellanies	151

## Colony of CONNECTICUT

The original voluntary associations	ibid.
Boundaries	160
Trade, and navigation	162
The charter	164
Legislature and courts of judicature	166
Rates and taxes	177
Militia and number of people	178
Produce, manufactures and trade	180
Connecticut college	183
Mountains and rivers	190
Paper currencies continued	192
Abstract of some of their laws	193
A digression of grain, grazing, &c.	203
Concerning the natural history of New-England	209
Miscellanies	219

## Province of NEW-YORK

The English conquest of New-Netherlands and confirmed by the Dutch to the English	220
Boundaries	221
British and French claims in North-America continued	224
The five great inland lakes, the New-York Six nations of Indians	226
Its islands and corporation towns	235
Their French and Indian wars	236
Successive governors of the province	240
Legislature and some peculiar laws	246
Paper currencies continued	250
Courts of judicature	254
Produce, manufactures, trade and navigation	256
Mountains and rivers	257
Miscellanies	260

Province



# C O N T E N T S.

Province of NEW-JERSEY	267
Several transfers of property and jurisdiction	ibid.
A digression concerning Indian grants, and proprietor quit-rents in the colonies	275
Disputes in this province concerning property which have occasioned much confusion	277
Mountains and rivers	282
Inhabitants and valuations	286
Succeffive governors	ibid.
Legislature and some municipal laws	290
Courts of judicature	293
Produce, manufactures, trade and navigation	293
Miscellanies	294

Province of PENNSYLVANIA	297
Original grants	ibid.
King Charles II. patent to Mr. Penn	298
Mr. Penn's charter of liberties and privileges, 1682	300
second charter, 1683	302
third charter, 1700	303
Affortment of goods demanded by the Indians	306
Boundaries	307
Dispute between lord Baltimore and the Penns	309
Rivers	311
Concerning Indian affairs	314
Congress with the Indians at Lancaster, 1744	317
City and port of Philadelphia	319
Entries and clearances at Philadelphia	324
Legislature	327
Courts of judicature	328
Taxes	330
Produce, manufactures, trade and navigation	331
Religious sectaries	335
Succeffive governors and lieut. governors	343
A medical digression	345

Province of MARYLAND	353
Original patents and discoveries	ibid.
Lord Baltimore's patent, 1632	355
Boundaries	356
Taxes	359
Negro slaves	360
Rivers and mountains	361
Numbers of whites and blacks	363
Quit-rents	ibid.
	Cur-



# C O N T E N T S.

Currencies	_____	_____	364
Courts, legislative and executive	_____	_____	365
Proprietors and deputy governors	_____	_____	368
Produce and manufactures	_____	_____	370
Miscellanies	_____	_____	377
Medical digression continued	_____	_____	382

## Colony of VIRGINIA

Original discoveries and settlements	_____	_____	385
Boundaries	_____	_____	ibid.
Digression concerning the small-pox	_____	_____	391
Management of the small-pox in general	_____	_____	392
Concerning inoculation of the small-pox	_____	_____	403
Virginia settlements	_____	_____	416
County courts	_____	_____	414
			415







A Summary, Historical and Political, of  
the first Planting, progressive Improve-  
ments, and present State of the British  
Settlements in NORTH-AMERICA.

---

VOL. II. PART I.

---

A Supplement to the first Volume;  
And Introduction to the second Volume.

**T**HE writer of this historical summary, does not affect a studied elegance. This is a plain narrative of incontestible facts delivered with freedom, a collection or common-place of many years observations, designed at first only for the writer's private amusement or remembrancer; but at the desire of some friends it is published for the benefit of the publick, and for the use of future historians, Deus nobis hæc otia fecit. As the writer is independent, being in no publick office, no ringleader of any party, or faction; what he writes may be deemed impartial: If facts related in truth offend any governor, commodore, or other great officer, he will not renounce impartiality and become sycophant.



## 2 A SUMMARY, HISTORICAL and POLITICAL, &c.

As this summary has been discontinued many months from an \* incident which may in course be mentioned by way of a digressional amusement; I find myself inclined to continue the history of fundry affairs down to this time, April 1750.

I. The naval affairs upon the continent coast of British North-America. Here † ends (a peace being concluded at Aix la Chapelle) our naval wars with France and Spain upon the coast of North-America; the peace of Aix la Chapelle was signed October 7th, 1748, and proclaimed in Boston, May 10, 1749.

In autumn 1747, Commodore Kn—les arrived in the harbour of Boston with a squadron of men of war from Louisbourg of Cape-Breton, ordered all our ‡ men of war stationed for the protection of the North-American trade, to join him at Boston to prosecute some secret expedition against the French and Spaniards in the gulph of Mexico; the reduction of St. Jago de Cuba was the principal design, and was not effectuated; but en passant, he happened to surprize the French fort of Port Louis of the island of Hispaniola, and had the better in a sea engagement with a Spanish squadron off the Havannah of the island of Cuba; these occurrences are not within the limits of our history, which is confined to the British continent settlements in North-America; and the admiral Kn——'s conduct in these expeditions, as it is said, is now upon the carpet at home. Our coast being thus left naked in May 1748, about fourteen French and Spa-

\* The great man of the province for the time being, finding that the writer, though of his personal acquaintance, was not a sycophant, but wrote transactions with a true and impartial freedom, endeavoured that his own management might remain obscure, and not stare himself and the publick in the face; this he attempted in many forms, in diverting, impeding, or rather defeating this publick-spirited laborious undertaking.

† The sea bickerings of Georgia and St. Augustine are left to the section of Georgia.

‡ They were only frigates, not fit for line of battle, or for battering of land forts.



nish privateers were roving from South-Carolina to New-York: They sailed up Delaware bay and river so high as New-Castle, and with their armed boats to within five miles of Philadelphia: Philadelphia news-papers say, "foreign trade is now at a stand, and the port as much "shut up as if the river was frozen." In Chesapeake bay of Virginia they went so high as Repahanock river and carried off several ships. In September 1748 two Spanish privateers sailed up Cape-Fear river of North-Carolina, landed Men, plundered Brunswick, took possession of six vessels, but from some casual disasters, they soon returned down the river. Here was a fine opportunity given to the French and Spaniards to plunder our continent ports, or put them to high contributions; but the French and Spanish pusillanimity favoured us.

II. A treaty of peace with the || Abnaquie or eastern Indians. Or, rather the formal submission of these Indians by their delegates to the government of New-England. Vol. I. p. 564, ended our account of the late French and Indian incursions in New-England; since that account, there have been only some small damages done by a few scattered Indian banditti.

As this Indian treaty or submission to King GEORGE II. is very plain, easy, and voided of some antiquated wild fooleries which usually accompany such affairs, we shall insert it here by way of a specimen of Indian treaties.

|| The St. John's Indians of Nova-Scotia, are of the Abnaquie nation, but were not in the congress, because lately they seem chiefly to associate with the Mikmake Indians of Nova-Scotia.—The Pigwaket tribe of Abnaquie are almost extinct, they did not engage in this war, but retired and lived amongst the English, during the war, in the county of Plymouth; fourteen of them, men, women and children, were present at this congress.—The Masissuck Indians on the east side or Dutch side of Lake Champlain or Corlaer, are in the Abnaquie division, but never do associate with the Abnaquies. The small tribe of Scatacocks, on Houssuck river, east side of Hudson's great river, and the scatter'd Mohegins on Hudson's river, though Abnaquies, are under the protection of the Mohawks or Iroquies great nations.



#### 4 A SUMMARY, HISTORICAL and POLITICAL, &c.

There was first a previous general meeting of the Indian delegates from all the tribes in a general council, to pray the government of New-England for a treaty of peace.

Some time in June 1749, nine delegates from the several tribes of Indians came to Boston to make proposals for a peace; they proposed the sage governor Dummer's treaty to act upon, and that the congress should be at Falmouth in Casco-Bay, about 100 miles eastward from Boston.

The congress began at Falmouth, September 27, 1749, between the commissioners of Massachusetts-Bay, viz.

Thomas Hutchinson,	Israel Williams,
John Choate,	John Otis, Esqrs.

And of New-Hampshire, Theodore Atkinson, John Downing, Esqrs. on the one part; and the delegates of the eastern Indians on the other part, viz.

Eight from the tribe of Norridgewocks;

Toxus,	Soosephnia,
Eneas,	Naktoonos,
Magawombee,	Nesquambuit,
Harrey,	Pereez.

Five from the tribe of \* Penobscot;

Eger Emmet,	Esparagoofaret,
Maganumba,	Neemoon.
Nictumbouit,	

Six from the tribes of † Arrefuguntoocooks, and Weweenocks;

Sawwaramet,	Sauquish,
Aussaado,	Wareedeeon,
Waaununga,	Wawawnunka.

\* The Penobscots jocosely said, that they could answer for their young men if they were not drunk.

† These by the French, are called the mission of St. Francois and of Befancourt; both lie upon the south side of St. Laurence, or Canada river, one 40 the other 30 leagues above Quebec; their joining with the other tribes of the New-England Indians in this submission to King GEORGE II. of Great-Britain, may well be used as an argument for New-England's reaching naturally and in the opinion of these Indians, to the south side of Canada river.



All the Indian delegates were not arrived until October 15. The New-Hampshire commissioners returned home before the treaty was finished, and left a power with Roland Cotton, Esq; to sign in their name.—The colony of Connecticut, tho' desired by the government of Massachusetts-Bay, did not send any commissioners; perhaps they reckoned themselves out of the question, being covered by the whole breadth of the province of Massachusetts-Bay; Nova-Scotia was also invited.

Roland Cotton, Esq; was clerk.

Capt. Joseph Bean was interpreter, both under oath.

Toxus of Norridgewocks was reckoned the chief of these Indian tribes, and their speaker; he said, "Ever since governor Dummer † treated with us, all the Indians lik'd it well, and have reckoned it well ever since." Mr. Hutchinson, chairman of the commissioners from Massachusetts-Bay, in his speech to the Indians, "You have always spoke well of governor Dummer's treaty, and the English have lik'd it well, and it lasted long; this we propose to be a plan for a treaty.

#### The Treaty is as follows,

"We the Indians inhabiting within his Majesty's territories of New-England, make submission to King GEORGE II. in as full and ample a manner as any of our predecessors have heretofore done.

1. We Indians in all times coming, will maintain a firm and constant amity with all the || English, and will never confederate to combine with any other nation to their prejudice.

2. That the English subjects may peaceably and quietly enjoy their rights and settlements; reserving to the Indians all lands not formerly conveyed to the English, as also the privilege of fishing, hunting and fowling as formerly.

† That treaty was anno 1725.

|| The designation English is used, as more familiar to the Indians than that of British.



## 6 A SUMMARY, HISTORICAL and POLITICAL, &c.

3. The trade to be under the direction of the Massachusetts government.

4. All controversies shall be issued in the due course of justice of Massachusetts government courts.

5. If any of our Indians commit hostilities against the English, we shall join the English to bring them to reason.

6. If any tribe of Indians make war upon any of the now contracting tribes, the English shall assist and bring them to reason.

Moreover, it is agreed that there shall be truck-houses at Georges and at Richmond. The Indians desire a truck-house also at Saco river."

III. A short and general continuation of the \* Nova-Scotia affairs, particularly as to the Chebucta settlement.

\* See p. 305, 317, 566, vol. I. There was a government scheme of this nature set on foot 1732; it was too much Utopian, and therefore impracticable: I mean the settlement of the province of Georgia in the southern parts of South-Carolina, a frontier against the Spaniards of Florida, in a dry, sandy, parched soil: the scheme was pompous, viz. to raise great quantities of rice, wine, cotton-wool, indigo, cochineal, silk, hemp, flax. Hitherto they have done nothing, though a great charge to the crown, in civil and military establishment; from 1733, (1733, the parliament granted 10,000 l. sterl. 1735, 26,000 l. sterl. &c.) to 1743 inclusive, the parliament grants for the civil establishment amounted to 120,000 l. sterl. from 1743, to 1749, their civil and military grants were blended together; 1749, the parliament granted for their civil establishment, 5,304 l. sterl. their military establishment has been very chargeable, the pay and victualling of one regiment and several independent companies of regular troops, armed schooners and rangers.

The patent for erecting Georgia into a province or corporation, passed the seals 1732. In Feb. 1733-4, the whole number of persons that had been shipped to Georgia were 320 men, 113 women, 102 boys, 83 girls, in all 618 persons, whereof one quarter were foreigners; since that time many people have been imported, but not long since in that province were to be found only 602 persons. July 1748, in Mr. Whitefield's Bethesda, (12 miles from Savannah) were only 1 master, 2 women, 4 men-servants labourers, and 18 children, whereof two paid for their board; in his vagrancies this was his great cant-fund to beg money and other effects from weak christians. Here I inadvertently anticipate what properly belongs to the section of Georgia.



The general of Canada since the conclusion of the late peace, by letters to the president of Nova-Scotia and to the governor of New-England, claims the greatest part of Nova-Scotia or L'Accadie: the French Coureurs des Bois and their Indians, 1749, have made some small appearances to intimidate our new settlers. 1. A number of French and Indians came before our block-house at Minas without effect, they surprize and carry off about 18 stragglers as captives. 2. In September, eight Indians as traders came aboard Donnel a trading sloop in Chicanecto bay, by surprize with their long knives they kill three of his men, while several Indians on shore waited the event; in this scuffle, the Indians lost seven of their men. 3. Beginning of October, a company of about 40 Indians, as was supposed, surprized eight of Gilman's timber-men near the saw-mills, east side of Chebucta bay; they killed four of Gilman's men, three escaped to the flanker of the block-house, one man is missing, supposed to be captivated to make discoveries; the Indians did not attempt the block-house:—Afterwards there was a more general rendezvous of Indians, but having no prospect of any advantage, and the St. John's Indians differing with the Mikmaks, they broke up and went home.

The chief settlement will be the town of || Hallifax or Chebucta, laid out and settled in a few months; \* for defence round it at proper distances are five picquetted block-houses containing barracks for Warburton's regiment.

In our first vol. p. 566, we just entered upon the late projected, but now vigorously prosecuted † re-settlement

|| So called from earl of Hallifax, the principal encourager of this settlement.

\* Idleness and intemperance, the bane of all our plantations, especially considering the nature of the first settlers of this place, are more dangerous than any parcels of despicable straggling Indians.

† I am sorry to write, that from 1710, to 1749, being near the space of forty years, the French have been silently allowed to keep possession in all respects of the province of Nova-Scotia, the fort of Annapolis and its banlieu excepted.



of Nova-Scotia, by the indefatigable governor Cornwallis: the first parliamentary allowance or encouragement was 40,000 l. sterl. towards transporting to Nova-Scotia, and maintaining there, for a certain time after their arrival, such reduced officers and private men, lately dismissed from his majesty's land and sea-service, and † others, as shall be willing to settle said colony. Col. Cornwallis with his fleet of one frigate of 20 guns, one man of war sloop—transports—with settlers, provisions and stores, arrived in Chebuëta bay end of June; soon after arrived the French transports (who had brought from France the troops that took possession of Louisbourg) from Louisbourg with the British troops who had evacuated Louisbourg, consisting of the two regiments of Fuller and Warburton, and a detachment of the train; the regiment of late Fuller's, to recruit Warburton's, and to leave some settlers, was reduced to 35 private men per company, half their former complement, and sent home.

In this bay of Chebuëta, is built a uniform elegant town called Hallifax, after the earl of Hallifax, a great promoter of this settlement. This harbour of Chebuëta is a most convenient place of arms for our American men of war, and a certain check upon the French of Louisbourg: it is well situated for making of dry cod-fish, being about the middle of a long range of Cape-Sable coast fishing banks, and may prove the best cod-fishery hitherto known. I heartily wish success to the settlement, but we cannot expect that it should answer so well for husbandry, that is for tillage and pasture, as our co-

† A riff-raff of dismissed soldiers and sailors habituated to idleness and vice, by their labour can never settle a new colony; but two or three young vigorous regiments (such as Warburton's) canton'd all over the country, paid and victualled from home for two or three years, (from New-England we can supply them with wives, good breeders) and when thus habituated to the country, and to husbandry, with proper encouragement of land, they may be dismissed from their military service; and make lasting good settlements.—No old men past their labour, no women but such as are of the ages of breeders, that is, none exceeding 35 æt. be admitted, excepting parents of numerous children, to serve as their guardians.



lonies further south. I conclude with the words of Bacon lord Verulam, " Settling plantations is like planting of  
" timber, we must wait patiently some years, before we  
" reap any benefit. †

IV. A short recapitulation and conclusion of the Louisbourg affair ; the Cape-Breton islands, for reasons of state, are now restored to the French dominions ; and after some political remarks, we shall take our final leave of them. See vol. I. p. 335, &c. and p. 347, &c. The French of Canada and Cape-Breton had more early intelligence of the French war than we of New-England, it was proclaimed in Boston June 2, 1744. Louisbourg of Cape-Breton surrendered to us, June 17, 1745. Autumn following to garrison Louisbourg, were ship'd off from Gibraltar, Fuller's and Warburton's regiments of foot, and three companies of Frampton's regiment, with a large detachment from the train ; it was too late in the year before they arrived upon our winter coast, and were obliged to winter in Virginia, a few of them put into New-York ; they arrived at Louisbourg May 24, 1746, and relieved the New-England militia consisting of about

† In the late treaty of Aix la Chapelle, October 7, 1748, there were many things in relation to trade, and to the claims and boundaries in the respective plantations to be settled with France and Spain, which required a considerable time to be adjusted, and therefore could not be inserted in the body of the treaty, but referred to a convention of commissioners : as the French court in their various negociations are noted for appointing men of merit and real knowledge in the various affairs with which they are intrusted, doubtless our ministry will use gentlemen of practical knowledge in trade, and habituated to plantation affairs, men of a quick clear thought, and of a distinct clear elocation.

In the present state of things, the well-being of the European mother-countries depends much upon their plantations ; plantations make a country rich ; Holland is rich, not from its produce or manufactures, but from its East and West-India plantations, its trade and navigation. France never flourished so much as in the administration of cardinal Fleury, his principal attention was to their plantations and trade ; the empire of Germany, Sweden, &c. though they abound in labouring men, for want of plantations and trade, are very poor.



1500 men, who had kept garrison from the surrender of the place; commodore Warren was at that time governor; after him commodore Knowles was pro-tempore governor; admiral Townshend from the West-India islands with a small squadron is ordered for the protection of Louisbourg, and sails for England in November 1746. Mr. Knowles in his time at a very great charge, repaired the town and fort, as if they were to remain to Great-Britain for ever. Commodore Knowles in the autumn 1747, with a small squadron came to Boston, and proceeded upon a secret expedition to the Sugar islands, and Mr. Hobson lieut. col. of Fuller's regiment is appointed governor of Louisbourg. Peace drawing near, Shirley's and Pepperell's regiments from a complement of 100 private men per company were reduced to 70 men; the private men of the three companies of Frampton's regiment, were incorporated by way of recruits with Fuller's and Warburton's regiments, and their commission officers, serjeants, corporals, and drums sent home; Pepperell's and Shirley's regiments in Louisbourg were entirely || dismissed June 24, 1749, their arms and other accoutrements were detain'd by the government. The British troops evacuated Louisbourg, July 12, 1749, and were carried by the French transports to Chebucta, and the French troops being about 600 men took possession of the place.

It is a spreading pusilanimous opinion amongst the less thinking people, that the great advantage of Louisbourg's falling into our hands was its serving as a propitiatory free offering to France, and without restoring it we should have had no peace: but we ought to observe, 1. That both parties in the war were low in cash and credit. 2. The French navy trade and navigation were so reduced, that they could not avoid desiring a peace; we had taken as many of their men of war as might have been sufficient to reduce the remainder; we had taken great numbers of their South-Sea, East and West-India,

|| They were put in pay, Sept. 1, 1745.



Turkey, and other Ships, and what remained were obliged to continue in port, (in fear of our numerous privateers) having no convoys or men of war to protect them. 3. The corruption which prevailed in Holland was like to be extirpated, and the Dutch became active. 4. The army of our auxiliary Russians were upon the march to join us, for some reasons of state they seem to have been retarded in their march. If Louisbourg had not fallen into our hands, the reduced towns and forts in Flanders must have been returned, that is, evacuated; it seems that in all modern negociations for a peace the basis is restitution of all land conquests on both sides, excepting where equivalents or antiquated claims fall in the way.

The court of Great-Britain cannot cordially approve of this infinitely rash New-England corporation adventure, though beyond all military or human probability successful; it involved the nation, already deeply in debt, in an additional sum of about 800,000 l. sterl. in the several articles of reimbursement-money, extraordinary, superfluous repairs, transport service, stores, garrison officers, a large detachment from the train, and a numerous garrison of regular troops: this place was unavoidably to be evacuated and restored to the French upon a peace, and as it happened, in a better condition, and without any reimbursement or equivalent, *cui bono!* I cannot perceive any real advantage acquired by the reduction of Louisbourg. The small British squadron stationed at Boston, without any additional national charge, would have been an effectual check upon the Louisbourg privateers; commodore Warren from the West-India islands was sent for the protection of the coast of New-England and Nova-Scotia in the spring 1745, and our trade in the northern parts of America could not have suffered above 2 or 3 per ct difference of insurance, which is as nothing compared with the great charge of 800,000 l. sterl.



sterl. before the charge was fully known, I estimated it at 500,000 l. sterl. or less. \*

I sum up the Louisbourg affair. 1. It was infinitely rash, a private corporation adventure, without any orders or assured assistance of men of war from home; thirty-six hundred raw militia (some without proper arms) without any discipline, but at random, as if in a frolick, met together, no provision of cloathing or ships: by this and small care of the sick, and want of discipline, we lost about one half of our men by scurveys and putrid slow fevers; in a military way we lost only about 60 men killed and drowned, and about 116 prisoners to the French in the rash foolish attempt upon the island-battery: during the siege, by good fortune,

\* If the Canada expedition which was recommended home by governor——had proceeded and succeeded, after another great addition to the national debt; for reasons of state, without any equivalent or reimbursement, it must have been evacuated and restored to the French; New-England was at considerable charge towards this intended expedition in levy-money, victualling, transport service, bedding, &c. for want of proper application, Massachusetts have received no reimbursement of this: Rhode-Island, by application have received their reimbursement.

Another extra-provincial perquisite expedition was the sending off 1500 men towards the reduction of Crown-Point, a French fort, near Lake Champlain in the province of New-York; this involved our province in some charge (never to be recovered) by sending provisions, ammunition and other stores by water to Albany; an epidemical distemper in the county of Albany luckily prevented us; if it had been reduced, it must either have been kept by us at a very great charge equal to the opposition of all the force of Canada; or we must have demolished it, to be re-built by the French at one tenth of our charge in reducing of it.

Another projection towards ruining our province was the charge of building a fort at the Carrying-place in the government of New-York, between the falls of Hudson's river and Wood-Creek: this was attended with the same inconveniencies as the former.

Sending off troops to assist the Six Indian nations of New-York—All these idle proposals, were not resented by the government of New-York, as, if that rich government had been incapable or neglectful of self-protection, but silently admitted of Sh——quixotisms; our house of representatives in their journal say, the people of New-York were much abler to protect themselves.



we had constant dry favourable weather: but June 18, next day after we had possession of the town, the rains set in, which certainly from our men being ill cloathed and ill lodged, must infallibly have broken up the siege. We had a wretched train of artillery, or rather no artillery (they were voted by the assembly not worth the charge of bringing back to Boston) in a Quixote manner to demolish a French American Dunkirk, in which were 1900 armed men, whereof 600 were regular troops, 125 good large cannon, 19 mortars, with stores and provisions sufficient for six months. 2. The military success was miraculous, but the cunning part of the project was natural, and could not miss of success. 1. A necessary enormous multiplied emission of a depreciating paper currency, enabled the fraudulent debtors to pay their debts at about 10 s. in the pound discount. 2. Vast perquisites to the manager. †

CURRENCIES. || The parliament of Great-Britain, before the commencement of the late French war, had under

† As writers and preachers forbear publishing \*\*\*\*\* which are singular, rare or new, lest they should prove of bad example; I shall only sum up these perquisites in this manner: In the space of four years, viz. 1741 the introductory gratuities from the province, and from \*\*\*\*\* of many thousands of pounds, and the unprecedented perquisites in the three expedition years of 1745, 1746 and 1747, from a negative fortune, was amassed a large positive estate, and the loose coins built a country-house at the charge of about six thousand pound sterling. The predecessor, an honest gentleman of a good paternal estate, after eleven years administration, in a message to the general assembly, July 21, 1741, represents, that he had been obliged to break in upon his own estate some thousands of pounds, to support the character of a king's governor; in faithfulness to his trust he refused a certain retaining fee.

|| This accursed affair of plantation paper-currencies, when in course it falls in my way, it proves a stumbling-block, and occasions a sort of deviation. In the appendix, I shall give a short history of all the plantation paper-currencies; it may be a piece of curiosity for times to come. Massachusetts-Bay was the leader, and exceeded all the colonies in this fraud; from their first emission 1702 (I take no notice of Sir William Phips's Canada bills, they were soon out of the



under their consideration some regulations concerning the plantation currencies; and now that war being ended, this third sessions of the tenth parliament of Great Britain have resumed the consideration thereof.

Massachusetts-

the question) to 1749, the last year of Mr. Sh—— administration, our bills of publick credit or state-notes suffered a discount of 88 per cent; in France in the worst of times when Mr. Law had the direction of the finances, the discount upon their state-notes was only 65 per cent: Massachusetts publick bills of credit 1749, were pejo-rated to eleven for one sterling.

In the few years of Mr. Sh—— administration, this fraudulent currency from 127,000 l. old tenor, was multiplied to about two and a half millions, and by this depreciating contrivance the fraudulent debtors paid only 10 s. in the pound, and every honest man not in debt lost about one half of his personal estate. The money-making assemblies could not keep pace with him in his paper emissions; 1747, the governor insisting upon further emissions, the assembly represents, "If we emit more bills, we apprehend it must be followed by a great impair, if not utter loss of the publick credit, which has already been greatly wounded;" and in their journal 1746, p. 240, "We have been the means of actually bringing distress, if not utter ruin upon ourselves——When any complaints were offered to the assembly concerning depreciation, by——contrivance, they were referred to committees consisting of the most notorious depreciators. See Journal, August 17, 1744.

By way of amusement, I shall adduce some different managements of administrations with respect to a fraudulent paper medium—1703 by contrivance of Mr. W—— from New-England, Barbadoes emitted 80,000 l. at 4 per cent (common interest was 10 per cent) upon land security, payable after some years; those land-bank-bills immediately fell 40 per cent. below silver; upon complaint home the court of England sent an instruction to governor Crow, to remove from the council and all places of trust, any who had been concerned in the late paper credit; thus currency was suppressed, and their currency became and continues silver as before.—Governor Belcher of New-England, 1741, from integrity and faithfulness to the publick, when a wicked combination called LAND-BANK, became head-strong; he refused their bribe or retaining fee, negatived their speaker and 13 of their councillors, and superseded many of their officers, civil and military.—Soon after this scheme was dam'd by act of parliament, governor Sh—— I shall not say in contempt, but perhaps in neglect of this act, promoted their directors and other chief managers to the highest offices, of councillors, provincial agents, judges, justices, sheriffs, and militia officers preferable to others.

When



Massachusetts-Bay, as they have at present no province bills out upon loan for terms of years, have previously settled their currency by act of assembly, approved of by the KING in council; it is intitled, *An act for drawing in the bills of credit of the several denominations, which have at any time been issued by this government, and are still outstanding; and for ascertaining the rate of coined silver in this province for the future.* By this act it is provided that the treasurer shall be empowered to receive the \* reimbursement money to be exchanged after the 31st of March 1750, at the rate of 45 s. old tenor for a piece of eight; and one year more is allowed for exchanging said bills—After 31st of March 1750, all debts and contracts shall be payable in coined silver only, a piece of eight at 6 s. one ounce of silver at 6 s. 8, † as also all executions with such addition according to the time of contracting, as the laws of the pro-

When there was an immediate publick emergency for raising of money, borrowing of publick bills, already emitted, from the possessors, would not have increased a paper currency, but prevented depreciations; some merchants and others offered to lend these bills at a small interest, some gentlemen said, that they had better let them without interest than that their personal estates from multiplied emissions, should depreciate at a much greater rate than after the value of an accruing interest: but this would have effectually defeated the scheme of the depreciators the fraudulent debtors, therefore the proposal or expedient was rejected by the advice of———

For paper currencies, see vol. I. p. 310, 314, 308, 493.

\* This reimbursement money arrived at Boston Sept 18, 1749, in a man of war frigate, consisting of 215 chests, (3000 pieces of eight at a medium per chest) of milled pieces of eight, and 100 casks of coined copper. Connecticut, a government of sagacious husbandmen, seems to have acted more prudently than Massachusetts-Bay; by their assembly act, Oct. 1749, they allow three years (to prevent a sudden confusion) to cancel their bills gradually; and in their reimbursement money to save the charges of commissions, freight, insurance, and other petty charges, they are to draw upon their receiving agent, and these bills will readily purchase silver for a currency.

† This is not in proportion, a milled piece of eight is 7 eighths of an ounce, and at 6 s. per piece is 6 s. 10. one 3d of a penny better per ounce.



vince do or shall require; the several acts of assembly whereby some funds of taxes, for cancelling province bills of credit, have been postponed gradually to 1760 are repealed, and the tax of 1749, toward cancelling these bills shall be three hundred thousand pound old tenor. Penalty to those who receive or pay silver at any higher rate, fifty pound for every offence; and after 31st of March 1750, the penalty for passing any bills of Connecticut, New-Hampshire or Rhode-Island, shall be fifty pound for every offence; and from thence to March 31st 1754, all persons entering into any town affairs, constables, representatives, councillors, all officers civil and military, † plaintiffs in recovering of executions, tavern-keepers, and retailers of strong drink, shall make oath that they have not been concerned in receiving or paying away any such bills.

As the exportation of sterling coin from Great-Britain is prohibited by act of parliament, Spanish pieces of eight are reckoned the plantation currency, and are esteemed as such in the proclamation act so called, for plantation currencies; but although the British or sterling species could not be a plantation currency, the Spanish coin might have been reduced to their denominations at 4 s. 6 sterl. per piece of eight, and all the colonies reduced to the same sterling denominations of Great-Britain, which would much facilitate the trade and business of the plantations amongst themselves, and with their mother-country: thus we see in Portugal a mill-ree, though no specie or coin, but only a denomination, is the basis of their currencies; and in the same manner with the plantations a pound or crown sterling, although no specie or coin in the colonies, might have been the general basis of our denomination or currencies.

† That is, all delinquents are out-law'd; a very severe penalty: this may introduce a habit of forswearing or perjury.

I may



I may be allowed to drop a tear, I mean some expression of grief, over the languishing state of my altera patria, the province of Massachusetts-Bay, formerly the glory of our plantations ; but now reduced to extreme misery and distress, precipitately brought upon us by the administration of \*\*\*\* and a party of fraudulent debtors. At his accession he was lucky to find a standing irresistible party formed to his mind, and not empty-handed ; they effectually depopulated the province by the loss of many of our most vigorous labouring young men, the only dependance or life of a young plantation ; they pecculated the country by ruinous unnecessary expence of money — Our present commander in chief in his first speech to the assembly, Nov. 23, 1749, modestly expresses the late speculation and depopulation of the province ; “ deliver  
 “ this province from the evils and mischiefs (particularly  
 “ the injustice and oppressions) arising from the uncertain  
 “ and sinking value of the paper-medium — the cultivation  
 “ of our lands and manufactures are greatly impeded by  
 “ the scarcity of labourers.” Mr. Sh — ’s own assemblies sometimes complain. June 3, 1748, the council and representatives in a joint message to the governor, enumerate the “ great loss of inhabitants for husbandry  
 “ and other labour, and for the defence of our inland  
 “ frontiers ; the vast load of debt already contracted, and  
 “ the unparalleled growing charges, insupportable difficulties !” The house of representatives upon a certain occasion complain, “ with publick taxes we are burthened  
 “ almost to ruin ;” in their journals 1747, “ Should the  
 “ whole sum expended in the late expedition be reimbursed  
 “ us, we have still a greater debt remaining, than ever  
 “ lay upon any of his majesty’s governments in the plantations.” Mr. — had no sympathy with the suffering province, because \* depreciations of currency, and our unsufferable taxes did not affect him.

VOL. II.

C

By

\* Depreciations, by his successive assemblies were made more than good in advancing his allowances and other perquisites : he is exempted



By the province being depopulated, labour is dear, and all countries can afford to undersell us in produce and manufactures, in consequence our trade is lost: I shall adduce a few instances: 1. When Mr. Belcher was superseded 1741, in Boston at one and the same time were upon the stocks 40 top-sail vessels of about 7,000 tun, all upon contract: at Mr. Sh—— going home 1749, only about 2,000 tun on the stocks, whereof only 4 or 5 ships upon contract, the others upon the builders account to wait for a market, and to keep their apprentices to work, and to work up their old stores of timber. 2. 1741, in Marblehead, our chief fishing town, were about 160 fishing schooners of circiter 50 tun each: 1749 there were only about 60 fishing schooners. 3. For many months lately there were not to be found in Boston goods (nay not the coarsest of goods, pitch, tar, and turpentine) sufficient to load a middling ship to Great-Britain; but under the present administration and management of affairs our trade and navigation seem to revive.

empted from taxes by act of assembly. Whereas all persons of the province not in debt, have lost about one half of their personal estates by depreciations in this short administration; and the provincial poll tax of 2 s. 3 d. O. T.; this tax is equal to rich and poor, and besides poll tax, there are provincial rates upon estates and faculties, excise, impost, tunnage; and besides provincial taxes, there are country and town poll rates, &c. Mr. Belcher, by his wise and honest management, had brought all our publick debts or paper credit and currency to be cancelled in one year 1741, being 127,000 l. O. T. but Mr. —— and his party being afraid of losing hold of this accursed fraudulent currency, they resolved (the province was at that time in its greatest prosperity) that 127,000 l. O. T. was an inconvenient sum to be cancelled in one year, and therefore divided it among three subsequent years; by this nest egg in a few years they increased the brood to two and a half millions; and the g—— upon his call home 1749, for certain reasons which may be mentioned, (by the advice of his trusty friends) contrived two years excessive taxes of 360,000 and 300,000 O. T. to be collected in not much exceeding one year, when the country was depopulated, pecculated, and much reduced in trade and business: this sudden and quiet reverse change of sentiment in this party is unaccountable; but quicquid id est timeo, perhaps they expect confusion; they have practised fishing in troubled water.



In the several SECTIONS or HISTORIES of the several colonies, may generally be found, but not in the same strict order, the following particulars.

1. When the colony was first discovered and traded to by any European nation; when first colonized by the English: and what revolutions have happened there from time to time, in property and jurisdiction.

2. Its boundaries, if well ascertained, or if controverted in property or jurisdiction.

3. Wars with the French, Spaniards and Indians.

4. The numbers of whites or freemen, and slaves.

5. The last valuation, that is, the number of polls and value of estates, taken to adjust the quotas of taxes for the several counties, districts, towns and parishes.

6. The militia upon the alarm-list, and how incorporated or regulated.

7. House of representatives, their nature and number: the qualifications of the electors, and of the elected.

8. Courts of judicature.

1. The nature of their juries, and how returned.

2. The jurisdiction of a justice, and of a bench of justices, and of their general quarter sessions.

3. Inferior or county courts of common pleas.

4. Superior, supreme, or provincial courts for appeals.

5. Chancery or courts of equity, if in use.

6. Justiciary courts of oyer and terminer.

7. Ordinary for probate of wills and granting administration.

8. Courts of vice-admiralty.

9. Justiciary court of admiralty for crimes committed at sea.

9. The present taxes, viz. polls, rates, impost, and excise.

10. Produce, manufactures, trade and navigation.

11. The number of entries and clearances of extra-provincial vessels, distinguished into ships, snows, brigantines, sloops, and schooners.

12. The various sectaries in religious worship.



In most of the sections there is a digressional article, to prevent repetitions, concerning some things which are in common to several colonies, but inserted in that section or colony the most noted for those things ; thus 1. in the section for Massachusetts should have been inserted the affair of paper currencies, as they did originate and were carried to the greatest discount or fraud there : but as by a late act of assembly confirmed by the king in council, paper currencies are terminated in that province, we drop it. 2. As Piscataqua, alias New-Hampshire, has for many years been noted for royal mastling contracts, we chose to insert in that SECTION, some things concerning mastling, lumber, and other timber for construction or building, for joiners and for turners work ; and if that article does not swell too much, we may insert some other forest trees and flowering shrubs fit for bocages, parks and gardens. 3. As Rhode-Island has been noted for sectaries, from no religion to the most enthusiastick, there is designed some account of our plantations or colony sectaries ; though at present Pennsylvania exceed them in that respect, where besides the Rhode-Island sectaries, are to be found a sect of free-thinkers who attend no publick worship, and are called keep-at-home protestants ; publick popish mass-houses ; and some sectaries imported lately from Germany, such as Moravians called unitas fratrum or united brethren, who have had some indulgencies by act of parliament 1749. 4. Connecticut, a colony of sagacious laborious husbandmen, first in course naturally claims the digression concerning grain and grazing ; it is true New-York, Jerseys, and Pennsylvania at present much exceed them in grain and manufacturing their wheat into flour. 5. Maryland and Virginia for tobacco, and mast for raising swine or pork. 6. The Carolinas for rice, skins, and hides. 7. Georgia as an instance of an Utopian unprofitable colony.

To render this history as compleat as may at present be expected, I have annexed some maps of the several colonies, not borrowed from borrowingerroneous hackney  
map



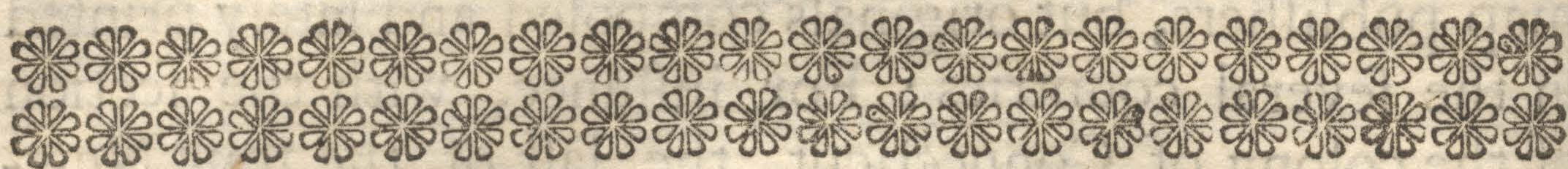
map publishers, but originals composed and lately printed in the several countries: For instance, with the section of the colony of Connecticut, the last of the four New-England colonies, I annex a \* correct map of the dominions of New-England, extended from 40 d. 30 m. to 44 d. 30 m. N. Lat: and from 68 d. 50 m. to 74 d. 50 m. W. Longitude from London. To the colony of Pennsylvania is annexed a † map of New-York, the Jerseys and Pennsylvania, published 1749, by Mr. Evans in Pennsylvania, much more accurate than any hitherto published. To the colony of North-Carolina, is annexed a map of North-Carolina, ‖ and some parts of South-Carolina principally with regard to the sea-coast and lands adjoining; this large inland country is waste or vacant, and consequently delineated at random by col. Edward Moseley of North-Carolina.

\* This map is founded upon a chorographical plan, composed from actual surveys of the lines or boundaries with the neighbouring colonies, and from the plans of the several townships and districts copied from the records lodged in the secretaries office and townships records, with the writers perambulations: when this plan is printed, the author as a benefaction gives gratis, to every township and district, a copper plate copy; as the writer of the summary had impartially narrated the management of a late g — which could not bear the light; to check the credit of the author, the g — endeavoured (as shall be accounted for) to divert, impede, or defeat this publick generous-spirited amusement, but in vain. The writer in his journeys upon account of his chorography and other occasions (formerly used to such amusements in the gardens of Paris and Leyden) has en passant, but with some fatigue, made a collection of above eleven hundred indigenous plants, classically described and referred to icons in Botanick writers which have the nearest semblance, as the specifick icons could not conveniently be cut here; this is an amusement proper for gentlemen of estates and leisure, it is not quite so ridiculous as our modern virtuoso amusements of shells, butterflies, &c. The medical or medicinal part of botany is small, and soon becomes familiar to people of the profession; the same may be said of the other branches of the materia medica from animals, minerals, and chemical preparations of those; but to proceed further as a naturalist, is only proper for gentlemen of fortune, leisure, and leisurabbers as the Dutch express it; or *otiosorum hominum negotia*.

† From 43 d. 30 m. to 38 d. 30 m. N. Lat. and from 73 d. 30 m. to 78 d. West long. from London.

‖ From 33 d. to 36 d. 30 m. N. Lat.





## SECTION IX.

Concerning the PROVINCE of  
**NEW-HAMPSHIRE.**

**A**S the four colonies of New-England were originally settled by the same sort of people called \* Puritans; their municipal laws, customs, and œconomy are nearly the same, but more especially in New-Hampshire, which was under the assumed jurisdiction of Massachusetts-Bay for many years; therefore to save repetitions, we refer several things to the section of Massachusetts-Bay.

The present possessors have no other claim to their lands but possession and some uncertain Indian deeds. Upon Mr. Allen's petition to queen Anne, desiring to be put in possession of the waste lands, the assembly of New-Hampshire passed acts for confirmation of their township grants and of their boundaries, without any saving of the right of the general proprietor; upon Mr. Allen the proprietor's application, the queen in council disallowed and repealed those acts.

The crown assuming the vacant lands, until the proprietors claiming in right of Mr. Mason shall make formal proof, that Mr. Mason ever was in possession of these lands; this appears by an action of ejectment brought by the claiming proprietor Mr. Allen against Waldron and Vaughan; Allen, being cast in costs, appealed home, but his appeal was dismissed because he had not brought

\* See vol. I. p. 367.



over proof of Mr. Mason's having ever been in possession, and was ordered to begin de novo. The collective body of the people by their representatives in assembly, have no † pretension to the vacant or waste lands, and therefore have no concern in granting of unoccupied lands; all grants or charters of these lands, according to the governor's commission and instructions, are vested in the governor and council, with this clause or reserve, so far as in us lies;—this reservation seems to favour the claims under Mr. Mason; as is also a clause in the royal new charter of Massachusetts-Bay 1691, “Nothing therein contained shall prejudice any right of Samuel Allen, Esq; claiming under John Mason, Esq; deceased, of any part of the premises.”

The jurisdiction of this province is indisputably in the crown. In property there are many and various claimers, \* 1. As it is said that Mr. Mason and his heirs and their assigns never complied with the conditions of the grant, in consequence it reverts to the crown; and the crown at present is in possession not only of the jurisdiction but property of lands hitherto not granted. 2. Capt. John Tufton Mason, heir in succession, as he says, to the original grantee capt. John Mason, lately made a conveyance of his right for a small consideration to 14 or 15 persons of New-Hampshire; by their advertisements in the Boston news-papers they seem to make a bubble of it. Boston post-boy Nov. 9, 1749. “The present claimers under the late Samuel Allen of London, will find upon trial, they have no right to any of these lands; that the said claimers under John Tufton Mason, will be able to make out the right to be in them, and are willing to

† The other three colonies of the dominions of New-England, by their respective royal charters, have the property or disposal of their vacant lands lodged in the representatives of the collective body of the people.

\* Upon any judgment in the provincial courts of New-Hampshire, by an appeal home, all these claims may be finally settled by the king in council, and prevent all bubblings of property in New-Hampshire.



dispute the point in law, as soon as any person will give them opportunity."

John Hobby, grandson and heir of Sir Charles Hobby, says, that Thomas Allen, heir to col. Allen, by deed of sale, August 28, 1706, conveyed one half of these lands to Sir Charles Hobby of New-England, knight, See vol. I. p. 505.

3. Hobby and Adams claiming under Mr. Allen by their bubbling advertisements, Nov. 9, 1749, published in the Boston post-boy, November 20, 1749, in these words, "Whereas fundry gentlemen in the province of New-Hampshire, claim a right to all those lands in said province and elsewhere which were granted to capt. John Mason of London, by letters patent from the council established at Plymouth dated March 9, 1621, and confirmed to him by charter from king Charles the first, dated August 19, 1635; which lands the said gentlemen claim under capt. John Tufton Mason, the now pretended heir to the said original patentee: This is therefore to inform whom it may concern, that although it should appear that the said Tufton Mason is the lawful heir to the said original patentee, (which is yet to be doubted) it evidently appears that John and Robert Tufton Mason, undoubted heirs to the said original patentee, did by an absolute deed of sale, dated April 27, 1691, in consideration of the sum of 2750 l. sterling, convey all their right and title to the said lands to Samuel Allen of London, afterwards governor of New-Hampshire aforesaid, which conveyance we doubt not will be made to appear legal and valid, the said Samuel Allen's claim having been allowed and confirmed by king William and queen Mary, as appears by their charter to the government of the province of the Massachusetts-Bay; and that Thomas Allen, only son and heir to the said Samuel Allen, did by deed of sale, dated August 28, 1706, convey one half of said lands to Sir Charles Hobby of Boston, New-England, Knight, under whom John Hobby late of

" Barbadoes,



“ Barbadoes, but now residing at Boston, grandson and  
 “ heir at law to the said Sir Charles Hobby, together  
 “ with John Adams, of Boston, have a lawful claim to  
 “ the said half of said lands; and the heirs of the said  
 “ Thomas Allen or their assigns, have a right to the  
 “ other half; all which will soon be made to appear:  
 “ And whereas the first-mentioned claimers are granting  
 “ fundry tracts of lands to people who apprehend their  
 “ title to be good, it is thought proper to advise such  
 “ persons to be cautious in settling said lands, till it ap-  
 “ pears whose the property is, which may probably be  
 “ very speedily, when the waste lands may be granted;  
 “ and also those persons already possess’d of lands may  
 “ be confirm’d in their possessions on easy terms.

4. The claim of Mr. Allen’s heirs, if Mr. Mason’s heirs fulfilled the conditions of the grant, seems to be the best. It is true the Masons and assignees in favour of their claim, say that these lands were entailed, and therefore could not legally be conveyed to Mr. Allen; but Mr. Allen’s heirs say, that upon Mr. Allen’s purchasing of Mr. Mason’s grant, he obtained a feigned or common conveyance of these lands; the effect of this sort of recovery is to discontinue and destroy estates tail, remainders and reversions, and to bar and cut off the entails of them.

5. Wheelright and associates claim to lands in New-Hampshire by Indian deeds; this was revived by Mr. Cook and others about 30 years since, but without effect. See vol. I. p. 410.

6. Million purchase, so called. See vol. I. p. 419. This interferes with the late conveyance of the present Mr. Mason to some New-Hampshire gentlemen; as these claims will never be of any consequence, it is not worth while to disintangle them. This million purchase claim was revived about 28 years since, and lately by an advertisement in the Boston gazette, June 21, 1748.

7. Not many years since, when the affair of the property of their lands was to be referred to the king in council;



council; the governor and council, so far as in them lay, granted to themselves and friends, (in all about 60 persons of New-Hampshire,) a tract of land called Kingwood, laying upon and near Winepesiakce lake or pond, containing almost the whole of the waste lands in Mr. Mason's grant, and perhaps further than Mr. Mason's grant extended.

In the reign of Charles II. the king in council at sundry times appointed trials of the claims of the colony of Massachusetts-Bay, and of Mason's heirs concerning the disputed lands between Neumkeag and Merimack rivers, but without result or issue; at length by charter of William and Mary, October 7, 1691, conform to the old charter of 1629, that tract of land was confirmed to the province of Massachusetts-Bay absolutely as to jurisdiction, but with a reserve of col. Allen's claim under Mr. Mason as to property.

The corporation, or company called the council of Plymouth or council of New-England (see vol. I. p. 366, 386.) made many grants of property, but could not delegate jurisdiction; therefore to supply this defect, some of these grantees obtained additional royal charters with power of jurisdiction; Mr. Mason 1635, Sir Ferdinando Gorge 1639, obtained royal patents; here we may observe, that although the jurisdiction of the lands from Neumkeag to Merimack river are included in Mr. Mason's patent, this patent was posterior to the Massachusetts old royal charter, which included that jurisdiction.

Originally the extent of this province from three miles north of Merimack river to Piscataqua river was twenty miles sea line, and sixty miles inland; by the determination of the king in council 1739, the sea line continues the same, and westward heading the province of Massachusetts-Bay, it extends from Newichawanack river about 115 miles to New-York bounds; northward towards Canada it is indefinite, or rather not determined.



The successive changes in property and jurisdiction, are as follows. Mason's first grant, see vol. I. p. 418.

Towards the end of 1635 dies capt. Mason, and by will leaves New-Hampshire to John Tufton (to be called Mason) and his heirs: John dying before he was of age, it came to his brother Robert Tufton Mason an infant, who was not of age till 1650: during his minority the servants in New-Hampshire embezzle every thing, and the civil wars preventing any legal relief, the Massachusetts people at the desire of the inhabitants of New-Hampshire, took all those lands into their own disposal and jurisdiction.

1661, Robert Tufton Mason petitioned king Charles II. to be relieved as to his property of these lands; Sir Geofry Palmer, attorney general, made report, that these lands were the undoubted right of said Robert Mason, grandson and heir of said John Mason. The inhabitants of New-Hampshire, and province of Main, incapable of protecting themselves against the incursions of the Canada French and their Indians, desired the protection of the colony of Massachusetts-Bay; the assembly of Massachusetts assumed the property of the vacant lands and jurisdiction of that country. The colony of Massachusetts-Bay by their agent, that is attorney at home, purchased the property of the province of Main, July 20, 1677, from the heirs or assigns of Gorge; the property and jurisdiction was confirmed to the province of Massachusetts-Bay by their new charter.

1675, Mr. Mason still continuing his petition, the king refers them to the attorney and solicitor general; they report his title good, and the king sends a mandatory letter || dated March 10, 1675-6 to the Massachusetts-Bay colony: William Stoughton and Peter Bulkley are sent over agents to answer Mason's complaints; they

|| This letter is directed: To our trusty and well beloved the governor and magistrates of our town of Boston in New-England. N. B. in those times the colony of Massachusetts-Bay (a hard word) was called the Boston colony.



as attorneys legally constituted in the name of Massachusetts colony disclaim those lands before the court of King's-Bench.

1679, the proprietors and inhabitants of New-Hampshire not capable of protecting themselves against the Canada French and their Indians, desired of the crown to take them under their immediate protection; accordingly the king commissioned \* a president with ten councillors for the government thereof, Sept. 18, 1679, and the lands granted there by the Massachusetts colony, were directed to pay Mr. Mason's heirs six-pence in the pound quit-rent, as incomes at that time were valued by way of composition; at the same time a court of record is constituted, to try and determine all causes, reserving an appeal home when the value is 50 l. sterl. and upwards; Robert Mason may make our titles to the present possessors at six-pence in the pound value of all rents of real estates, as quit-rents, the unoccupied lands to remain to said Mason.

1682, May 9, King Charles II. appoints Edward Cranfield, Esq; lieutenant-governor. When the crown was endeavouring to reassume all charters and patents, the patentees made another formal surrender of jurisdiction to the crown; and Cranfield 1684 was commissioned governor, but soon went to Barbadoes, and lieutenant-governor Usher had the administration.

Robert Mason the patentee's case was recommended by the crown; he came over to New-Hampshire, some few of the possessors took leases, but they generally refused this proposal. Mr. Mason brought writs of ejectment against Mr. Waldron and about 30 others, he recovered

\* For the honour of those families who in these times were reckoned principal original settlers, we shall transmit them by name, viz. John Cuts, president, the ten councillors were Richard Martyn, William Vaughan, and Thomas Daniel of Portsmouth; John Gilman of Exeter, Christopher Hussy of Hampton, and Richard Waldron of Dover, with power to chuse three others to constitute the first council; the president and five other councillors to be a board.



judgment, but was opposed in the execution, and his life threatened. 1684 Mr. Mason brought a writ of ejectment against William Vaughan, Esq; and recovered judgment; Mr. Vaughan appealed to his majesty in council; this appeal was dismissed and the former judgment confirmed, and costs given against the appellant. Mr. Mason despairing of any accommodation with the people, and his life threatened, returned to England, and soon after dies, leaving two sons John, and Robert Tufton Mason.

1691, April 27, John and Robert Tufton Mason by their deed lawfully executed for the consideration of 2750, l. sterl. did grant to Samuel Allen of London, Esq; all their † right to lands in New-England.

1692,

† An abstract of Mason's deed to Allen. 1691, April 27, John Tufton Mason and Robert Tufton Mason, sons of Robert Tufton Mason, some time of the parish of St. Martin's in the fields in the county of Middlesex, Esq; deceased, sell to Samuel Allen of London Merchant, in consideration of 2750 l. sterl. a portion of main land in New-England from the middle of Merimack river to proceed eastward along the sea-coast to Cape-Anne and round about the same to Piscataqua harbour, and so forwards up within the river of Newichawanock, and to the furthest head of the said river, and from thence north-westward till 60 miles be finished from the first entrance of Piscataqua harbour; and also from Neumkeag through the river thereof up into the land west 60 miles; from which period to cross over land to the 60 miles end accounted from Piscataqua through the Newichawanock river to the land north westward; and also all the south half of the isles of Shoals, together with all other islands and islets as well imbay'd as adjoining, laying, abutting upon or near the premises within five leagues distance, not otherways granted by special name to any at any time before April 18, 1635, called by the name of NEW-HAMPSHIRE. Also ten thousand acres at the S. E. part of the entrance of Sagadahock, called by the name of MASONIA. Also a portion of land in the province of Main, beginning at the entrance of Newichawanock river and so upwards along the said river, and to the furthest head thereof, and to contain in breadth through all the length aforesaid three miles within the land from every part of said river and half way over said river. Also that part of the sea-coast of New-England, on a great head land or cape north eastward of a great river of the Massachusetts, stretching into the sea eastwards five leagues or thereabouts in the lat. between 42 d. and 43 d. known by the name of Tabigranda or Cape-Anne, with the north,



1692, March 1, Col. Samuel Allen was commissioned governor of New-Hampshire, and his commission was from three miles north of Merimack river to Piscataqua river, &c.

north, south and east shores thereof; the back bounds towards the main land beginning at the head of the next great river to the southward of said cape, and running into the main land westward, and up a river supposed to be called Merimack, north westward of said cape to the furthest head of said river; from which period to cross over land to the other great river which lies southward of foresaid cape, and half way over, that is to say to the middle of the said two rivers within the great island called ISLE MASON laying near or before the bay, harbour or river of Agawam, with all islands laying within three miles of said sea-coast, known by the name of MARIANA. Also all those lands and countries bordering on the rivers and lakes of the Iroquois or nations of Indians inhabiting up into the landward between the lines of the west and north west, conceived to pass or lead upwards from the rivers of Sagadahock and Merimack, together with the lakes and rivers of the Iroquois, and other nations adjoining, the middle part of which lake lies near about 44 d. or 45 d; as also all lands within ten miles of any parts of said lakes and rivers on the south east part thereof, and from the west end or sides of the said lakes and rivers, so far forth to the west as shall extend half way into the next great lake to the westward, and from thence northward into the north side of the main river, which runneth from the great and vast western lakes and falleth into the river of Canada, including all within said perambulation, which portions of lands, rivers and lakes are commonly called the province of LACONIA. As also the towns and ports of Portsmouth, Hampton, Dover, Exeter, Little Harbour, Greenland, Salisbury, old Salisbury, Concord, Sudbury, Reading, Belerica, Gloucester, Cape Anne town, Ipswich, Wenham, Newbury, Haverhill, Andover, Rowley, Bafstown, Woburn, and all other villages, towns, ports and harbours in the aforesaid tracts of land called Masonia, Mariana, Isle Mason, and province of Laconia, with all mines, minerals, &c. and all royal letters or patents, deeds, writings, rentals, accounts, papers, and evidences of land whatsoever relating to the same.

It is said that Mr. Mason (called treasurer and pay-master of the army,) 1634, sent over about 70 servants with stores and provisions to carry on the settlement of New-Hampshire; and Mr. Mason dying towards the end of 1635, that his estate in New-Hampshire inventoried, amounted to about twenty thousand pounds sterl.



1700, Col. Allen came over to New-Hampshire to prosecute his claim, and found there were 24 or 25 leaves torn out of the records; these leaves contained the records of former judgments of ejectment obtain'd by Mason. He enters new writs of ejectment against Waldron, Vaughan, &c. the juries brought in for the defendants costs; the king in council dismissed his appeal without costs, because he had not brought proof of Mr. Mason's possession, and was allowed to begin de novo. Col. Allen petitioned Q. Anne in council to be put in possession of the waste lands, &c. the petition was referred to the board of trade and plantations; they advised with Sir Edward Northey, attorney general, who reported that her majesty might safely put him in possession of the unimproved land, but where the inhabitants had possession he might bring his writs of ejectment: an order was sent to governor Dudley (at this time Dudley was governor of the province of Massachusetts-Bay and of the province of New-Hampshire by two distinct commissions) to put col. Allen in possession of the waste lands, but for land improved he was to bring writs of ejectment, and when the trials came on governor Dudley was directed to go into court and demand a special verdict; accordingly upon a trial of ejectment against Waldron, governor Dudley was notified to attend, but for certain reasons at that time best known to himself, and a great indisposition of body (as he said) he proceeded no further than Newbury; the defendants obtain'd costs of suit: Col. Allen appeals to the crown, but dies before the appeal was prosecuted, leaving one son and four daughters. His son Thomas succeeds him in these claims, and was cast in his writs of ejectment with costs, a special verdict being refused; he appeal'd, and died before it could be heard, leaving two sons and one daughter infants. To cut off the claim of Mr. Allen's heirs to waste lands, so far as in them lies, lately this government have made a grant of the waste lands by the name of Kingswood to about 60 of their principal inhabitants possessors,



seffors, that there might remain no waste lands in Mr. Mason's grant.

The lands lately adjudged by the king in council, not to belong to the Massachusetts-Bay grant, are now crown lands, but at present under the jurisdiction of the province of New-Hampshire; they lay north of Massachusetts, and when the boundaries with Canada are settled may prove a good distinct inland province for produce. By an order of the king in council 1744, it is directed, that if the government of New-Hampshire do not provide for fort Dummer, there will be a necessity for returning that fort with a proper contiguous district to the province of Massachusetts-Bay: but so it happened, that during the late French war, the province of Massachusetts-Bay by the contrivance of — for sake of perquisites maintained that fort and many block-houses within the district of New-Hampshire, without any consideration or allowance, for want of proper application at home.

As Mr. Mason's grant lies indented in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, (the old colony of Massachusetts-Bay is westward, and the province of Main by the new charter annexed to Massachusetts-Bay is eastward) perhaps it would be for the interest of Great-Britain and for the good of the inhabitants, to annex this small country to the neighbouring government by an additional charter. The property of the vacant lands of Massachusetts-Bay being in the representatives of the collective body of the people, and the property of the vacant lands in New-Hampshire being in the crown, is no obstacle, seeing the vacant lands in Sagadahock or duke of York's former property, tho' annexed by charter to Massachusetts, continue the property of the crown, that is, not to be assigned by the government of Massachusetts-Bay, without consent of the crown. New-Hampshire is too diminutive for a separate government or province; the numbers of their people and the value of their commerce are insignificant: in fact the governor of Massachusetts-Bay for many years was also governor of New-Hampshire;



Hampshire with a distinct commission, but about ten years since the assembly of New-Hampshire enter a complaint to the king in council against the joint governor of that time, in relation to the case of settling the boundaries between the two provinces; that he was partial in favour of his more profitable government of Massachusetts-Bay, by adjourning and proroguing the assembly of New-Hampshire, when the case was in agitation; this complaint, by the king in council, was judged true and good, therefore a separate governor for New-Hampshire was commissioned anno 1740. In such diminutive governments, the governor may domineer and act in a more despotick manner, than his sovereign can possibly in Great-Britain; it is said that a governor and such of the council as he thinks proper to consult with, dispense with such provincial laws as are troublesome or stand in their way in procedures of their court of equity, so called.

Here is at present subsisting a dispute (interrupting all publick business) between the governor in council, and the house of representatives, concerning the governor's prerogative of negating a speaker, and his qualifying so many towns and districts as he shall think worthy to send representatives; and in this insignificant government it may be called *lis de lana caprina*, but in our considerable colonies it is an affair of great consequence, therefore I shall here insert a small digression concerning these prerogatives and privileges.

A DIGRESSION concerning some disputed points relating to the legislatures of the several British colonies in America; particularly where the prerogatives of the crown governors seem to clash with the privileges of the representatives of the collective body of the people or settlers, in general court assembled.

Perhaps, in our colonies after a legislature is constituted by royal charters as in New-England, as by proprietary patents of government as in Pennsylvania, Maryland,



land, &c. or by royal commission or instructions \* to the first crown governor in the king's governments; further instructions from the court of Great-Britain, though obligatory upon the negatives of the country's representatives, who naturally may be supposed, and doubtless were intended, as a check upon instructions from the boards at home not well versed in plantation affairs.—On the other side, as to prerogative, the plantation acts ought to have a suspending clause, that is, not to be obligatory (thus it is in Ireland, a British colony or acquisition, an ancient precedent) unless confirmed by the British court.

Thus in general, there are two supreme negatives in the legislatures of our American colonies; the king in council, and the particular legislatures of the several colonies.

In a colony where there is a royally constituted legislature, perhaps their publick acts, after being approved of, or not disapproved after a certain time (Massachusetts-Bay charter expresses it after three years) cannot be disannulled but by the legislature of Great-Britain called the parliament, who in all British cases and over all persons according to the British constitution are absolutely supreme and the dernier resort.

If any innovations were to be made by the administration at home upon the established constitution of our colonies, they naturally will begin with some insignificant colony, such for instance is this of New-Hampshire, where the people have no money nor interest lodged at home to maintain their privileges; and from precedents of such impotent colonies, proceed to impose upon the more rich and valuable colonies: thus it was in the latter end of the reign of Charles II. and in the short abrupted reign of James II. when all corporation valuable privileges were designed to be abrogated; they began with the insignificant impotent borough corporations.

\* The instruction is, that after \*\*\* a limited time, they shall issue a summons for convening a general assembly.



A governor perhaps by soliciting at home and giving adequate gratuities and fees to the proper leading clerks of the several boards, may obtain additional instructions suitable to his interest or humour. I do not maintain but only mention, that we seem to have a late instance of this in the province of New-Hampshire. 1744-5, there was a dispute between the governor and house of representatives concerning the house's not admitting of members from the governor's new constituted townships and districts, but not qualified by the house; the governor by solicitations, &c. at home, obtained, in the king's absence, from the lords justices an additional instruction as follows.

“ By the LORDS JUSTICES.

Gower, P. S. Additional instruction to Benning Wentworth, Esq; his majesty's governor and commander in chief, in and over the province of New-Hampshire, in New-England in America; or to the commander in chief of the said province for the time being.

(Seal)

Given at Whitehall, the 30th day of June, 1748, in the 22d year of his majesty's reign.

Whereas it hath been represented to his majesty, That you having in his majesty's name, and by virtue of your commission, issued a writ to the sheriff of the province under your government, commanding him to make out precepts, directed to the select-men of certain towns, parishes and districts therein mention'd, for the election of fit persons qualified in law to represent them in the general assembly, appointed to be held at Portsmouth, within the said province, on the 24th day of January, 1744-5; by which writ, the towns of South-Hampton and Chester, and the districts of Haverhill, and of Methuen and Dracut, and



the district of Rumford, were impowered to choose representatives as aforesaid; the said general assembly did refuse to admit the persons duly elected to represent the said towns and districts to sit and vote in the choice of a speaker: And whereas the right of sending representatives to the said assembly was founded originally on the commissions and instructions given by the crown to the respective governors of the province of New-Hampshire, and his majesty may therefore lawfully extend the privilege of sending representatives to such new towns as his majesty shall judge worthy thereof.

It is therefore his majesty's will and pleasure, and you are hereby directed and required to dissolve the assembly of the province, under your government, as soon as conveniently may be, and when another is called, to issue his majesty's writ to the sheriff of the said province, commanding him to make out precepts, directed to the select-men of the towns of South-Hampton and Chester, the districts of Haverhill, and of Methuen and Dracut, and the district of Rumford, requiring them to cause the freeholders of the said towns and districts to assemble, to elect fit persons to represent the said towns and districts in general assembly, in manner following, viz. One for the town of South-Hampton, one for the town of Chester, one for the district of Haverhill, one for the district of Methuen and Dracut, and one for the district of Rumford: AND it is his majesty's further will and pleasure, that you do support the rights of such representatives, when chose; and that you do likewise signify his majesty's pleasure herein to the members of the said general assembly." —

This would be nearly the same as if the patricii of Rome (in our colonies they are called governor and council) had assumed the prerogative of regulating the † tribuni plebis, or representatives of the people.

The

† When the patricii or optimates came to lord it too much over the other people of Rome, these people insisted upon their having representatives



The writs or precepts for electing of representatives for the several townships and districts returned into the secretary's office, were produced in the house, Jan. 5. 1748-9, being the first day of the sitting of a new assembly, they consisted of

3	from Portsmouth.	1	from Newington.
3	Dover.	1	New-Market.
2	Hampton.	1	Stratham.
2	Exeter.	1	Greenland.
2	Newcastle & Rye.	1	London-derry.
1	Kingston	1	Durham.
1	Hampton-Falls.	—	
		20	
		—	

There were some other members returned by some new towns, Chester, South-Hampton, and three other districts, but not admitted to sit : Richard Waldron, Esq; a worthy man, chosen speaker by all the votes, excepting one, was negatived or disallowed by the governor, because the representatives from the new towns were not admitted to sit and vote in the choice. The house were strictly required by the governor to admit these new representatives, the refusal of them being the highest contempt of the king's authority, as he said, and to proceed to a new choice of a speaker. This was absolutely refused by the house ; denying the governor's power of negativing a speaker, and of introducing † members not

representatives in the publick administration, called tribuni plebis, to maintain the liberties and privileges of the commons against the power of the optimates ; perhaps the house of commons in the British legislature had some such original.

† If the king sends instructions to his governors of colonies, concerning the negativing of speakers, and qualifying any new towns or districts that shall be thought worthy to send representatives to their general assemblies ; it seems an ancient established custom or practice, that is, privilege of the house to admit or refuse novel practices, it being a notorious privilege in the British constitution for the representatives of the people to regulate their own members.



warranted by law, usage, custom, or any other authority.

This house still subsists (June 1750) by many prorogations and alternate messages, but have done no publick or ordinary provincial business; whether the governor or house of representatives are in fault I do not determine; I only relate matters of fact, and refer it to proper judgment.

As to a governor in the British colonies **NEGATIVING A SPEAKER**, it is said to be a controverted point, therefore shall make a few remarks in relation to it.

1. As the king at home and his governors in the plantations abroad, never pretended to negative the election of a member for a county, town, or district; it seems inconsistent that they should claim a negative upon a speaker, or chairman, or moderator, chosen amongst themselves.

2. In Great-Britain, towards the end of the reign of Charles II. all charters and other privileges of the people were designed to be sacrificed to the prerogative; there was a dispute between the prerogative and the privilege of the commons concerning the court's negating of a speaker; but ever since, this controversy lies dormant; it is a tender point, a *noli me tangere*; and plantation governors, who endeavour to revive the like in their districts, by sily procuring instructions from the court at home in favour of such a negative, are perhaps no true friends to their colony, nor to the British constitution in general.

3. Notwithstanding that, in the new charter 1691 of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, it is expressly said, that the governor shall have a negative in all elections and acts of government; in their additional or explanatory charter 12 Geo. I. in the king's absence granted by the guardians or justices of the kingdom, it is said, that no provision was made in said charter, of the king by his governor, approving or disapproving the election of



of a speaker of the house of representatives. In consequence of this new charter, not by any absolute royal command, but by the voluntary consent and act of the representatives themselves, the commander in chief is allowed to negative the speaker. Thus perhaps an act of the general assembly of New-Hampshire or their tacit submission, might invest their governor with the like power, but not to be assumed in any other manner.

4. The exclusive right of electing their own speaker is in the house of commons or representatives; the confirmation by presenting him to the king, or to his governors, is a meer form in course: thus the lord mayor and sheriffs of London are presented in the king's exchequer-court, but no negative pretended; and perhaps if the king in a progress should happen to be in any incorporated city or town at the time of the election of their mayor and sheriffs, in compliment and form they would be presented to the king.

As to the governor's dispute with the house of representatives concerning his summoning NEW MEMBERS FROM UNPRIVILEGED PLACES OR DISTRICTS, we make the following remarks.

1. The present governor of New-Hampshire, without any prudential retinue or reserve, impolitically exposing such an arbitrary proceeding; menaces them with ten more such representatives, he means an indefinite arbitrary number in his message, Feb. 15, 1748-9.

2. For many scores of years, which is generally construed a prescription; there have been no royal addition of members of parliament; and at the union of the two kingdoms of Scotland and England, to prevent multiplying of members, the small royal incorporated towns of Scotland were classed, that is, four or five of them jointly to send one member or representative; therefore as the royal appointing of new representatives in Great-Britain has been discontinued time out of mind, why should the



general constitution be infringed upon in our colonies? and from the caprice or private interest of a governor, the assembly members be † multiplied to an inconvenient and chargeable number? excepting where the cultivation of wilderness lands may require new townships or districts, and if inconveniently remote from a former shire or county town, they require a new separate county or shire.

3. As an instance or precedent of a royal regulation in the colonies; in the charter of Massachusetts-Bay it is expressly declared, “that the house of representatives  
“with the other branches of the legislature, should determine what numbers should be afterwards sent to  
“represent the counties, towns, and places;” therefore the affair of representation in the legislature is not absolutely in the governor and his devotees of the council.

4. In the neighbouring province of Massachusetts-Bay by charter, each township was qualified (by a late instruction, the newly granted townships are disqualified) to send two representatives, whereas they generally send

† In the province of Massachusetts-Bay, from 1730 to 1741 (the reasons or inducements of this procedure, I shall not account for) by erecting of new townships and splitting of old townships into many corporations, the members of the house of representatives were likely to be increased to an impolitical number; therefore in the following administration, (see vol. I. p. 490) the governor had an instruction, in granting new townships to exclude them from sending representatives: this seems inconsistent with the British constitution, whereby all freeholders of 40 s. per ann. income and upwards, are qualified to be represented in the legislature and taxation; in particular, freeholders are not to be taxed but where their agent or representative does or may appear.

A vote of the representatives to regulate their own house, is not a general act of government.

Governors have a considerable advantage over their assemblies; when he sends them any imposing message of importance, but not reasonable; to prevent any representation of its inconveniency or illegality, he adjourns or prorogues them.



one, and at times exclusively the house of representatives excuse some towns from sending, and mulct other townships for not sending. In Great-Britain there are many borough towns or corporations not privileged to send members or representatives to parliament; but as there are county representatives, as freeholders they are represented in their county: whereas in New-England there being no county representatives, these unprivileged districts are not represented, which is an \* infringement upon the British constitution.

5. All new townships and districts, who by a governor's precept are required to send representatives, their qualifications ought to be confirmed by an act of assembly, before they are allowed to sit, otherwise the governor to serve a turn may multiply the house of representatives to any inconvenient number and unnecessary publick charge where the representatives are upon wages; together with the general damage of calling off from labour and business, many persons invincibly ignorant of publick affairs.

6. The last charter of the city of New-York in the king's province of New-York, was confirmed by act of their provincial assembly, 1730; and by its last clause it is provided that, "this present act should be reputed, " as if it were a publick act of assembly relating to the " whole colony." This is an instance of corporations in the plantations being confirmed by act of assembly.

\* To obviate or rectify this, the counties by act of assembly may be allowed county representatives, or the new townships and subdivisions of old townships may be classed and jointly send one or more representatives. As in the nature of things, nothing, no constitution is perfect; where any inconveniency from time to time appears, it ought to be rectified. This introducing of county representatives, or of classical representations of towns, is not consistent with a late instruction from the court of Great-Britain, that in granting of new townships, a provision be made that the number of representatives be not thereby increased, or with a suspending clause, i. e. It shall not take place till confirmed from home.

I shall



I shall here insert some observations concerning general assemblies or houses of representatives which were omitted in the section of Massachusetts-Bay.

1. Constituting townships with all corporation privileges, but expressly excluding them from the privilege of sending representatives, seems ANTI-CONSTITUTIONAL; especially considering, that there are no county representations of freeholders in New-England. See vol. I. p. 459.

2. By act of the assembly of Massachusetts-Bay 40 members are required to make a QUORUM in the house of representatives; as this is not by charter, it may be rectified by act of assembly. In the house of commons of Great-Britain consisting of 558 members or returns, 40 make a quorum; why should the house of representatives of Massachusetts-Bay, which this year 1750 consists of only about 90 returns, have the same number 40 for a quorum? As many towns are delinquent in sending representatives, and some members of the other towns negligent in their attendance, it may sometimes be difficult to make a quorum of 40, and consequently publick business impeded.

3. The old act, that a representative must be a resident in the township for which he is elected, may be salutary for some time in a new country not much concerned in commerce and policy; but a trading politick country, such as is Massachusetts-Bay, for a country-man not used to trade or money to prescribe in such affairs, is not natural. See vol. I. p. 506.

4. As in England, sheriffs of counties are excluded from being members of the house of commons, so in the colonies the same regulation may take place, because a sheriff may be supposed to be under the influence of the court or governor, his constituents, and his personal presence seems required in his bayliwick.

5. That the councellors and representatives may serve their country gratis: thus we shall have generous members, not hirelings easily to be corrupted. This year 1750, the town of Boston and some country townships  
by



by way of leading examples have made an introduction. Anciently in the parliament of England a knight of the shire was allowed 4 s. and a citizen or burges 2 s. a day, by the respective places for which they were chosen; at present they have no wages; the house of lords, the king's hereditary council or second branch in the legislature, never had any pay. It is full time that our colonies should conform to this example; several provinces have conformed, particularly in New-England our neighbouring colony of Rhode-Island ever since 1746. See vol. I. p. 507. This will be a considerable article of saving in the ordinary charges of government.

A DIGRESSION concerning the national claims of Great-Britain and France relating to disputed countries on the continent of North-America and some of the Caribee West-India islands.

The crown lands lately taken from the province of Massachusetts-Bay, and the lands north of Mason's grant, have lately pro tempore been annexed to the jurisdiction of this small province of New-Hampshire; they extend from west to east from New-York east line (which is 20 miles east of Hudson's river) to the west line of the province of Main about 115 miles; north they extend indefinitely to a line dividing the American British dominions from the dominions of France called New-France or Canada; this line is now upon the carpet in Paris, to be adjusted by British and French commissaries. \* Mr. Bollon, agent for Massachusetts-Bay, has an † instruction

\* This line does not immediately affect the province of Massachusetts-Bay, it affects Nova-Scotia, Sagadahock, (the jurisdiction pro tempore but not the property of Sagadahock or duke of York's grant, is in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, as was also Nova-Scotia by the present charter) the late crown land of New-Hampshire, New-York, &c.

† That the curious may have some notion of our colonies agencies at the court of Great-Britain, I shall here insert, by way of instance, an abstract of the last body of instructions to agent Bollon voted by the assembly, January 19, 1749-50.

1. To



instruction from their assembly to represent the encroachments which the French are making upon our settlements in North-America.

The late exorbitant French claims of extending their boundaries in America, beyond all the limits which have hitherto been challenged or allowed, gave occasion to the following paragraphs.

M. La Janqueriere governor general of Canada or New-France, by his instructions from home, lately sent letters to the commandant of Nova-Scotia and to the governor of Massachusetts-Bay, claiming a great part of Nova-Scotia, and from thence so far as Quenebec river in New-England. At this writing M. La Corne a French officer from Canada with a considerable † force, lies canton'd on the north-side

1. To solicit the payment and reimbursement of the charges of the late intended expedition against Canada.

2. To solicit the payment for the provincial cloathing, made use of by ad. Knowles for his majesty's sea and land forces at Louisbourg.

3. To solicit the charge of supporting fort Dummer, and defending the frontiers of New-Hampshire.

4. To make application, that the governments of Connecticut, New-Hampshire, and Rhode-Island, be obliged to a speedy and equitable redemption of their bills of publick credit.

5. To represent the encroachments made and making by the French on his majesty's territories in North-America.

6. To enquire into the state of the line between this province and the colony of Connecticut as formerly settled, in order to have it confirmed, if not already done.

7. To make application that several governments on this continent be obliged to bear a just proportion of men and money in case of another war.

8. To solicit the exemption of sea-men and others in this government from impresses on board any of his majesty's ships that may come into this province.

9. That he apply to the court of Great-Britain for pay for the snow Eagle and Dominique taken from the captors at Louisbourg, and employed in his majesty's service to carry home prisoners to France.

10. The agent being impowered to receive what money shall be obtained at Great-Britain for this government, he is to lodge the same at the bank of England for the further order of the general assembly.

† This force consists of three companies of marines, about 400 Indians of Canada, St John's, Cape-Sable, and Penobscot, some Canada militia



side of Chicaniſto bay and river, to prevent us from extending further north than the peninsula, ſo called, and from building a fort upon the neck where is the barcadier by the Bay Verte to Canada. Major Laurence of Warburton's regiment with about 450 men was ſent to diſlodge them, but finding the French too ſtrong, and inſtructed to repel force by force, as alſo the houſes burnt to prevent any lodgement there, he retired to Minas.

The French court has appointed as commiſſaries the marquis de la Gliffoniere late commandant general of New-France, and M. La Houettes ; with two commiſſaries nominated by the court of Great-Britain, Mr. Shirley, late governor of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and Mr. Mildmay ; to regulate all the reſpective pretenſions of the two nations in America, and the conteſts ſtill remaining on ſome prizes made on both ſides during the war. It is thought that for ſome time they may avoid coming to any determination, and perhaps inſtead of a definitive may come to a proviſional treaty of Uti, &c.

There was lately a diſpute concerning the property and juriſdiction of the iſland of Tobago in the Weſt-Indies between the governor of Barbadoes and the general of Martinico ; this diſpute ended in a proviſional treaty ; this with ſome other of the windward Caribee iſlands commonly went by the name of || Neutral Iſlands.

Soon after the peace of Aix la Chapelle, which was concluded October 7, 1748, the French began to ſettle (ereſt batteries) the neutral CARIBEE iſlands of \* Tobago, St. Vincent,

militia and Coureurs des Bois, and French neutrals, as they are called, of Nova-Scotia.

|| The imprudence of our commanders and other officers, in giving the denomination of neutrals to the French ſettlers of Nova-Scotia, perhaps gave occaſion to the preſent French claim of a great part of Nova-Scotia and of ſome part of New-England ſo far as Quenebec river.

\* Tobago was formerly the property of the dukes of Courland ; they had a ſettlement on the coaſt of Guinea called Fort St Andrew, to ſupply it with negro ſlaves: in the beginning of the reign of king Charles II. they were diſpoſſeſſed by the Dutch ; this occaſioned

James



Vincent, St. Lucia, and St. Dominico. These and some other Caribee islands called Neutrals are expressly mentioned to keep up the claim, in both † commissions of the governor of Barbadoes, and the French general of Martinico. Beginning of December 1748, the French governor of Martinico issued a proclamation, prohibiting the English, Dutch or Danes from trading there without licence from the general of Martinico, on pain of forfeiting vessel and cargo. Upon information of these proceedings the governor of Barbadoes sent capt. Tyrrel with some frigates to

James duke of Courland by treaty November 17, 1664, to make over to Charles II, the sovereignty of the said island and fort of St. Andrew's, reserving liberty of trade to the Courlanders and Dantzickers. Upon this the Dutch seem to have quitted the island, and the Courlanders never repossessed it; thus it remains at least a fief of the crown of Great-Britain.

It was first discovered by the Spaniards, and had its name from Indian tobacco smoakers. When the English first settled Barbadoes, there being no Spanish settlers in Tobago, the English from Barbadoes frequented it, and Charles I. made a grant of it to the earl of Pembroke; the subsequent civil wars prevented his settling of it. Soon after about 200 Dutch people settled there, but were expelled by the Spaniards and Caribee Indians. Next James Kettler duke of Courland, god-son to James I. of England, made a settlement there; but was dispossessed by the two Lampsons, Dutch merchants from France; they had the titles of counts and barons of Tobago; and from the Dutch West-India company had a grant of the island, and with consent of the States they sent over M. Bavean governor. It was in dispute between the English and Dutch in Charles II. Dutch War. The house of Kettler being extinct it reverted to England.

† The present governor of Barbadoes, his commission runs thus; Henry Grenville, Esq; captain general and chief goveruor of the islands of Barbadoes, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, Dominico, and the rest of his majesty's island colonies and plantations in America, known by the name of the Caribee Islands, laying and being to windward of Guardaloupe. The present governor of Martinico his commission runs thus; Marquis de Caylus governor and lieut. general of the islands of Martinico, Guardaloupe, Grande and Petite Terre, Desiada, Marygallant, the Saints, Dominico, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, Bequia, Cannaovan, Caricacocoan, Grenada, and of all the islands and islets commonly called the Granadillos, Tobago, St. Bartholomew, St. Martin, Cayan, and the continent comprehended between the river of the Amazons and Oranoke.



Tobago. Capt. Tyrrel sent aboard the French commodore to enquire what business he had there; who roundly told him, he was come to settle that island, and if obstructed therein, was to make the best defence he could. Capt. Tyrrel returned to Barbadoes for further orders.

When complaint was made to the French court by the court of Great-Britain concerning the French assuming the island of Tobago; the court of France by way of recrimination answered in April 1749, that the English were the aggressors, by presuming last November in a clandestine manner to stick up a proclamation in that island, commanding the French subjects there to quit the place within the space of thirty days, upon pain of military execution: this (as they pretend) induced the general of Martinico, without previous orders from his court, to prevent the same, by settling inhabitants and batteries there.

Martinico, November 27, 1749, a provisional (not definitive) treaty was signed between commodore Holbourn, authorized by governor Grenville of Barbadoes, and the marquis de Caylus governor of Martinico, for the reciprocal evacuation of the island of Tobago, as well as for the immediate demolition of all the works and fortresses which the French have raised on Rockley-Bay, or any other part of the said island: that neither nation shall make settlements there, but may wood and water there, catch fish, and build temporary huts to screen them from the weather during their fishing and wooding, but shall not cut down any trees other than for fire-wood, nor gather any simples or valuable plants. Accordingly a British man of war sloop from Barbadoes, and a brigantine from Martinico, sailed to Tobago, having each of them an officer on board charged to see that island evacuated by the subjects of both crowns.

The wars of New-Hampshire with the Canada French and Indians their allies, is generally comprehended in  
what



what is wrote in the section of Massachusetts-Bay. \* Moreover, 1. Towards the reduction of Louisbourg, on Cape-Breton island, they contributed a regiment of 350 men under col. More. 2. Towards the second reinforcement of 1000 men sent from New-England for the protection of Nova-Scotia, they contributed 200 men, whereof only 40 that were sent to Minas did any duty, the rest in some trifling disgust soon returned to Portsmouth in New-Hampshire. 3. In the late French and Indian wars, they were neither capable nor willing to protect their own Frontiers; the g—— of Massachusetts-Bay gladly embraced this opportunity of further perquisites, and procured the assembly to take them under protection at a considerable provincial charge, but hitherto without any reimbursement.

This province makes only one county or shire: anno 1742, it contained about 6000 rateable whites, and about 500 negroes or slaves.

Their complement of councillors is ten; when much deficient, the governor may appoint pro tempore. The new grants of lands or townships are not from the re-

\* As we hinted in the first volume, during the late French and Indian war, at the request of the president and council of Nova-Scotia, representing the weak state of Annapolis as to their garrison and the ill condition of their fortifications; there were three reinforcements of men sent from New-England to Nova-Scotia. 1. From Massachusetts-Bay 200 men, they were of good use in the beginning of the French war in summer 1744; the other two reinforcements were of no use. 2. In the winter 1746-7, a reinforcement of 500 men of Massachusetts-Bay, 300 of Rhode-Island, and 200 of New-Hampshire, in all 1000 men, to be canton'd amongst the French at Minas to keep them in due subjection, and at the same time to eat up their spare provision which used to victual the French and Indian parties: from ill contrivance and worse management, being indiscreetly canton'd, no snow shoes, and ill provided with ammunition, they suffered a dismal massacre by a French and Indian party from Chicanicto; our forces happened to be only 470 men, the 300 Rhode-Island men never arrived, having suffered ship-wreck; of the 200 New-Hampshire men, only 40 marched to Minas, the rest soon returned home. 3. Was a reinforcement of 270 men from Massachusetts-Bay sent in the winter 1747-8, when the peace with France was as good as concluded.

presentatives



presentatives of the collective body of the people, but by the governor and council conform to the governor's commission and instruction, at a certain nominal quit-rent, v. g. London-derry to pay yearly one bushel of potatoes when required. The constitution of their house of representatives, see vol. II. p. 37.

The juries are returned by the sheriff.

Their courts of judicature, besides the jurisdiction of a justice of the peace, and of a bench of justices, are

1. The general sessions of the peace held quarterly.
2. Inferior courts of common pleas held four times a year, consist of four judges, whereof three make a quorum.
3. A superior court of judicature or common pleas held twice a year, consists of a chief judge and three other judges, whereof three make a quorum; from thence are allowed appeals to the governor and council, or to a court of appeals in cases where the value in dispute exceeds 100 l. sterl. and to the king in council where the true value of the thing in difference exceeds 300 l. sterl.

4. Courts of oyer and terminer, assizes, or general goal delivery, are specially appointed by the governor and council.

5. At present the same judge of vice admiralty and other officers, serve for Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island and New-Hampshire.

6. The officers of the court of probates, are appointed by the governor and council, with appeal to the governor and council.

7. Court of equity. The commander in chief with the council, sustain by way of appeal from the court (having jurisdiction) next below; directly without any new process, is tried on the same original writ or process brought to the first court, and comes in statu quo exactly, saving that either party may bring new evidence if they please: after a hearing, perhaps some weeks or months may elapse before sentence is pronounced; and from these may appeal to the king in council.



In this province there is only one collection or custom-house, kept at Portsmouth. By the quarterly accounts from December 25, 1747, to December 25, 1748, foreign voyages

Cleared out,		Entred in,	
Ships	13	Ships	11
Snows	3	Snows	1
Brigs	20	Brigs	7
Sloops	57	Sloops	35
Schooners	28	Schooners	19
<hr/>		<hr/>	
121		73	

besides about 200 coasting sloops and schooners, which carry † lumber to Boston, Salem, Rhode-Island, &c. whereof about one half enter in with freight from these parts.

Their produce is provisions, but scarce sufficient for their own consumption; masts, timber, deal-boards, joists, staves, hoops, clap-boards, shingles, and some dry cod fish.

Their manufactures are ship-building; lately a good fifth rate man of war called the America was built there. Bar-iron, the noted iron-works on Lamper-eel river were only bloomeries of swamp or bog ore; these works were soon discontinued; they never made any considerable quantity of bar-iron, they wanted water in the drought of summer and in hard frosts of winter, and their ore became scarce.

† By lumber is meant all sorts of wooden traffick that is bulky and of small value. In North-America, ranging timber, spars, oak and pine plank, oak and pine boards, staves, heading and hoops, clap-boards, shingles and laths, are called lumber. In the act of parliament 1722, giving further encouragement for the importation of naval stores, lumber is specified, viz. deals of several sorts, timber barks of several sizes, barrel-boards, clap-boards, pipe-boards, or pipe-holt, white boards for shoemakers, boom and cant-spurs, bow-staves, caprevans, clap-holt, ebony-wood, headings for pipes, hog-heads and barrels, hoops for coopers, oars, pipe and hoghead staves, barrel staves, firkin staves, trunnels, speckled-wood, sweet-wood, small spars, oak plank, and wainscot.

Their



Their excise upon strong liquors may amount to about 1000 l. O. T. per annum ; this with 1000 l. O. T. from the interest of loan-money per annum is the present salary of their governor. In New-Hampshire as in Massachusetts-Bay, there are two sorts of licences for selling of strong drink. 1. A licence to keep an open tavern. 2. A licence to retail liquors out of doors only. This liberty or licence is first to be obtained of the select men of the township, afterwards to be confirmed by the justices of the county in their quarter sessions.

Mr. Brown, missionary at Portsmouth of New-Hampshire, anno 1741, writes to the society for the propagation of the gospel in foreign parts, that there were in New-Hampshire about 50 to 60 families of the church of England, the rest were Independents ; that they had no quakers, baptists, separatists, heathens, or infidels amongst them.

MISCELLANIES. About 1623, Mr. David Thompson attempted a settlement at Piscataqua now called New-Hampshire, it soon vanished, and the very memory of it is lost.

New-Hampshire printed law-book begins July 8, 1696.

Usher, Partridge, Vaughan and John Wentworth, Esq; were successively lieutenant governors ; the successive governors of Massachusetts-Bay being governors in chief, until July 1741, when Bennin Wentworth, Esq; was appointed governor in chief of New-Hampshire.

John Wentworth, Esq; was appointed lieutenant governor 1717 ; he died Dec. 12, 1730.

1731, in July, arrives col. Dunbar as lieut. governor ; he was also surveyor general of the woods in North-America, with four deputy surveyors, principally to prevent waste of the mastings trees. Anno 1743, he relinquished those posts, and was by the directors of the East-India company appointed governor of St. Helena ; there has been no lieut. governor appointed since, and governor Wentworth succeeded him as surveyor of the woods.



## A DIGRESSION

Concerning Timber, Wood, Lumber, and Naval Stores;  
the growth, and manufacture of North-America.

This is a subject so copious as to require a peculiar volume, but the † character of Summary does not permit to expatiate upon this useful subject.

The timber trees of North-America for || construction of shipping and framing of houses may be reduced to two general kinds, pine and oak.

The PINES may be subdivided into the mastig, or white pine, the pitch pine or picea, and others of the pine kind used as lumber. I shall not use any stiff \* scho-  
lastick

† For this reason I seldom mention their quadrupeds commonly called beasts, their birds, their fishes, their serpentine kind, and their insects: I avoid the useless virtuoso part of natural history concerning figured stones, curious marcasites, extraordinary petrefactions and crystalisations, shells of all sorts, &c. Men of that sort of curiosity may consult peculiar authors, v. g. in botany, father Plumier a Minime of Marseilles, in his four voyages to America discovered 900 new plants, especially in the capillary tribe; in this tribe, North-America exceeds any country upon our earth or globe.

|| New-England perhaps excels in good ax-men for felling of trees, and squaring of timber.

\* P. Tournefort, M. D. for many years professor of the royal garden in Paris, a deservedly celebrated antiquary and naturalist, as appears by his voyage au Levant 4to. 2 vol. Paris 1717: in his Institutiones Rei Herbariæ, seems upon too frivolous differences, that is, from the number of leaves or needles from the same theca or sheath, transfer the noted naval store pines, the white and pitch pine to the larix. Classing of plants, especially trees by their general habit, seems to be more obvious or scientifick, than the minute inspections of their flowers and seed; we find Tournefort himself, the prince of botanists, recede from this rigour in classing of his leguminous trees by differences in the leaf, viz. foliis singularibus, foliis ternis, & foliis per conjugationes. When he comes to use this last deviation with regard to the pine kind, instead of the obvious habit, he seems not to distinguish well: his general distribution of the pine tribe into coniferous and bacciferous is natural, but his subdivision of the coniferous into abietes or firrs foliis singularibus, pinus foliis binis, larices



lastick enumerations, which can be of no common use, but shall endeavour to express myself in an intelligible manner.

The WHITE PINE or † MASTING PINE may be called *pinus excellior*, *cortice lævi foliis quinis angustis perpetuis ex eodem exortu*, *conis longioribus*; Tournefort calls it, *Larix Americana*, *foliis quinis ab eodem exortu*. Plum. Some are of very large dimensions. An. 1736, near Merimack river a little above Dunstable, was cut a white pine streight and sound, seven feet eight inches diameter at the butt-end; the commissioners of the navy seldom † contract for any exceeding 36 inches diameter at the butt-end, and to be so many yards in length as they are inches in diameter at the butt-end.

From time to time the commissioners of the navy agree with contractors to furnish certain numbers of specified dimensions of masts, yards and bowsprits, with his majesty's licence for || cutting such trees: the late contracts have been from Piscataqua harbour in New-Hampshire, and Casco-bay in the province of Main. The mast ships built peculiarly for that use, are generally about 400 tun, navigated with about 25 men, and carry 45 to 50 good masts per voyage. By act of parliament there are \* penalties for cutting of masting trees without licence, cognizable by the court of vice admiralty.

Col. William Dudley some years since, in his frequent surveys of new townships about 50 or 60 miles inland,

*larices foliis* (or needles) *pluribus quam binis ex eadem theca*, or sheath, is not natural, because the *foliis pluribus quam binis* in their external habit agree with the *foliis binis*, and ought to be called pines.

† In New-Hampshire and province of Main, much good ship timber and masting trees: in duke of York's grant, called Sagadahock, not much of either.

‡ Col. Partridge some years since had the masting contract for ten years, no mast to exceed 36 inches diameter at the butt-end, he sent home a few of 38 inches and two of 42 inches.

|| Hard winters are good for the felling conveyance, but hard frosts render the edges of their falling axes inconveniently brittle.

\* See vol. I. p. 379.



observed white ash trees, streight and without branchings for about eighty feet, and about three feet diameter at the butt-end; it is as light and much tougher than white-pine. Would not those make stronger masts than white pine, and in all respects better? It is true, the land carriage for so great a distance is inconvenient—The black ash has a smaller leaf than the white ash.

White pine is much used in framing of houses and in joiners work, scarce any of it to be found south of New-England. In joiners work, it is of a good grain, soft, and easily wrought; but soon loses its good complexion by mildewing; priming or painting may hide this in many cases, but in some cases it is not to be hid, v. g. in flooring; the softness of its texture subjects it to shrink and swell hygrometer like, and consequently never make a good joint. The best white pine is from the upland; these from swamps or marshy lands, are the most apt to mildew, make a bad joint, and shake or shiver upon the least violence. The apple pine is of the white pine kind, but more frowey. †

New-England abounds in saw-mills of cheap and slight work, generally carry only one saw; one man and a boy attending of a mill may in 24 hours saw four thousand feet of white-pine boards; these boards are generally one inch thick, and of various lengths, from 15 to 25 feet, and of various widths, 1 foot to 2 feet at a medium; it is reckoned that 40 boards make 1000 feet.—These mills mostly stand upon small streams, because cheap fitted, but with the following inconveniencies. 1. As the country is cleared of wood and brush, small streams dry up. 2. In living small streams they do not afford water sufficient to drive the wheel in summer. 3. In the winter they are frozen up. The surveyors of the woods mark the masting trees, and survey the logs

† Norway red deal boards answer for upper works of ships, because their splinters are not so dangerous as oak. Norway white deal boards are 9 to 10 feet long, 1 and quarter to 1 and half inch thick.



at the mills, for which they have some perquisites from timber-men. A timber-man's estate consists in mills and oxen; oxen are a more steady draught than horses; in † logging the snow must not exceed two feet deep.

Spruce or true ‖ firr grows streight and tapering, is very beautiful; is used as spars; it is apt to cast or warp, and being

† Misunderstandings with the Indians are a great hindrance in our timber and lumber trade; therefore the Indians ought to be awed by four or five forts at proper distances upon our inland frontiers, kept in a respectful condition by the appearance of some military force; and enticed by proper assortments of goods, to exchange with their furs, skins, and feathers.

‖ The commonly called Scots firr, is properly *pinis foliis binis ex eadem theca*.

I shall enumerate five abietes or firrs of the growth of New-England; this volume swells too much, I can only mention them.

1. *Abies pectinatis foliis Virginiana, conis parvis subrotundis*. Pluk. Hemlock. It is cut into deal boards, but much inferior to the white pine. Its bark is used by the tanners.

2. *Abies tenuiore folio, fructu deorsum inflexo, minore, ligno exalbado*. The white spruce firr of New-England. All the abietes, especially the spruce so called, grow in swamps or marshes; the extremity of a branch is well represented by T. I. R. H. fol. 354, and its cone or fruit in fol. 353.

3. *Dit. ligno rubente*, red spruce.

4. *Dit. ligno obscuriore*, black spruce.

5. *Abies tenuioribus foliis absque ordine dispositis, fructu deorsum inflexo, balsamifera Accadiensis*. The firr turpentine tree of Nova-Scotia, commonly called the balsam Gilead tree of Nova-Scotia. From the tumors or blisters in the bark, by incision is gathered a thin fragrant firr turpentine, which from its citron-like fragrancy, such as that of the Levant balsam, has been called balsam Gilead; it is very hot. Some years since, when balsam capivi was wanting here, I used it in gonorrhœas; but it increased the ardor urinæ and some other symptoms to such a violent degree, I was obliged to drop it. The name of balsam Gilead gives a prejudice in its favour; but from its great heat and attraction in all recent wounds, bruises, and other ulcers, it induces violent pains, inflammations and fluxions upon the part.

It is a mistaken notion of many people, that all our medicinal balsams or liquid rosins are from various firr-trees; I shall here by way of amusement rectify those errors, by enumerating and describing the medicinal natural balsams.

1. *Opobalsamum, balsamum verum, Gilead, Syriacum, Judaicum, e Mecha*; is a liquid rosin fragrant as citron, of a syrup consistence;



being too flexile is not fit for masts or yards of any considerable largeness; its twigs with the leaves are boil'd with a beer or drink made with molasses, and is esteemed good in the scurvy and the like foulnesses of the

from a small tree or shrub with pinnated leaves ending in an impar; on the top of the stalk are hexapalous whitish flowers succeeded by a roundish rugged fruit; this fruit is called *carpobalsamum*, and the wood is the *xylobalsamum* of the apothecary shops, but at present not in practice.

2. The balsam Gilead or firr turpentine of Nova-Scotia, Newfoundland and Canada, is from the *abies tenuiore folio*, already described.

3. *Terebinthina communis*, one of the enumerated naval stores, is from the *pinus foliis ternis ex eadem theca*; it is whitish, thick and opaque.

4. Strasburg turpentine, from the *abies mas Theophrasti*. *Picea major prima sive abies rubra*. C. B. P. Red firr. This turpentine is clearer, paler, of thinner consistence than Venice turpentine, of a pleasant lemon-peel smell.

5. Venice turpentine is from the *larix folio deciduo conifera*. I. B. The larch tree; this is browner and thicker than the Strasburg turpentine. The *cedrus Libani et Palestinæ præcelsa*. Lob. belongs to the *larices*.

6. Chio, and Cyprus turpentine, is not from the pine kind, but from the *terabinthus vulgaris*. C. B. P. The turpentine tree. It is a tree shrub with pinnated leaves, ending in an impar; the fruit is a longish hard nut. This, though not of the pine kind, gives name to all the rosins of the pine kind. It is thicker and more tenacious than Venice turpentine, and of a pleasant smell; that from Chio is clear and almost transparent, that from Cyprus is full of dross and browner.

7. Balsam capivi. Balsamum Americanum. C. B. P. It comes to us from the Dutch plantations of Surinam. It is from a large tree with long rounding leaves; its fruit is in short pods. This balsam is of a bitter hot or rough taste, does not give that remarkable violet smell to the urine, that turpentine occasions. By experience I have found it the most effectual of all the natural balsams, in internal ulcerations, dysenteries, diseases of the lungs, kidneys and bladder, in the fluor albus and gonorrhœa: it inviscates the acrimony and prevents the colliquation of our juices.

8. Balsam of Peru from Spanish West-Indies in earthen jars; it is of a reddish dark colour, consistence of a thick syrup, fragrant, warm, aromatick taste; from a middling tree with almond tree like leaves, and a fox-glove flower. This balsam is also a nervine medicine internally and externally used.

9. Balsam of Tolu, comes in small calabashes from Tolu in the Spanish



the blood and other juices ; it is much drank in the northren parts of North-America, especially in Nova-Scotia and Newfoundland.

What is further to be said of the pine kind, is referred to the paragraphs of lumber and naval-stores.\*

The

nish West-Indies of a yellow brown colour friable by age, of a fragrant smell and aromatick taste: with this is made the syrampus balmicus, used in the affections of the lungs. It is from the soliquæ arbor five ceretia. I. B. with a pinnated leaf and soliquous fruit.

There are several other natural balsams, but hitherto not introduced into the materia medica.

\* Here once for all, I shall insert some general annotations concerning vegetable produce.

There is such a lusus naturæ in the herbs, shrubs, and trees between the tropicks, or in hot countries, they are scarce to be reduced to tribes.

Most of the fine flowers in the gardens of Europe came from the Levant or Asia. The sultans and their mistresses or seraglio women, take pleasure in fine flowers and delicious fruits; the bashaws and other governors of the several provinces supply them with the most gay, fragrant, and elegant; most of the orchard, especially the stone fruit, came from thence.

Systematick writers in any part of literature, are much inferior to those who write only of such things as were discovered or observed in their own time and place. I shall mention a few in the affair of plants. Cornuti Canadensium plantarum historia, 4to Paris 1635, he was a small-rate botanist. Hortus Maleharicus, containing elegant descriptions and icons of 475 East-India plants, done by the direction and at the charge of Draakenstin governor of the Dutch East-Indies, in folio, published in twelve parts from anno 1678, to 1693. Tournefort, Corollarium rei herbariæ, 4to Paris 1703, in 3 vol. containing 1356 new plants which he discovered in his voyage or travels to the Levant, that is, the islands of the Archipelago and the Lesser Asia, at the charge of the king of France; as a supplement to his Institutiones rei herbariæ, 4to Paris 1700, in 3 vol. whereof two volumes are composed of elegant icons, the other vol. contains a catalogue of 8846 plants. His Histoire des plantes, qui naissent aux environs de Paris, avec leur usage dans la medicine, is a finished useful piece of 1037 plants, printed at Paris in octavo 1698.

As to time and place in general with regard to our mother-country, anno 1696—last edition in 8vo. Mr. Ray a naturalist in his Synopsis methodica stirpium Britannicarum, has 1480 plants, whereof 113 are trees and shrubs. With regard to the country near Boston  
in



The WHITE OAK or OAK for CONSTRUCTION of SHIPPING may be called *Quercus ligno exalbido durior cortice cinereo leviter rimoso*. We have † great variety of oaks,

in New-England, I arrived to the descriptions of about eleven hundred indigenous plants, but was interrupted by \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* Plukenet in his *Phytographia* and *almagestum botanicum* published in folio, London 1691 to 1696; he mentions Benister's catalogue of Virginia plants not published at that time. Sir Hans Sloane a noted liefbeber or virtuoso, his *Catalogus plantarum insulae Jemaaca, &c.* London 1696; there are no descriptions; the plants generally were not in his own knowledge, but an immethodical rap-  
lody of synonyma copied from sundry writers concerning the West-India settlements. There are enumerations of many American plants with elegant proper coloured icons in Catesby's natural history of Carolina and the Bahama Islands. See *Phil. transact.* vol. 36. p. 425; vol. 37. p. 174, 447; vol. 38. p. 315; vol. 39. p. 112, 251; vol. 40. p. 343; vol. 44. p. 435. Catesby's essays are in eleven sets.

Father Plumier in his description of the American plants published at Paris near 60 years since, gives an account of more West-India or American plants than all the botanists of that age; he made four voyages to North-America, on purpose, and observes, that it remarkably abounds with capillary plants.

The two brothers Lignons in the French islands, and Saracen in Canada, in quality of royal botanists with salaries, have deserved well. Dierville a French surgeon in Nova-Scotia sent some curious plants from Nova-Scotia or L'Accadie to Tournefort. In New-England hitherto we have no botanick writer.

Frequently I find some difficulty to restrain myself against excursions. I shall conclude this excursion by observing that in the sixteenth century, the moderns began to apply themselves to the knowledge of plants in some method; before that time, plants were ranged according to their general appearances, or virtues, and in a very loose manner; in that century many good botanists appeared; Gesner the father of all natural history, born in Switzerland 1516, died of the plague 1565, his botanick writings were most of them lost and never published; Tournefort followed his method of classing the plants by their flower and seed.

† These botanick excursions must prove tedious to most readers; I shall therefore slightly describe only a few of the oaks that are most common in New-England, partly by their classical Latin names, and partly by their common English appellations.



oaks, but this is the only oak required by contract with the ship-builders for construction. Black oak for the bottom of vessels always under water answers well, and being very acid, as I am informed, is not so subject to the eating

1. The white oak of the ship builders, is a large tree, with ash-coloured bark of small and frequent crevices, the leaves resemble those of a dwarf oak, *robur* 111. *Clusii*, or rather like that of *T. I. R. H. tab. 349*, on inch pedicles, the acorns sometimes, more than one from a common half inch pedicle from the sinus of the leaves near the extremities of the *furculi*, paraboloid, exos, one inch, transverse diameter three quarters of an inch, of a pleasant taste, the *cupulæ* are shallow and verrucose.

2. The red oak, while young all the bark is smooth like the beech tree, when old the bark of the lower part of the tree becomes rough; it is a large spreading tree with a large shining leaf *esculi divisura*, that is, lacinated to sharp points, a large acorn but no pleasant taste, generally the wood is of a reddish cast and very porous; this species is subdivided into many distinct sorts, viz. red, grey, blue, yellow, &c.

This oak being very spongy is of short duration in use, it rives easily into staves for molasses, bread, and dry cask.

N. B. *Quercus parva sive phagus Græcorum, et esculus Plinii, C. B. P.* or the *esculus* of the ancients, is a shrub oak with a deeply lacinated leaf, its name is from the peculiar sweetness of its acorn; for this reason in Maryland, Virginia and Carolina all acorns, beech nuts, walnuts, and other nuts of the forest are called mast from *masticare*, and when plenty, it is said to be a good mast year for feeding of swine or making pork.

3. Black oak, perhaps so called from its dark coloured bark, may be called *quercus Americana magna, patula, cortice obscuriore rimoso foliis majoribus esculi divisura*; may be used as plank in the under water parts of a ship; it makes the best charcoal.

4. Swamp oak is from strong moist land, such as white pine requires; it is of a middling size, its leaf like that of *ilex*, (*T. I. R. H. tab. 350.*) but not so rigid and spinolous; the acorns are oval, of a pleasant taste, in dusky scally cups.

5. Chestnut oak, so called from the inequalities or *rimæ* of its bark, resembling the bark of chestnut trees: it is of a fine grain, and by some used in construction.

6. Common black shrub oak, grows from five to ten feet high, patulous, smooth bark, deeply sinuated, somewhat rigid leaf, acorns small from the body of the trunk on short pedicles, bitter taste, and scally cup.



eating or boring of the teredines or worms of the hot countries ; some think that black oak may be used as timber but not as plank. In Virginia and the Carolinas there is an oak called live or ever-green oak, *quercus latifolia perpetuo virens*, caudice contorto et valde ramoso ; it is very hard stubbed shrub trunk, but of a cross grain fit for compass timber, that is, for crooked rising timbers, standards, and knees ; but not for plank. Excepting this live oak, all oaks south of New-England are soft and spongy, they rive well for staves, but in ship-building they soon rot. In Great-Britain and Ireland there is no other distinction of oaks but upland and marsh-oak ; their oak is *quercus vulgaris brevioribus et longis pediculis*, I. B. 1. 70. the leaves resemble those of our shrub white oak, the leaf has a short or no pedicle, unequally lacineated or rather deeply dented with four or five dentations each side of the leaf, the acorn some have shorter some longer pedicles. Great-Britain does not afford oak sufficient for their own use, they import much from the Baltick or east country. Pomerania ships off the best oak timber and plank ; Koningberg in Ducal Prussia ships off considerably ; the best east country oak

7. A lesser black shrub oak resembling the former, but of a distinct sort.

8. White shrub oak, three or four feet high, vimineous, leaf dented like that of the swamp oak, acorns small as a pea, sessile in the sinus of the leaves, and scally cup.

9. A lesser white shrub oak, resembling the former, but of a distinct kind.

N. B. Such waste barren lands as in Great-Britain are called heaths, in New-England are called shrub oak and huckleberry plains, from these shrubs which are their only produce. In Great-Britain there are several species of heaths, the most common is the *erica vulgaris humilis semper virens flore purpureo et albo*. I. B. common heath ; in New-England are several species of shrub oak, the most common is the large black shrub oak, and several sorts of the *vitis idæa*, or huckleberries, the most common may go by the name of *vitis idæa communis foliis subrotundis non crenatis, fructu nigro minus succulento in fasciculis*.



timber and plank, comes down the Oder to Stetin, and down the Vistula or Weser to Dantzick; this river of Weser is navigable a long way up into Germany and Poland, and is the chief mart in Europe for importing of herrings and exporting of grain.

The next oak in goodness, if to be used in ship-building or construction, is swamp oak so called; see the annotations.

The black oak, some find that it may do for timbers; not long since a gentleman by way of experiment built a ship, timber and plank of black oak, called the Black Oak Galley.

Live oak in the south parts of North-America is used for construction; it is a short stubbed tree, hard wood.

Mahogany wood of the West-Indies between the tropicks is used in ship-building there; it is durable, and in receiving shot does not splinter: for cabinet and joiners work it is excellent, much surpassing the red cedar of Carolina and Bermudas, which has a disagreeable perfume.

Cedar of Bermudas, see vol. I. p. 148. It is excellent for floops, the worm does not seize it, it is light and of quick growth, may be cut every twenty years, plank thin and narrow; crooked timber, beams, and masts, are brought from the continent, for the floops.

In Newfoundland they build fishing and coasting vessels of many sorts of wood.

From the cuprussus of Carolina they make canoes and periaugues that may carry fifty barrels; it is of a good grain, but soft. It is of the cedar or berry-bearing kind of pine, grows tall, affords good boards and shingles.

The AMERICAN PITCH PINE. This is the mother of the naval stores of turpentine, tar, pitch, rosin, and oil of turpentine, and may be expressed by a short § description. *Pinus Americana communis*, sive *picea*, *patula*, cortice

§ The name of a plant expressing a short description thereof, is of great use in botany, being the most natural.

scabro



scabro rimoso, foliis ternis ex eadem theca, conis medio-  
 cribus turbinatis duris quasi sessilibus vix deciduis. It  
 grows on a dry sandy soil. The leaves about three inches  
 long, with a prominent longitudinal rib instead of a ful-  
 cus; T. I. R. H. tab. 355. fig. A. well represents its  
 amentaceous flowers, and fig. G. represents its fresh cones.  
 In New-England there is another distinct pitch pine, called  
 yellow pine; it is taller, bark not so rough and dark,  
 wood with a yellow cast, and not so knotty, does not  
 yield turpentine so plentifully. In the Carolinas, much  
 pitch pine, harder than that of New-England, so as to  
 sink in water; it is saw'd into boards for the West-India  
 islands; it is used for masting, being straighter than that  
 of New-England.

1. TURPENTINE of North-America is a liquid rosin,  
 gathered by boxing the pitch pine trees in the lower part  
 of their trunk. 2. White pine boxed affords a turpentine  
 brighter than that of the pitch pine, but not in plenty,  
 and therefore neglected or not followed. 3. The abies  
 or spruce gives a very liquid turpentine by incision of  
 bladders or tubercles in the bark; it is not gathered in  
 quantities, therefore of no general naval use. 4. From  
 the white cedar is gathered from the bark in lumps  
 or grains a solid dry rosin, being concreted exudations,  
 and by some is called olibanum or frankincense. 5.  
 Pitch pine knots boil'd in water, gives a top by way  
 of scum, a semiliquid rosin resembling Burgundy  
 pitch.

New-England turpentine is of a honey consistence,  
 that of the Carolinas is less liquid, resembling tallow or  
 slush. New-England turpentine yields about three gal-  
 lons oil per ct. wt. that of the Carolinas not exceeding  
 two gallons. Turpentine residuum in distillation is about  
 7 12ths, called rosin. The still not exceeding one half  
 full of turpentine, lest it should boil over. Our chemi-  
 cal and pharmacopœa writers seem not to be practical di-  
 stillers; Quincey, much consulted by young practitioners,  
 advises



advise to add water to the turpentine, whereas the more phlegm in the turpentine the more tedious and dangerous is the distillation. In distilling, if the turpentine boils up, a sprinkling of water makes it sparkle and fly, but a large quantity of water soon quells it. — The stills in Boston are small; three barrels of turpentine of 300 wt. each may be wrought off in three hours. The principal care in distilling, is in the beginning, lest the phlegm boiling over should blow up the still; as the phlegm goes off the still subsides, and the danger is over. At first comes over more phlegm than oil; the proportion of phlegm gradually diminishes to the ceasing of the watery ebullition, and for a short time oil only passes, and more abundantly, but soon comes turbid, and if the fire is not removed the residuum or rosin is spoilt; after the oil is drawn off and the fire removed or extinguished for an hour, the rosin is to run off from the still.

Varnish is from one half rosin and one half oil of turpentine boiled up together, and is sold at the same price with oil of turpentine.

Tar is from light wood so called, the knots of fallen pitch pine; every 14 years they reckon that the pine lands afford a sufficient crop for the tar kilns. In Carolinas the people are not so much indulged as formerly in gathering of touchwood at random in the proprietary lands, and the exports of tar and pitch from the Carolinas is not so much as formerly. The largest kiln of tar in Carolina in my knowledge was of 960 barrels; this is too great a risk, because in blowing up, all is lost. Four hundred barrels is a good kiln, and the running of the first 100 barrels is not much inferior to that of Stockholm. Anno 1746, the difference in price between Swedes and American tar was 21 s. Swedes, and 16 s. New-England per barrel; Swedes tar is cooler and better for cordage. By act of parliament only the first half of the running of a kiln is to be used  
as



as tar, the other half to be boiled into pitch, penalty forfeiture of the kilns; this act is not put in execution. Green tar which has an additional premium, is made from green pitch pine trees stripped of the bark eight feet or thereabouts up from the root of each tree; a slip of the bark of about four inches in breadth, having been left on one side of each tree, and such trees shall stand one year at the least before cut down for making of tar. No certificate bill shall be made out by any officer of the customs for any tar, &c. imported from the plantations, nor any bill made out by the commissioners of the navy, to entitle the importer of tar to any premium; unless the certificate of the governor, lieutenant governor, collector of the customs, and naval officer, or any two of them, to express that it has appeared to them by the oath of the owner that such tar, &c.—Tar that leaves a yellowish stain is good; a black stain is of a bad burning quality.

Pitch is made by boiling three barrels of tar into two barrels: in South-Carolina this is done in coppers; in North-Carolina it is done in clayed cisterns by setting fire to the tar. At present scarce any tar is made in New-England, and very little turpentine is gathered—A barrel of tar should gauge 31 and a half gallons, a barrel of pitch should be two and a half ct. wt. neat. Tar should be free from water and dross; pitch free from all dirt and dross; turpentine free from water and chips, and stones.

The horn-beam trees, or *carpinus dod*, and the button-tree (so called from its seeds growing in clusters resembling buttons,) or *platanus occidentalis*, because of their cross or confused grain not liable to rive or split, are used for windlances, blocks, and turners-work.

This section swells too much, I shall refer lumber and other woods to the article of natural history in the appendix, and at present only mention the following observations.

Shingles



Shingles are made by cutting, splitting and shaving of certain woods into the form of a slate or flat tile for covering the roofs of houses; in New-England they are made of white cedar, or *cedrus excelsior ligno exalbido non olente in udis proveniens*; this wood is easily split and managed, but may be furrowed by the rain, therefore shingles from white pine are preferable; these may continue good 20 or 30 years. In Carolina shingles are made of pitch pine and cyprus. In Jamaica they use bullet wood, which may last 100 years.

Clapboards for facing of houses, and laths for plastering, are made of the same woods.

Red cedar; or *cedrus folio cupressi atro, medio ligno rubro duro*; this is of excellent use for posts fixed in the earth, it will hold good for a century.

The common chestnut of North-America, or *castanea amplissimo folio, fructu moliter echinato*. T. I. R. H. the fruit is smaller, and capsula not so much echinated as in Europe. It rives well, and is most durable in rails in fencing of lands.

In North-America are many † varieties of walnuts. The hunters of the woods say that there are almost as great a variety of walnuts as apples; their general distinction is into black and white, from the colour of the wood.

† Hickery or white walnut. This is the most common walnut of New-England, a middling tree, the central laminæ or annuli with age, become dark like black walnut; the nuts are small, oval and smooth, too hard to be cracked by the teeth. This is our best fire wood.

2. *Nux juglans virginiana nigra*. H. L. B. Black walnut; the wood is of a dark brown, is much used in joiners and cabinet work.

3. *Nux juglans fructu tenero, fragili putamine*. C. B. P. Shag-bark of New-England. It is not so common as the hickery, and of a smaller habit, the bark exfoliates in coats (as the birch and button tree) the nut is easily broke by the teeth.

4. *Nux juglans porcorum*, the pig nut, a middling spreading tree, exfoliating bark; the putamen or shell of the fruit is not so brittle as the shag-bark, nor so hard as the hickery, the nucleus is considerable and of a pleasant taste.



Vitis or grape vines in New-England, natives, are five or six distinct sorts \* that are in my knowledge.

Cerasus, or cherries, natives of New-England, in my knowledge are four or five distinct || kinds.

Our

\* 1. *Vitis Americana sylvestris, uvis nigris, pruni sylvestris magnitudine foliis magnis, vulpina dicta Virginiana.* Pluk. The fox grape or wild vine with black grapes. It is the most common of all our grapes, grows generally near ponds, not exceeding 4 to 7 in a racemus, ripen into grapes, not much succulent, and of a disagreeable tobacco taste.

2. Dit. *Uvis albidis, vulpina Virginiana alba.* Pluk. White fox grapes differ from the former only in colour, and less frequent.

3. *Vitis quinquefolia Canadensis scandens.* T. I. R. H. Five-leaved ivy of Virginia, or Virginia creeper. It creeps and climbs to a great extent, leaves of a bright green colour, makes agreeable arbours, very plenty in the woods: the racemi or clusters are lax, the grape or fruit is in form and bigness of the *uvæ Corinthiacæ* or currants used in puddings.

4. *Vitis sylvestris Americana, platani folio, uva racemosa, acinis rotundis parvis acidulis, nigro cæruleis.* The small American grape vine with large leaves and small black grapes, in lax clusters.

5. *Vitis Americana sylvestris, platani folio, uva racemosa, acinis rotundis parvis rubris;* differs from the former only in the deep red colour of its grape.

|| 1. *Cerasus sylvestris rubro fructu Americana.* Common wild cherry. It is frequent in the woods, and flowers more early than the *racemosæ*; is an arborescent frutex, in taste flatter than *cerasa fativa*, or common red cherry.

2. *Cerasus sylvestris Americana racemosa præcocior fructu majori nigro.* The greater wild cluster cherry or birds cherry. A middling tree, the racemus of the flowers and fruit is from the extremities of the branches, not from the sinus of the leaves as the *padus*. I. B. The cherry is larger than the following, black, succulent and sweet; its wood is used in joiners and cabinet work.

3. *Cerasus Americana sylvestris racemosa, fructu minore nigro dulci.* The common bird cherry of New-England, a middling tree, flowers and fruit in racemi, like the *ribesia*, and somewhat larger; in New-England it is used in place of the officinal or *cerasus sylvestris fructu nigro*. I. B. the small birds affect it much.

4. *Cerasus Americana sylvestris humilis fructu nigricante non eduli.* The American dwarf crabbed birds cherry, does not exceed the height of 7 or 8 feet; it is not a *padus*, because the racemi are not from the sinus of the leaves, but from the extremities of the branches or twigs; this cherry is smaller than the former, dark red, and of an acerb choaky taste.

I have



Our apple trees are all from Europe; ten to twelve bushels of apples are required to make one barrel of cyder, one barrel of cyder gives not exceeding four gallons of proof spirit: beginning of October is the height of cyder making.

Sassafras ex Florida ficulneo folio. C. B. P. is plenty in New-England, and not so strong a perfume as further south: it is an ingredient in the decoction of the woods so called, and used in venereal and other pforick disorders.

I omitted in the proper place to insert, that the right merchantable hoops are from the saplins of white oak and of hickory; white oak is the best. Staves for tight cask are from the white oak; red oak staves are used for molasses and dry cask. One thousand staves make from 30 to 35 hogheads of 100 gallons each.

Some miscellany observations relating to this DI-  
GRESSION.

In New-England ship-building, a vessel fitted to sea, two thirds of the cost is a profit to the country; the other third is iron, cordage, sail-cloth, and small stores from Great-Britain.

Timber if of too old growth, is dotted; if too young, 'tis sappy: neither of them fit for construction.

There are several good acts of the British parliament, and of the legislatures of the several colonies, concerning the seasons and times of falling of timber; as also con-

I have not room to mention the great varieties of wild roses, gooseberries, currants, brambles, rasp-berries, &c.

All the apple trees in New-England are exoticks; as I formerly hinted. La Hontan perhaps is mistaken in saying, that he did see several European fruit trees natives upon the river Illinois; probably they are the relicks of a former French settlement there.

Thuya Theophrasti. C. B. P. Arbor vitæ. Clus. Tree of life of New-England, is by mistake called savine. Sabina is not well described by botanists. Some with Boerhaave say, it is bacciferous, some with Ray call it conifer: the ambiguity may proceed from its bearing seldom, and not till very old.



cerning the proper seasons of killing these beasts that afford furr, skins, and hides: but little attended to, and perhaps never put in execution.

Clearing a new country of wood, does not render the winters more moderate, but conduces to its being more healthful: the damp of wood lands produces intermitting, pleuritick, peripneumonic, dysenterick, and putrid fevers.

Where trees and other growth are large, it is a sign of good land. Chestnut, walnut, and beech trees are symptoms of good land. Alder is good meadow ground.

We have in the woods variety of beautiful flowering shrubs; but few of them flower in winter, the most valuable qualification for a flowering shrub.

For peculiar things of this kind, if we consult the most celebrated dictionaries we are led astray; for instance, Bailey describes tar, “A sort of gross fatty liquor issuing from the trunks of old pine trees.”

In middling climates timber or wood is generally spungy or light by alternate relaxations and bracings from heats and colds, consequently of no good use or duration; thus it is from New-England to Carolina: further north the timber is solid and heavy, fit for permanent construction, v. g. in New-England, Nova-Scotia and Canada; still further north the timber is too small, shrubby and narry; in the hot countries are many species of hard wood of slow growth, good for wainscoting and other joiners work; Summary does not allow me to enumerate them.

Summer-built vessels are of better use than those of any other season.

The fire wood near Boston is much exhausted; we are under a necessity of fetching it from the province of Maine, and territory of Sagadahock. A wood sloop with three hands makes about fifteen voyages per ann. from the eastward to Boston, may carry about 30 cord fire wood each voyage. — A cord of wood is eight feet lengthwise, per four feet height, of four feet sticks or logs. A kiln  
for



for charcoal or furnaces, bloomeries and refiners of iron, is generally of 20 cord wood, and generally may yield 10 cart-load of charcoal at 100 bushels per load.

At smelting furnaces they observe that young black oak makes the best coal. One acre of wood land at a medium yields about 40 cord wood; one cord of wood yields 40 to 50 bushels charcoal.

Our seasons are uncertain; in open winter the sap rises too soon, and a subsequent hard frost makes the bark split and peel off; thus at times our fruit trees particularly suffer.

Timber under 12 inches is called ranging timber, above 12 inches it is called tun timber; standards and knees are called compass timber; the compass timber to the northward is best.

Our trees, especially the oaks, while growing, are much subject to the † teredo or worm, therefore in all new-built ships these worm-holes in the plank must be carefully spiked.

The ships built in Boston exceed all of other building yards, the many merchants and ship-masters, good connoisseurs, transiently inspect them, and every bad piece of timber or length of plank is censured. In Newbury where they are not much inspected, the builders act at pleasure, and as the contracts are generally to be paid in goods, they build accordingly; thus a noted builder T. W. jocosely said, that he had built for ——— a callicoe ship. The other country building places are still

† There are varieties of teredines or wood eating insects; I shall upon this occasion only mention two. 1. An ascarides or maggot-like teredo, which preys upon the wooden wharfs in Boston and elsewhere. 2. The xylophagus marinus major navibus infestus, it is pernicious to ships in hot countries, especially in their first voyages; lately it did damage in the harbour of Newport of the colony of Rhode-Island; this is not the same with the insect which makes the worm-holes in our timber trees while a growing: neither is that which a few years since, 1730, and increased for 8 or 9 years, seized the piles or paalen of the dykes in Holland, threatening an inundation, but were destroyed by a hard frosty winter.



worse, particularly North River, where instead of what is reckoned ship-timber, they use forest-wood of any sort; these vessels with repairs last only two or three voyages, and are designed as a bite upon ship buyers at home.

Timber used green or with the sap up, is like *foenum madide repositum*, it soon tends to putrefaction: this sap may be extracted by macerating or soaking in salt water. In ship-building, they ought to use only white oak for timber, plank and trunnels; and these as much as may be without sap, † rot, or worm-holes.

|| Oak if long seasoned or dry'd, becomes vapid or dry-rotted, and does not last; we have lately had a notorious instance of this: cordfire wood to the N. E. of Boston cut before our late war with the French and their Indians, during the war of a few years, could not be carried off; upon a peace it was shipt to Boston, it

‡ The annuli or annuolex increments of trees begin from the center of their transverse sections or heart of the tree; and in the decline (trees like animals, for many years according to the nature and construction of individuals of their several species increase, then for some years are at a state or stand, and afterwards are upon the decline; thus our first or ancient growth of timber is not good, our second growth perhaps may equal that of Great-Britain) the dottedness, ceriosity, or tabes begins naturally, progressive from the center; this is most remarkable in the spongy timber of red oak. One may blow spittle through a stave of four feet length; its annuli, or circular laminæ, in the transverse sections are noted, and after surveying, if red oak, and some other trees, are used for monument trees, by the number of the furcrescent laminæ we compute the number of years from the survey; therefore it is better to mark monument trees upon the bark, which does not alter, than upon the wood substance where the marks are yearly enveloped.

|| A wood fire is more pleasant to the sight and smell than that of pit coal, but its warming influence is not so diffusive; it searches more, but is not so steady and lasting, its smoke and vapour is more offensive to the eyes, it discolours and dry-rots paper prints more than pit-coal. We have lately in Charles-town adjoining to Boston made an essay for discovering of pit-coal; if it succeeds, by act of assembly wood ought to be prohibited for use in firing in and near Boston; otherways than in charcoal for the use of furnaces of bloomeries and refineries.



burnt like stubble, of no duration, leaving no coal, and the ashes not profitable to the soap-boiler.

\* Oak timber from thick wood lands is not good.

Next to the ore, in all iron works, wood or charcoal is the most essential: here we may observe, that iron works require only 3 men who may be called artificers, viz. a forgerman, a carpenter, and collier; the others are only common labourers.

When the sun does not shine, les hommes des bois, swampeers or wilderness men, distinguish the courses or corners of winds by, 1. Mosses growing most plentifully on the north side of old dotted trees. 2. Pines branching most southward. 3. Trees reclining generally eastward, theirs from the prevailing of the westerly winds; Sir John Nerborough observed the same in South-America. This observation holds good all over America. 4. The rings in the transverse section of trees, which are most compact northward.

There is no author who has wrote tolerably well concerning the natural history of New-England. †

When Sweden began to impose upon Great-Britain in the exportation of their naval stores, an act of parlia-

\* Oak timber called day oak, from places well cleared, is better than that from wood lands where there is not the benefit of the sun and free air; our second growth of timber or pasture oak is almost equal in quality to that of Great-Britain.

In all oak timber there is an acid juice which corrodes iron (therefore the French spiking does not answer so well as our trunnelling of ship plank) and the timber itself; therefore it ought to be seasoned either by drying, or by (this is better) soaking in salt-water to extract this corrosive acid out.

† Josselyn frequently quoted, arrived at Boston 1653, and resided in New-England many years, published a small book called eight years observations, printed in London 1672, as a natural history of the country; it abounds with gross mistakes, v. g. "some frogs when they sit upon their breech are a foot high, and some as long as a child one year old. Barley frequently degenerates into oats." Here he was imposed upon, by some oat and barley seed intermixed as frequently happens: "in New-England, no woodcocks, no quails." N.B. they are very plenty.



ment was made allowing certain premiums upon the importation of certain naval stores from English America. †

In rope-making by the addition of tar, the cordage acquires one fifth more in weight, the rope-makers great gains.—A rope-walk for merchants use need not exceed 200 fathom: because 200 fathom yarn when twisted makes 120 fathom cable.

In the miscellany article of a section, I sometimes insert things which should have been inserted in their proper places but were forgot.

Here should have been inserted some short account of Dr. Berkley's tar-water used as a medicine; but as most readers are not in the taste of natural history, I have already exceeded too much in that respect; and here shall only observe, that his directions for making of it are: A gallon of cold water to a quart of tar workt thoroughly together with a flat stick for five or six minutes, after three days the tar being thoroughly subsided, decant the above, and bottle it for use; at a medium one pint drank per diem at intervals upon an empty stomach: it may be made weaker by a less proportion of tar or less stirring, according to the constitution and stomach of the patient. As Dr. Berkley favoured Boston with some sermons agreeable to the people in New-England, his medicine *ex verbo sacerdotis* is much used there, and I have had the opportunity of observing the effects thereof. 1. In ladies of a soft fine fair complexion, a

† The premiums at present are, for masts, yards, and bow-sprits, per ton of 40 feet girt measure,			
Merchantable tar	8 barrels	_____	1 l.
Green tar	_____	_____	2 4
Pitch	_____	_____	4
Turpentine	_____	_____	1
			1 10

There must be a plantation certificate that they are the growth or produce of our colonies: upon landing the pre-emption to be offered to the commissioners of the navy: if 20 days after landing the commissioners do not contract for the same, the owners may dispose of them at pleasure, and receive the premium.

long



long use of it gives their countenance a fallow, that is, a yellow greenish cast. 2. As tar is a creature of the fire, and therefore caustick, I observe, it has a bad effect in all hecticks and hæmorrhages, and inflammatory cases. 3. In vapid disorders of the nervous system it is of good use, if not used too long; if used too long, its effects are more violent and destructive to the constitution, than the habitual drinking of rum or brandy. N. B. Of all these I can produce special vouchers.

4. This is no quack medicine, because it is no nostrum, and published by a benevolent clergyman without any design of lucrative profit; his friend in publishing a considerably large book of many hundreds of cases exactly in the form and universality of quack recommendations, is a disparagement.

The prerogatives of provincial governors multiplying members or representatives from new places to the general assembly ad libitum, is a matter of great consequence to our colonies: as this has been lately assumed in the small government of New-Hampshire, I cannot close this section, without taking some further notice of the same.

There is a law of this province called the triennial act, by which the qualifications of members, and of those who may elect them, is stated; the method of calling and governing the meetings of the electors is regulated, and the longest term an assembly may subsist limited. June 4, 1748, the assembly became dissolved in course by virtue of this law; from which time to the 3d of January following there was no assembly in being; in this interval the governor received the instruction, vol. II. p. 35. and besides the places mentioned in said instruction, the freeholders of Pelham and Methuen are ordered to unite and chuse one representative for both places at a joint-meeting held at Pelham: this was a novel thing, to assemble the electors of two or five towns in one body: in Scotland, where by the act of the union parliament



parliament (not by prerogative) four or five towns were classed to send one member or representative, each town voted separately for a representative, and those representatives by vote sent one of their own number as a member of parliament; but in a different manner the freeholders of the towns of Dunstable, Merrimack, Hollis, Monson and Nottingham west, are ordered to unite in one meeting to be held at Dunstable, and chuse one member for the whole as a consolidated body; this was done, but no return made, as I am informed.

After the late running of the line with Massachusetts-Bay government, several parts of townships and other settlements formerly in Massachusetts-Bay fell within this province; as the assembly were desirous that the polls and estates of these annexations should contribute to the charge of government; by a temporary act, they incorporated them by the name of Districts, with the same appellations as before, and the fragments from the Massachusetts townships, viz. of Almsbury and Salisbury were made one district: from Methuen and Dracut one district, Haverhill one district, &c: this act was frequently renewed for short periods, only that they might contribute towards the charge of government; but after repeated application of the inhabitants, they had the privilege of townships added, but still temporary; some of these districts were made townships by charter, thus Dracut was made a town by the name of Pelham: about seven months after calling the assembly the last district act expired; notwithstanding their legal existence expiring, Methuen, v. g. had a representative in the assembly.

By the triennial act, the select-men of each place sending representatives, are to call the qualified voters within their precincts to meet and proceed to a choice; but there was no legal authority for the select-men of one town or district to call a joint meeting of the electors of two or five places, and therefore was in propriety a  
tumultuous



tumultuous assembly: thus were two of the excluded members chosen.

The governor was from home required to communicate the lords justices additional instruction of June 30, 1748, to the members of the general assembly concerning this affair; which he never did in form; they only obtained a transcript of it by the courtesy of a private hand as a favour; and the governor's friends insisted that they should first admit these disputed members, and afterwards enter upon the merits of the case. I have no concern in the affair, and endeavour only impartially to represent facts.

N. B. By the royal charter to the colony of Rhode-Island; their assembly is to determine what towns have power to send representatives to the assembly.

As this is a petty inconsiderable province or government, very irregular and factious in their œconomy, and affording no precedents that may be of exemplary use to the other colonies; I omit (to ease the Summary) many articles which in the other colonies are deduced at length, as of good use and information. Perhaps if this government were annihilated, and annexed to the neighbouring province; it might be of benefit, for their protection in cases of war with the neighbouring French and Indians, or insurrections, and for good order, and to ease their charges of government.







## SECTION X.

Concerning the COLONY of

## RHODE-ISLAND.

I Shall not repeat what I have already mentioned in general, concerning the earliest European discoveries and settlements in America.\*

This colony was not originally or immediately from England, it proceeded from the neighbouring colony of Massachusetts-Bay; and was at first made up of the emigrants and † banished from thence, because of dissenting from their generally received way of religious worship; these emigrants were puritans of puritans, and by degrees refined so much that all their religion was almost vanished; afterwards it became a receptacle of any people without regard to religion or social worship: and their modes of civil government were very variable and defective.

\* See vol. I. p. 63, &c. For the first British discoveries and settlements there, see p. 109, &c. and p. 203, &c. the first settling of New-England, p. 364, &c.

† These banishments were under pretence of preserving the publick peace, and preventing of sectary infection; and as is natural to all zealots and bigots, they fell into the same error of rigidity, which they complained of upon their emigration from the church of England. At a general synod in Newtown near Boston, which was called August 30, 1637, eighty erroneous opinions were presented, debated, and condemned; and by the general assembly or legislature of the colony, October 2 following, some persons were banished.

There



There were some incidents, which favoured the first English settlements. 1. A few years before the English came to New-Plymouth, there prevailed some malignant, contagious, very mortal distempers amongst the Indians from Penobscot to Narraganset, which made room for a safe settlement. 2. Several of the neighbouring Indian nations were instigated to destroy one another: thus the Narragansets assisted the English to destroy the Pequods 1637; Myantomy the great sachem of the Narragansets was made prisoner by Uncas the sachem of the Mohegins, and was put to death 1643.

In the British acts of parliament, this colony is named Rhode-Island, Providence Plantations, and the Narraganset Country or King's Province: originally these were distinct associations or plantations, but since have been united, and by charter incorporated into one colony or jurisdiction. I shall briefly mention the origin of these several distinct settlements.

Mr. Roger Williams came over from England to Salem 1630; he succeeded Mr. Shelton minister of Salem 1634, and because of his antinomian, familistical, brownist, and other fanatical doctrines, though in other respects a good man, 1635 he was excommunicated and banished from Massachusetts colony by their assembly or legislature as a disturber of the peace of the church and common-wealth, and removed to Seaconck, now called Rehoboth, and procured a grant of lands from Massasoit sachem of the Pakanokat Indians; the magistrates of the colony of Plymouth, Seaconck being within their jurisdiction, obliged him to remove; in the spring following, with some of his friends and adherents he settled on the other side of Patuket, the boundary river at Moosachick, by Mr. Williams called Providence, and the Narraganset sachem made them several grants of lands; one of the grants is dated Nantigansick the twenty-fourth of the first month commonly called March, the second year of our plantation or planting at Moosachick or Providence; Mr. Williams lived in Providence forty years; 1640 the twenty-seventh



seventh day of the fifth month about forty persons † voluntarily formed a sort of civil government. When for the ease of the inhabitants, the colony, formerly all in one county as is at present the small province of New-Hampshire, was divided into three counties, the township or plantation of Providence was divided into four townships, Providence, Smithfield, Scituate, and Glocester; Providence sends four representatives to the general assembly, the others send two each.

Duke of Hamilton's grant from the council or company of Plymouth in April 1635, was from Providence or Narraganset-Bay east, to Connecticut river west, southerly upon the sea, and northerly up inland sixty miles, or so far north as to reach the Massachusetts south line; this takes in all the colony of Rhode-Island, and the eastern parts of the colony of Connecticut; the duke of Hamilton had a further grant of 10,000 acres east of Sagadahock adjoining to lord Ware's grant; that family have at fundry times essayed to revive their claim, but as they never fulfilled the conditions of the grant or settling, they never prosecuted the affair to effect. There were several other vague grants, but as they are now obsolete, and claims not like to be revived, we shall not mention them.

In the year 1637, the synod at New-town in Massachusetts-Bay having condemned the opinions of many sectaries, and by the subsequent general court or assembly persons being ill used, these persons with their friends

† To perpetuate the memory of the first considerable settlers and of their families, I shall in the history of our several colonies mention some names. The first twelve persons who with Mr. Williams were concerned as proprietors of the Providence lands; William Arnold, John Greene, John Throgmorton, Thomas James, William Harris, Thomas Olnay, Richard Waterman, Francis Weston, Ezekiel Holliman, Robert Cole, Stukely West-coat, and William Carpenter; afterwards were associated Chad. Browne, William Fairfield, J. Warner, E. Angel, J. Windsor, R. Scot, Wm Reinolds, Wm Wickenden, Gregory Dexter, &c. at length they amounted to the number of 100 proprietors of Providence, being the value of twenty miles square.

and



and adherents went to Aquatneck, now the island of Rhode-Island, and by deed, March 24, 1637-8, purchased the island from the Indians; 18 persons || without a patent did voluntarily incorporate or associate themselves; the easterly end of the island with Seaconet was called Pocasset; this settlement increased fast, and was called Isle of Rhodes or Rhode-Island; 1644 it was divided into two townships, Newport its easterly part, and Portsmouth its westerly part; lately Newport is subdivided into Newport and Middletown. In the beginning the œconomy or government was variable; 1640 they agreed that the government should be in a governor, deputy-governor and four assistants, \* they held their offices until the patent of incorporation.

1642-3, Jan. 12, Showamet was purchased of the Indians by eleven associates, † and called Warwick in honour to the family of the earl of Warwick, who had a grant (but never prosecuted) of a large tract of land in these parts; they were by directions from this minister incorporated in the Province of Providence Planta-

|| These 18 persons were William Coddington, John Clark, William Hutchinson, John Coggeshal, William Apinwal, Samuel Welborn, John Porter, John Seaford, Edward Hutchinson, jun. Thomas Savage, William Dyree, William Freeborn, Philip Sherman, John Walker, Richard Corder, William Raulifson, Edward Hutchinson, sen. Henry Bull. N. B. Some families returned to the Massachusetts-Bay colony, the Hutchinsons, Dummers, Savages, &c.

\* William Coddington, governor, W. Brenton, deputy governor, N. Easton, J. Coggeshal, W. Hutchinson and S. Porter.

† Rendal Holden, John Wickes, Samuel Gorton, John Greene, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, John Warner, Richard Corder, Samson Shelton, Robert Patten, and William Woodeal. N. B. Gorton was a preacher or exhorter, of many wild peculiar opinions in religion, different from those of the other New-England sectaries, and used a mysterious dialect; his followers were called Gortonians; he came to Rhode-Island 1638, was banished from thence 1640; he was of a good family in England, he disowned the Puritans and opposed the Quakers: he settled at Patuxet, and kept a peculiar religious society for upwards of sixty years, and lived to a great age; but as this sect is utterly extinct, we shall not revive the memory of it in the digression concerning the British plantation sectaries.

tions.



tions. About this time some people began a settlement at Patuxet river, † whereof at present part is in the township of Providence, and part in the township of Warwick. Warwick is lately subdivided into the township of Warwick, four representatives, and country two representatives.

1643 Mr. R. Williams went to England as agent, and by the assistance of Sir Henry Vane, obtained from the earl of Warwick, governor and admiral of all the English plantations for the parliament, a sort of charter of incorporation of the several settlements by the name of “ the incorporation of the Province Plantations in  
“ the Narraganset-Bay in New-England; may settle them-  
“ selves into any form of government the majority of the  
“ freemen should agree upon, suitable to their estate and  
“ condition, and make suitable laws, agreeable to the  
“ laws of England, so far as the nature and constitution  
“ of the place will admit, &c.” dated 1643-4, March 17. Their first general assembly was not called until May 19, 1647; this assembly established a body of very good and wholesome laws, and erected a form of government for the administration of these laws, and for making further laws that may be found requisite. Their legislature, called a court of commissioners, consisted of six members from each of the four towns of Providence, Newport, Portsmouth and Warwick; but the supreme power to be in a regular vote of all the || freeholders of the colony or incorporation, the freemens vote superseded or repealed the acts of the court of commissioners and made them void.— A president and four assistants yearly chosen were judges of the court of trials, assisted by the two wardens or justices of the

† Meadows upon a river has, in our northern plantations, always and every where been an inducement to begin a settlement; as being immediately furnished with food for their cattle in winter.

|| At present there remain in our plantations, only two populace or popular colonies, where the supreme power or dernier resort is lodged in the community, viz Connecticut and Rhode-Island.

particular



particular town, in which this court sat from time to time. Every town chose a council of six persons to manage the prudential town affairs, and had the tryal of small cases, with the wardens or justices of the town, but with an appeal to the court of president and associates. There was a short interruption of this form of government, October 2, 1652, by order of the council of state from England; but soon resumed, and continued until the present charter took place.

The present charter is dated July 8, 1662, 15 regn. Carol. II. in which it is enumerated, that they were people who left their settlements in the other colonies, because obliged thereto by their different sentiments in religion; and did by good providence transplant themselves into the midst of Indian natives, and made land purchases of those natives, fit for building of vessels, making of pipe staves and other lumber: that their design was to live quietly with liberty of conscience together, and to convert the Indians. They are by charter made a body politick or corporate by the name of the governor and company of freemen of the English colony of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations in Narraganset Bay in New-England.

Grants liberties of conscience in religion,\* a power to make a common seal, to call an assembly annually, first Wednesday of May, and last Wednesday of October, or oftener: composed of the governor,† deputy governor, ten assistants; and representatives of towns, whereof Newport not exceeding 6, Providence 4, Portsmouth 4, Warwick 4, and 2 for each other place or town, to be elected by the majority of freemen in each town. The majority of the assembly, whereof the governor or deputy governor and six of the assistants at least to be

\* Without excepting Roman Catholicks or any others.

† In the charter, for the first year, the king nominated Benedict Arnold, Esq; for governor, William Brenton deputy governor.



seven ; † to have power to appoint the time and place of their meetings, to make any man free of the company, to nominate proper officers, to make laws, &c. not repugnant to those of England, to appoint courts of judicature with their proper officers, to determine what towns have power to send representatives to the assembly, to pardon criminals, to make purchases of the native Indians ; when the assembly does not sit, the governor with the major part of the assistants to have the direction of the militia. The governor, six of the assistants, and major part of the representatives of the freemen in assembly, have power of making war against the Indians or any of the king's enemies, but not to invade the Indians of any neighbouring colony without the consent of the government of that colony : allowed the liberty of fishing and of curing fish on any of the coasts of New-England : persons born there, to be denizens of England ; all persons and manner of goods may be transported thither from England : any difference arising with the neighbouring colonies, to appeal to the king in council : to have a free trade with all the other English colonies. The bounds of the colony to be westerly, the middle channel of the middle great stream of Pokatuke, alias Narraganset great river, so far as it lies up the country, and thence by a line due north to the southerly line of the Massachusetts colony ; northern bounds, the southerly line of the Massachusetts colony so far east as three miles to the E. N. E. of the most eastern and northern parts of the Narraganset-Bay ; the eastern bounds, as the bay lieth or extendeth itself from the ocean into the mouth of the river which runneth into Providence : and from thence higher along the easterly bank of said river called Seaconck river, up to the falls

† As in the majority of voters there must at least be the governor or deputy governor and six of the assistants, it was the same case as if the governor and assistants were a separate board or house ; therefore after some years by act of assembly they were constituted a separate house, and the governor in case of an equivote in the board of assistants, to have the casting vote, but no negative.



called Patucket-falls, being the most westerly line of Plymouth colony : and from said falls in a streight line due north, till it meets with the south line of Massachusetts ; southern bounds, the ocean comprehending all the islands and banks in Narraganset-Bay, Fisher's-Island excepted. To hold of the king as the mannor of East-Greenwich, in free and common loccage, paying the fifth of all gold and silver ore found there.—Any clause in a late grant to the governor and company of Connecticut colony notwithstanding. Signed Howard.

Their first assembly met at Newport, March 1, 1663, and enacted, That on the first Wednesday of May annually by a majority of the votes of the freemen of the colony, shall be elected a recorder or secretary, a sheriff, \* an attorney general, and one treasurer general.—All purchases of the Indians without consent of the assembly, to be void, and the purchasers finable. All inhabitants of competent estates christians (Roman Catholicks excepted) to be accounted freemen, and have power of choosng and of being chosen deputies and other officers.

This competency of estate has been varied from time to time ; anno 1746, the assembly enacted, that the qualification for a freeman should be freeholds of 400 l. currency in value, or that shall rent for 20 l. per ann. or the eldest son of such a freeholder ; and to be proposed to their respective town meetings three months at least before their admission. As briberies in the elections of assembly men and general officers were become frequent and notorious, by the same act no man is admitted to vote until he has taken oath or affirmation, that he will use his freedom for the good of the government without any other motive, and shall not receive nor expect any reward or promise of reward in elections. The same assembly enacted, that no assistant (member

\* At present the sheriffs of the several counties are appointed by the general assembly.



of the council) or member of the house of representatives should be allowed any wages or pay for their service. Several other such wholesome and exemplary † laws have at times been enacted, when the government was in good hands.

From time to time there were some English trading houses, with small purchases of lands from the Indians, in the Narraganset country. 1657, the island of Canonicut was purchased of the Indians, and 1678 incorporated by act of assembly, and named James-Town. Some gentlemen of Rhode-Island and other parts of New-England made a considerable purchase of Pettaquamscutt (from the Indians) which with the adjacent lands were incorporated a township by the name of Kingston 1674: but since divided into three townships, South-Kingston, North-Kingston, and Exeter.

Misquamicut purchased of the Indians, 1665, was constituted a township 1669, by the name of Westerly; this is lately divided into three townships, Westerly, Charles-Town and Richmond; in Charles-Town is the Narraganset Indian reserve (Ninigret is sachem,) of two miles from E. to W. and of about 6 miles from north to south; which is generally farmed by the friends of the Indian guardians appointed by the assembly, upon long leases and small rents.

Manisses or Block Island, 1672, was constituted the township of New-Shoreham.

1677, the township of Greenwich was incorporated, and lately divided into the two townships of Greenwich, and West-Greenwich. By this time all the colony or general lands were reduced to private property; see a subsequent table, p. 89.

When the court of England, in a bad administration, were resolved to vacate charters of any nature, because restraints or obstacles to a despotick power; a writ of Quo Warranto was issued out against the colony Oct. 6,

† Exemplary to the other colonies.



1685, and delivered June 2, 1686, by Edward Randolph, Esq; The freemen of the colony by their ballots or written votes called proxies, by a majority gave in their opinion to the general assembly, in conformity to which, the general assembly, after the example of many corporations or charters in England, determined not to stand suit with his majesty, but by an humble address to the king, pray for the continuance of their privileges and liberties according to charter: the king promised them protection and favour; they were put under the government of president Dudley, who was soon superseded by governor Andros. 1686-7, Jan. 12, Sir Edmond Andros's commission as governor of New-England, was published in Rhode-Island, and all the colony formed into one county.

Upon the ORANGE REVOLUTION, by a general vote of the freemen in May 1689, it was concluded, that Sir Edmond Andros's authority, by his confinement in Boston, was terminated or silenced, and therefore they reassume their former government or charter; and as their charter never was vacated in a due course of law or judgment, the court of England allows them to continue in the possession and use of it to this day.

Each township is managed by a town council, consisting of the assistants who reside in the town, the justices of the town, and six men freeholders chosen annually by the freemen of the town; the major part of them is a quorum, with full power to manage the affairs and interest of the town to which they respectively belong, to grant licences to publick houses; and are a probate office for proving wills and granting administration, with appeal to governor and council as supreme ordinary.

On any urgent occasion the governor, or in his absence, the deputy governor, may by warrant call a general assembly.—The direction of the militia is in the general assembly of the colony; but when the assembly does not sit, the governor and assistants have the power of the militia.



At the township meetings in March annually, the freemen of the town bring in their written votes called proxies, for a governor, a deputy governor, ten assistants, recorder, treasurer, and attorney general; these votes are sealed up and sent to Newport for next May general election; the governor has no negative in elections, has no negative in passing of bills or resolves, only in the house or board of assistants in case of an equivote, he has the casting vote. All other officers civil and military are appointed by a joint vote of the board of assistants and house of representatives. The legislature of Rhode-Island colony stile themselves, The governor and company of the English colony of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations in New-England in America; the enacting stile is, Be it enacted by the general assembly of this colony, and by the authority of the same it is enacted. The assembly adjourn themselves for any time. The governor for the time being has the custody of the colony's charter, seal &c. and appoints the naval officer; the governor's salary is 300l. per ann. currency, and all his perquisites do not exceed 1000l.† There are yearly two assemblies or elections of representatives; they sit first Wednesday in May at Newport; the second assembly meets last Wednesday of October at Providence and South-Kingston alternately. In all grand committees, and elections of officers, the board of assistants and house of representatives sit and vote together.

In the last || election of general officers first Wednesday  
of

† At this writing 1750, the deputy governor has a salary of 30l. currency or O. T. per ann. the treasurer 200l; assistants and representatives have no wages.

|| Formerly the parties in elections and publick transactions were upon sectary footings; but for some years past the opposite parties are, they who are against multiplying a fallacious fraudulent paper currency, and they who encourage it for private iniquitous ends; majority of the present house of representatives are of the paper money side, notwithstanding of a growing depreciation; from April 1, 1750, to  
Sept.



of May 1750, were chosen William Greene governor, Robert Hazzard dep. governor; assistants, George Wanton, Jonathan Nichols, John Potter, John Bowen, Benjamin Tucker, Robert Lawton, James Arnold, William Richmond, Daniel Coggeshal, Jeffry Watfon; Thomas Ward secretary, Daniel Updike attorney general, and Thomas Richardson general treasurer.\* When the charter first took place 1663, there were only 18 representatives, 6 from Newport, 4 from Providence, 4 from Portsmouth, and 4 from Warwick; at present, 1750, besides these, there are 2 from each constituted township incorporated from that time, and at present are 58 members.

As

Sept. 1, 1750, their paper currency from par suffers a discount with the Massachusetts paper currency above 20 per cent, that is, a piece of 8 in Boston sells for 45s. O. T. in Rhode-Island it sells for 56s. O. T; by selling, I mean, it is merchandize, and will continue such until the paper money is generally annihilated, or by its small quantity arrive at a just par with silver: I shall mention a palpable instance of the good effects of paper currency being gradually annihilated (if the transition is too sudden, it may occasion a stagnation of business, confusion and uproars, which ought carefully to be avoided, as tending to sedition) by sinking of our paper medium; within these last six months (this is wrote September 1750) exchange with London is fallen from eleven and a half, for one sterling, to nine and a half, for one sterling good bills or well endorsed.

\* The fallacious plantation paper money currencies are a most disagreeable topick, and fall too often in my way: here I cannot avoid observing, that the habitual practice of this paper money cheat, has had a bad influence not only upon profligate private persons, but upon the administration of some of our New-England governments: for instance, one of the legislature, a signer of the Rhode-Island colony bills, was not long since CONVICTED of signing counterfeit bills. Men are chosen into the legislature and executive parts of their government, not for their knowledge, honour, and honesty, but as sticklers for depreciating (for private ends) the currency, by multiplied emissions: this year, 1750, the parties amongst the electors of assembly men were distinguished by the names of paper money makers, and the contrary: the paper money makers have got a majority in the lower house, and propose a new emission of 200,000 l O. T.; it is probable the house or board of assistants will not concur; it is not for want of paper-currency, at present they have more than ever; Massachusetts-Bay, where the bulk of their bills were lodged, have sent them back accompanied with the bills of New-Hampshire; their design is by quantity to depreciate the value of



As a table is the most concise and distinct form of representing several numeral articles relating to a colony; I shall here represent each township, their late numbers of proxies or freemen voters, their representatives in general assembly, their justices, their companies of militia, perustration (1748) of whites, negroes, and Indians.

their bills; and lands mortgaged for publick bills will be redeemed in those minorated bills, at a very inconsiderable real value. In the neighbouring province of Massachusetts-Bay the principal directors and signers of bubling or notorious cheat bills (in the act of parliament, 1741, it is termed a mischievous undertaking and publick nuisance) were by votes concurred by gov. Sh——y, made councillors, signers of publick bills of credit, judges, justices, &c. this to an impartial reader must appear the greatest disregard of a minister (all governors are in a ministerial capacity) to acts of parliament. To prevent this nuisance, in all acts of assemblies concerning paper money currencies, there may be a clause, that any person convicted of making, signing, or uttering any false, fraudulent, or counterfeit bills, be rendered incapable of any place of profit or trust in said province or colony.

In Massachusetts Bay province December 1748, the act for drawing in their bills of credit, expressly declares, “that the bills of the neighbouring provinces have passed promiscuously with the bills of our province; and the inhabitants of Massachusetts-Bay province will thereby be liable to greater evils than they have as yet suffered, if the bills of the neighbouring governments continue current within the province; therefore, &c.” particularly every person so accounting (extra provincial bills reckoned up to a person or otherways evading in negociation) receiving, taking, or paying the same, shall forfeit the sum of fifty pounds new tenor for every such offence. There has lately happened a publick controversy in the Boston weekly news papers for Sept. 1750, concerning the word accounting: this ought to be explained by some subsequent act of assembly; as there is a discovery of a principal manager, negotiating in Boston (in a manner as he thought evadable in the law) some bills of New-Hampshire: as he was a principal agent in restraining the currency of bills of the neighbouring provinces, if interest had not prevailed against common prudence, he would have evaded the negotiating of these bills in any manner though evadable in law.

N. B. To annihilate plantation paper currencies in a general sense, is very laudable; but to do it suddenly or in the space of one year, when there is no other medium or currency, puts a stop to all trade and business; this obstruction may divert our commerce into some other hannel: we have a notable instance of this in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, 1750.

Townships.



Townships.	1748. 1749.			Companies			
	Proxies.	Repref.	Justices.	Whites.	Negroes.	Indians.	Militia.
Newport	96	6	9	5335	110	68	4
Providence	32	4	13	3177	225	50	5
Portsmouth	25	4	5	807	134	51	1
Warwick	21	4	8	1513	176	93	3
Westerley	23	2	6	1701	59	49	4
* New Shoreham	23	2	0	260	20	20	1
North Kingston	30	2	7	1665	184	86	3
South Kingston	21	2	5	1405	380	193	3
Greenwich	17	2	6	956	61	27	2
James Town	4	2	0	284	110	26	1
* Smithfield	45	2	5	400	30	20	3
Scituate	58	2	4	1210	16	6	3
Gloucester	11	2	4	1194	8		3
Charles-Town	9	2	3	641	58	303	1
West Greenwich	25	2	4	757	8	1	2
Coventry	12	2	6	769	16	7	2
Exeter	24	2	4	1103	63	8	2
Middletown	20	2	4	586	76	18	1
Bristol	13	2	5	928	128	13	1
Tiverton	102	2	4	842	99	99	2
Little Compton	107	2	5	1004	62	86	1
* Warren	82	2	4	600	50	30	1
Cumberland	73	2	3	802	4		1
* Richmond	11	2	5	500	5	3	1
	888	58	119	28439	3077	1257	51

N. B. The numbers of whites, blacks, and Indians for the townships of New Shoreham or Block-Island, Smithfield, Warren, and Richmond, are only estimates, and not an actual census.

When the qualification of a freeman, as formerly, was low, the proxies or voters never exceeded 1300: at present the qualification is better or higher, and anno 1749, the proxies were only 888.

The valuation or census anno 1730, was whites 15,302, blacks 1648, Indians 985, in all 17,935; the valuation anno 1748, was whites 28,439, blacks 3077, Indians 1257, in all 32,773; from these deduct Bristol, Tiverton, Little Compton, Warren, and Cumberland, a late



late addition taken from the jurisdiction of Massachusetts-Bay, and added to Rhode-Island colony, of 4196 whites, 343 blacks, and 228 Indians, remain 24,243 whites, which is an increase of near 9,000 whites, upon 15,500 circiter, in 18 years; this is more than one third increased in the space of 18 years. The census of their blacks and Indians perhaps is not exact; that small colony does not possess more negroes, than the much larger province of Massachusetts-Bay; it is true, their late Guinea trade exchanging of negroes for horses, stock, and provisions shipt off for the West-India islands, has added considerably to the number of their negroes. Here is an increase of 44 Indians, whereas they are observed every where to be upon the decrease from the intemperate use of British spirits, and from their being sent to sea, and upon expeditions. The 51 militia foot companies are formed into 4 regiments, being one regiment foot in each of their four counties of Newport, Providence, King's-county, and Bristol; there are also one troop of horse in the county of Newport, and a troop in the county of Providence.

Concerning the boundaries of the colony of Rhode-Island.

King Charles, anno 1630, made a grant to the earl of Warwick from Narraganset-Bay, westward along shore 40 league, and in length from sea to sea: he assigned this grant to William viscount Say and Seal, \* lord Brooks, lord Rich, and eight more associates: the conditions of the grant were never complied with by settling, &c. and the grant is become void. A subsequent grant to duke Hamilton, 1635, for the same reason is null.

\* Seabrook at the mouth of Connecticut river is so called from the name of viscount Say and lord Brook. This humour of joint names for townships is still practised in the colony of Connecticut; thus a township granted lately to Hartford and Windsor jointly, is called Harwinton, from the initial syllables of these two townships.



In the beginning of our settlements, the country not being well investigated, fundry succeeding royal grants interfered with former grants. \* King Charles II. having received complaints concerning the wrong description of places and grants, not to be determined at a distance, but by commissioners to be sent expressly upon the spot; accordingly 1664, four commissioners, col. Nichols (afterwards governor of New-York) Sir Robert Ker, &c. were sent over to settle all the controverted boundaries of the provinces, and to be determined by the concurrence of any three of these commissioners, or of two of them, whereof Nichols to be one. † Three of those commissioners

\* For instance, Plymouth old north line, from Conahasset due west to Patuket river, and Massachusetts south line, from 3 miles south of the southermost part or head of Charles river, extended E. and W. overlap one another several miles; Attleborough Gore is plainly included in Plymouth grant, and also in the grant to Rhode-Island. Some of the lands of Tiverton and Little Compton, seem to be in both these grants. In equity perhaps the prior grant should take place; but this was not observed in the late determination of Rhode-Island easterly bounds; the validity of the Plymouth grant as to jurisdiction being questioned. Rhode-Island colony pretended to the settlements of Tiverton, Little Compton, Dartmouth, Rochester, Sandwich, and Cape-Cod townships, because Plymouth grant is not said to be bounded upon the ocean: but as this claim was not brought before a late court of commissioners appointed by patent from Great-Britain to settle the eastern boundaries of Rhode-Island colony, it may be supposed dropt and silenced. Lately in Rhode-Island, they have imagined a claim of jurisdiction further north than their present line; taking in part of Wrentham, Bellingham, Mendon, Uxbridge, and Douglass; they were encouraged to this by their late success in the eastern claim; but when they complained home concerning the encroachments of Massachusetts-Bay, upon their eastern borders, they made no complaint of northern encroachments; which if any, might have been adjusted by the same commission without further charge: and when commissioners were appointed, December 18, 1749, by the general assembly of Massachusetts-Bay, to join with commissioners from the jurisdiction of Rhode-Island, to run and renew the line agreed on and settled by both governments, Jan. 19, 1710-11; the Rhode-Island commissioners did not appear.

† The Rhode-Islanders construed it that nothing could be concluded without the concurrence of Nichols; and because Nichols happened not  
to



missioners gave the Attleborough Gore to Plymouth colony, that is, Patucket alias Blackstone || river to be the dividing line between these two colonies; the king's pleasure concerning this determination was never signified; as it was not confirmed at home, it continued many years in dispute, and at length, determined by commissioners 1741, and confirmed by the king in council 1746, in favour of Rhode-Island; it is now called Cumberland township, in honour to his royal highness the duke of Cumberland, and is annexed to the county of Providence.

Rhode-Island easterly line dividing it from the present province of Massachusetts-Bay was settled by commissioners\* 1741. Massachusetts government appealed home against every part of the judgment as grievous and injurious; but the judgment in whole was confirmed 1746, by the king in council. In autumn 1746, the government of Rhode-Island sent to the government of Massachusetts-Bay, a copy of his majesty's order in council, affirming the judgment of the court of commissioners, for settling the boundary line between the two governments, and by act of assembly appointed commissioners to run (Dec. 2, 1746) this late adjudged line with commissioners from Massachusetts-Bay; the assembly of Massachusetts-Bay could not be informed of this appointed time until their next sitting, December 24; thus Rhode-Island contrived to run this line ex parte. For a minute description of this line, see vol. I. p. 399.

For Rhode-Island northerly line dividing this colony from the province of Massachusetts-Bay, see vol. I. p. 415.

to be one of the three that concurred in the determination of the Attleborough Gore, they alledged the determination was not perfect, whereas Nichols was plainly intended to have only a casting vote when two were against two.

|| This river was so called by the name of Mr. Blackstone, who removed from Massachusetts-Bay and lived in this Gore, upon that river, many years.

\* The settling of this line cost each government about 4,000 l. O. T. The commissioners had from each government 6s. sterl. per diem, with all charges in coming, at, and returning from the congrès.

Southerly



Southerly the colony of Rhode-Island is bounded upon the sea or Atlantick ocean.

Its westerly line dividing it from the colony of Connecticut was settled by commissioners from both colonies September 27, 1728 ; was ascertained by a direct line extending west from the rock at the uttermost point of Warwick neck, 20 miles, to a considerable heap of stones in a cedar swamp, the S. W. corner of Warwick purchase. From this monument the line with Connecticut is determined by running first N. 7 d. E. by compass, 23 miles 10 rod to a large heap of stones in a valley being between two marked pine trees in the south line of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, and for the first 7 and a half miles were made monuments every half mile, and from thence northward to the Massachusetts south line, were made monuments at the end of each mile: from the said monument the S. W. corner of Warwick was made a southerly running of 15 miles and 9 rod S. 11 d. 20 m. W. to the mouth of Astrawage river where it falls into Pakatuke river ; and from thence Pakatuke river is the boundary to the sea.

Signed	Roger Woolcot,	}	For Connecticut.
	James Wadsworth,		
	Daniel Palmer.		

	William Wanton,	}	For Rhode-Island.
	Benjamin Ellery,		
	William Jenkes.		

The colony of Rhode Island have been very little concerned in the British North-America wars with the adjacent Indians, and their encouragers to rapine the French of Canada; from the Quaker principles of many of the inhabitants, and as not being immediately exposed to the ravages of the French and their Indians. In the expedition against Port-Royal in Nova-Scotia, an. 1710, and in the abortive expedition against Canada, 1711, they



they had some forces: towards the feint or intended expedition against Canada, in the summer 1746, they fitted out 300 land men with a warlike sloop of 100 seamen; they were ordered for Nova-Scotia, but in their voyage suffered disasters, never proceeded, and after some time this expedition was countermanded. They have been noted for privateering against the French and Spaniards in time of war. They have built a good fort upon Goat-Island, an island in the harbour of Newport.

The numbers of their whites, slaves, and other lists, may be seen in a foregoing table.

#### Concerning their courts of judicature.

Formerly the colony of Rhode-Island made only one county: not long since it was divided into 3 counties, Newport, Providence, and King's county; lately they have constituted a fourth county called Bristol, comprehending the late addition from the province of Massachusetts; Cumberland is in the county of Providence. Newport county contains Rhode-Island (the townships of Newport, Portsmouth, and Middletown,) Block-Island (the township of New-Shoreham) Canonicut-Island (the township of James-Town) Prudence-Island, and Patience-Island, with the lately adjudged parts of Tiverton and Little-Compton. Providence county comprehends the townships of Providence, Smithfield, Scituate, Glocester, Warwick, Coventry, Greenwich, West-Greenwich, and Cumberland. King's county includes South-Kingston, North-Kingston, Exeter, Westerly, Charles Town, and Richmond.

The legislature, called the general court or general assembly, sits the first Wednesday in May annually at Newport, and at Providence and South-Kingston alternately the last Wednesday of October.

The form of their judicial oath or affirmation does not invoke the judgment of the omniscient GOD, who  
sees



fees in secret, but only upon the peril of the penalty of perjury. †

**JURIES.** The town council of each township take a list of all persons liable by law, and whom they shall judge able and well qualified to serve on juries, and lay the same before a town meeting called for that purpose; and the names of all such persons written on separate pieces of paper, shall be put in a box to be delivered to the town clerk, to be by him kept under lock and key. When the precept or notification for returning of jurors is issued, at a town meeting the box shall be unlocked, and the town clerk shall draw out so many tickets, as there are jurors required, to be returned as jurors; such as in the judgment of the town meeting are unable to serve at that time, their names shall be returned into the box and others drawn in their stead; the names of the persons returned to serve, shall be put in another box from time to time, until all the tickets be drawn as aforesaid; then they shall be returned into the first, to be drawn from time to time as aforesaid. The town council shall once a year lay before a town meeting such other persons as may from time to time become qualified, to be put in the box. If by reason of challenge or otherways there are not a sufficient number of good and lawful men to make up the jury, the jury shall be filled up by the sheriff or his deputy *de talibus circumstantibus*.

**JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.** The general assembly in their May sessions, chuse for each town so many justices of the peace as they may find requisite, to be commissioned by the governor of the colony under the seal of the colony; their power extends all over the county. A justice may join persons in marriage, take the ac-

† This does not seem to be a sacred or solemn oath, and may be illustrated by the story of two profligate thieves; one of them had stolen something, and told his friend of it: well, says his friend, but did any body see you? No: then says his friend, it is yours as much as if you had bought it with your money.



knowledge of a deed or other instrument, take depositions out of court, the adverse party being notified. Two or more justices may hear, try, and adjudge all manner of debts, trespasses, and other actions, not exceeding five pounds currency; titles of lands are excepted, and such other actions as are excepted by any particular law of the colony. Three or more justices of the peace may try all persons suspected of thieving to the value of ten pounds currency. Appeals in civil cases are allowed to the inferior court of common pleas, and in criminal cases to the court of the general sessions of the peace: the judgment of which court, on all appeals from the justices court, is final.

SESSIONS OF THE PEACE. In each county are held twice a year, a court of general sessions of the peace, five justices of the county making a quorum, impowered to hear and determine all manner of matters and things relating to the conservation of the peace, the punishment of offenders, and all pleas of the crown (capital crimes excepted) are therein cognizable. Any person aggrieved at the sentence of this court, may appeal to the next superior court of judicature, court of assize and general goal delivery.

INFERIOR COURTS OF COMMON PLEAS, are held twice a year in each county; three justices of the said court are a quorum: they have cognizance of all civil actions arising or happening within the county, and tryable at common law, of what nature, kind, or quality soever: but no action not exceeding five pounds currency, is brought into any of these courts, unless where any man's freehold is concerned, or by way of appeal from any justices court. Liberty of appeal from these inferior courts of common pleas, is allowed to the next superior court of judicature, &c.

SUPERIOR COURT OF JUDICATURE, courts of assize and general goal delivery, are holden twice a year in each county; three judges are a quorum: they have cognizance of all pleas, real, personal, or mixt, as also  
pleas



pleas of the crown, and causes criminal, and matters relating to the conservation of the peace, punishment of offenders, and generally of all other matters, as fully and amply to all intents and purposes whatsoever, as the court of common pleas, king's bench, or exchequer in his majesty's kingdom of England have, or ought to have, and are impowered to give judgment therein, and to award execution thereon, and make such necessary rules of practice, as the judges shall from time to time see needful; but no cause, matter, or thing (writs of error, capital crimes, &c. excepted) are brought into this court by an original writ or process, but by appeals from the inferior courts of common pleas.

APPEALS TO HIS MAJESTY IN COUNCIL are allowed, where the matter or thing in controversy is the value of three hundred pounds new tenor, unless from judgment obtain'd upon a bond, which has no other condition but for the payment of a sum or sums of money. They appeal to the king in council not only on personal, but also in real actions.

A COURT OF CHANCERY or delegates not long since was erected; but on their iniquitous proceedings in dispensing with all laws, no man's property was safe; it was therefore discontinued.

THE ORDINARY FOR PROBATE OF WILLS, and granting administration, is in the respective town councils, with appeals to the court of governor and assistants.

THE COURT OF VICE ADMIRALTY consists of the same individual officers or persons that officiate in Massachusetts-Bay, or by deputations from them.

THE JUSTICIARY COURT OF ADMIRALTY is much of the same nature with that of Massachusetts-Bay, with an addition of the governor and some of the council of the neighbouring province of Massachusetts-Bay.

Their present taxes of all kinds are very inconsiderable; the interest of their publick loans generally defrays all



charges of government and other needfuls both of the colony and particular towns.

NAVIGATION. Newport of Rhode-Island is their principal trading town at present; lies in 41 d. 35 m. N. lat. it is of easy and short access, being near the ocean, but for that reason not so well situated for home consumption. Providence is about 30 miles farther up Narraganset-bay inland, therefore in a few years it must be their principal place of trade. For the safety and conveniency of sailing into the harbour of Newport, in summer 1749 was erected a light-house in Beaver-tail at a publick colony charge.

### LIGHT-HOUSE.

The diameter at the base is 24 feet, and at the top 13 feet. The height from the ground to the top of the cornice is 58 feet, round which is a gallery, and within that stands the lanthorn, which is about 11 feet high, and 8 feet diameter.

The ground the light-house stands on is about 12 feet above the surface of the sea at high water.

The following are the bearings (by the compass) of several remarkable places from the light-house, viz.

Point Judith	S. W.	3	Deg. S.
Block-Island. N. W. point	S. W.	8	S.
Ditto S. E. point	S. W. b. S.	5	S.
Whale rock	W.	9	S.
Brenton's reaf	E. S. E.	4	E.
Seal rock	E. S. E.	10	E.
S. point of Rhode-Island	E.	7	S.
Watch house on Castle-hill	E. N. E.	4	E.
Brenton's point	E. N. E.	4	N.
Fort on Goat-Island	E. N. E.	5	N.
S. eastermost of the Dumplins	N. E. b. E.		
Kettle bottom rock	N. E.	4	E.
Anchoring place between the town of Newport and Coaster's harbour	N. E. b. E.		

N. B. There



N. B. There is a small funken rock lies off due S. and at the distance of about 200 yards from the light-house.

The entrances and clearances of vessels in the collection of Newport for the last year of the late French and Spanish war; and for the first year of the present peace.

From 25 March 1747, to 25 March 1748.

	Ships	Snows	Brigs	Sloops	Schooners	
Entred in	2	3	20	27	4	Total 56
Cleared out	4	5	33	71	5	118

From 25 March 1748, to 25 March 1749.

Entred in	2	2	30	37	4	Total 75
Cleared out	8	11	49	9	83	160

The vessels used here are generally brigantines and sloops. Their trade in time of war consists much in privateering; this last war they had bad success; not much trade with Europe; much used to smuggling of contraband and uncustomed goods; they export for the West-India islands, horses, live stock of several kinds, butter, cheese, lumber, and rum of their own distilling: their trade seems to be upon the decline; they import or rather carry to Boston, sugar, molasses, and other West-India island produce, a few negroes from Guinea, and logwood from the bay of Honduras.

Ever since 1710, their most beneficial business has been banking or negotiating a base fraudulent paper money currency, which is so contrived, that amongst themselves it comes out at about 2 and half per cent. per ann. interest and lend it to the neighbouring colonies at 10 per cent. † a most barefaced cheat. The interest of these publick iniquitous frauds, one quarter goes to the several townships to defray their charges, the other three quarters are

† I shall only mention their emission 1744, of a publick paper money credit of 160,000 l. O. T. upon pretext (as the preamble expresses it) of the present Spanish war, and of an impending French war; but was shared amongst themselves by way of loan at 4 per ct. per ann. interest, for the first ten years, and after the expiration of those ten years, the principal to be paid off gradually in ten years more without any interest.



lodged in the treasury to defray the government charges of the colony.

PRODUCE. Rhode-Island colony in general is a country for pasture, not for grain; by extending along the shore of the ocean and a great bay, the air is softened by a sea vapour which fertilizeth the soil; their winters are softer and shorter than up inland; it is noted for dairies, hence the best of cheese made in any part of New-England, is called (abroad) Rhode-Island cheese.

Anno 1687, when by act of assembly taxes were receivable in produce of certain species, Indian corn was valued at 18 d. per bushel, butter 4 d. per pound, sheeps wool at 8 d. per pound; currency at that time, pieces of eight at a denomination of 33 3 quarters worse than sterling.

The most considerable farms are in the Narraganset country. Their highest dairy of one farm, communibus annis, milks about 110 cows, cuts about 200 load of hay, makes about 13,000 wt. of cheese, besides butter; and sells off considerably in calves and fatted bullocks. A farmer from 73 milch cows in five months made about 10,000 wt. of cheese; besides cheese in a season, one cow yields one firkin of butter, 70 to 80 wt. In good land they reckon after the rate of two acres for a milch cow.

In this colony there is no college or schola illustris; lately some gentlemen, lovers and encouragers of the liberal arts and sciences, to promote literature in the colony, have in Newport, the metropolis of the colony of Rhode-Island, lately founded a library. That this may be of exemplary use to our other provinces and colonies, I shall give some account of it. 1747, Abraham Redwood, Esq; bestowed 500 l. sterl. in books, being volumes, 206 folio's, 128 quarto's, 712 octavo's, and 251 duodecimo's; several other persons have bestowed some valuable books; a gentleman of noted liberality has promised an experimental philosophy apparatus, and to erect a spiral monument with an observatory. Some gentlemen



gentlemen incorporated by an ample colony charter have contributed, and upon ground, given by Mr. Henry Collins, merchant, erected a regular building for a library, at the charge of about 8,000 l. currency O. T.

The building for the library consists of one large room where the books are kept, 36 feet long, 26 feet broad, and 19 feet high, with two small offices adjoining. The principal or west front is a pediment and portico of 4 columns after the Dorick order; the whole entablature of which, runs quite round the building. The two offices are placed as wings, one on each side the portico, and connected with the body of the building, so as to form two half-pediments proceeding from the lower part of the entablature. These two wings, besides the conveniencies they afford, have a very good effect in extending as well as adding variety to this front. The east front consists of a plain Dorick pediment supported by a rustick arcade of three arches, in the recesses of which are placed three Venetian windows, after the Ionic order. The outside of the whole building is of rustick work, and stands on a base about 5 feet high from the ground, and the entrance is by a flight of steps the whole width of the portico. Their charter constitutes them a body politick, by the name of the company of the Redwood library, with power to chuse annually eight directors, a treasurer, secretary, and librarian; to admit new members, make laws, &c.

It is to be wished that a taste for learning and books with the better sort of people may prevail in all our colonies. In Philadelphia, some years since, a company of gentlemen, well-wishers to letters, have constituted a considerable library; of this we shall give some account in the section of Pensylvania. In Charles-town of South-Carolina, is lately formed a library company, April 21, 1750, they consisted of 128 members; their first general meeting was 2d wednesday of July 1750; they are to have four general quarterly meetings yearly, whereof one is the general annual meeting for election of officers, viz. president,



vice-president, treasurer, secretary, librarian, correspondent, and steward. The contributions of the members to be || 5 s. currency per week: the books to be lent to any of the society, giving a receipt for the same, to be returned within a limited time, a pamphlet in——days, an octavo or duodecimo in——weeks, a quarto in——weeks, a folio in——months; of this we shall give a further account in the section of South-Carolina.

Rhode-Island government \* pretend to an extent of jurisdiction further north than is at present settled, (this we hinted at p. 91. of vol. II.) and takes off from the jurisdiction of Massachusetts-Bay, considerable parcels of the townships of Wrentham, Bellingham, Mendon, Uxbridge and Douglass. Commissioners were appointed by the general assemblies of the province and colony, as is usual, to run their divisional line last autumn 1749; respectively they did not meet, and the Rhode-Island commissioners run the line ex parte, Jonathan Randal,

|| 8d sterl. which is about 34 s. sterl. per annum.

\* The provincial taxes and township rates having lately in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, from the wrongheaded management of ——been so oppressively great, that, 1. Upon a dispute between the province of Massachusetts-Bay and colony of Connecticut, lately broached concerning some townships of the province indented with the colony; the Massachusetts townships of Woodstock, Somers, Enfield, and Suffield, did in a voluntary manner withdraw from the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, and put themselves under the jurisdiction of Connecticut; and by force or menace prevent the civil officers of Massachusetts from exercising any authority and gathering of taxes. 2. The Massachusetts townships adjoining to the northerly line of Rhode-Island colony, allowed the Rhode-Island men (in an actual trespass) to run a line, without any opposition; chusing rather to be under the jurisdiction of Rhode-Island, where the publick or colony taxes are very small, and sometimes nothing, and no parish or ministerial rates, a very stunting or discouraging article in the poor new settlement: these disputes cannot be composed, but by applying to the court of Great-Britain at a great charge. Here we may observe, that ill devised exorbitant taxes occasion discontent amongst the people, with a charge, and confusion to the governments.

Thomas



Thomas Lapham, and Richard Steern, Esqs; † were appointed in August 1749 commissioners to run the line according to charter: the commissioners with Henry Harris, Esq; surveyor, and two chairmen, by themselves run a line to their own mind, and made report last Tuesday of February 1749-50; that, 30th of October 1749, no commissioners from Massachusetts-Bay appearing, we proceeded: “ We || could find no stake or monument of Woodward and Safferey, but from the place described in our “ commission, viz. we found a place where Charles river “ formed a large crescent southerly, which place is known “ by the name of Poppolatick pond, which we took to be “ the southermost part of said river; from thence we measured three miles on a plain in Wrentham, one quarter of “ a mile N. easterly from the dwelling-house of Thomas “ Man, and about a quarter of a mile S. easterly from the “ house of Robert Blake, where we marked a pine-tree “ and erected a monument of stones, and found the same “ to be in lat. 42 d. 8 m. north, which we deemed the “ N. E. bounds of the colony. From said pine-tree we “ proceeded to run the northern boundary line in a west “ course of 8 and half d. variation, and in this course “ marked many trees, said line passing over the southermost part of Manchoag pond, \* and did terminate “ about thirty rods eastward of a small pond called Grassy-Pond at a black oak tree which we marked with a monument of stones about it, as the north western bounds “ of the colony, being about twenty-two miles from “ said pine-tree to said black oak.”

*Robert Blake*

† In Rhode-Island government are squires many, because annually elective, and once a squire always a squire; not long since, a facetious gentleman met upon the road a Rhode-Island justice of his acquaintance, bare legs and feet, driving a team in very foul weather, he saluted him in this manner: your servant squire——I am surprized to see a gentleman of your noted frugality, to wear his best stockings and shoes in such dirty weather.

|| Perhaps, according to instructions they designedly did not find this proper monument.

\* In the northern parts of Douglass.



Some time afterwards a new commission issued from each of the governments to perambulate the northern boundary of Rhode-Island colony, by the stake set up by Nathaniel Woodward and Solomon Safferey, pursuant to the agreement of the province and colony, Jan. 19, 1710-11.

There is a case concerning some MINISTERIAL LANDS in this colony of considerable value, claimed by the church of England, and by the presbyterians or congregationalists; this case has been depending almost 30 years in the colony courts of common law, called the courts below, and before the king in council, and hitherto not issued: a particular account of the case may be agreeable to the devotees of both sides.

Anno 1657, the chief sachems of the Narraganset country sold to John Parker, Samuel Wilbore, Thomas Mumford, Samuel Wilson of Rhode-Island, and John Hull, goldsmith of Boston, Petaquamscut-Hill for sixteen pound; next year the sachem of Nienticut, sold for fifteen pound some lands north of the said purchase, to the same purchasers. The whole purchase was about fifteen miles long, and six or seven miles wide; afterwards they associated Brenton and Arnold, jointly they were called the seven purchasers. Another company, called Atherton's company, 1659-60, purchased lands of the Indians north of the said Petaquamscut purchase; these two companies had several controversies concerning their boundaries; anno 1679, they came to a final accommodation.

Anno 1668, the Petaquamscut purchasers by deed gave 300 acres of their best land, for an orthodox parson to preach God's word to the inhabitants: from this proceeds the dispute, who is the orthodox minister? By the Rhode-Island charter all professions of christians seem to be deemed orthodox; by one of the first acts of their legislature, 1663, all men professing christianity, and of competent estates, and of civil conversation, and obedient to the civil magistrate, though of different judgment in religious affairs, Roman catholicks  
only



only excepted, shall be admitted freemen, and shall have  
 \* liberty to chuse and be chosen officers in the colony,  
 both civil and military.

The boundaries with the Atherton company being finally accommodated, the Petaquamscut purchasers, 1693, made a final division amongst themselves, and amongst other company grants (120 acres to a mill, &c.) confirmed the grant of 1679, of 300 acres to an orthodox ministry, which were surveyed and lotted.

These ministerial lands not being claimed by any orthodox minister, anno 1702, Mr. Henry Gardiner enters upon 20 acres of it, and James Bundy upon the remaining 280 acres.

Most of the grantees seem to have been of the church of England, but many of them fell off to an enthusiastick sect in Warwick, called † Gortonians, now extinct; perhaps at that time there were no Presbyterians or congregational people in Rhode-Island, and at this time it is said there are in South-Kingston more people of the church of England than of the presbyterians and congregationalists.

1702, Mr. Niles, not ordain'd in any manner, preached in said district for some time, but never had possession from Bundy of the 280 acres; in 1710, he left Kingston, and settled at Braintree of Massachusetts-Bay.

1719, George Mumford bought of Bundy the possession of said 280 acres.

Several inhabitants of the Narraganset country having

\* They were not originally of so catholick and christian spirit in Massachusetts-Bay colony; the Massachusetts first settlers left England, because of an oppressive test act, notwithstanding (such is the nature of zealous, furious bigotry and enthusiasm) upon their first settling, 1631, in Massachusetts was made a test act, that no person could be free of the colony, who was not in full communion with some of their churches in the independent congregational model. Here we see that priests and bigots of all religions are naturally the same; the people of New-England are become good christian catholicks.

† From Mr. Gorton their leader, this sectary is now lost or extinct; it did not survive Mr. Gorton, the father of the sect.

petitioned



petitioned the bishop of London, and the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, for a missionary; Mr. Mc. Sparren was appointed 1721, and Mr. Gardiner delivered his 20 acres which he had in possession, to the church of England incumbent. Mr. Guy before Mc. Sparren's time had been appointed missionary, but soon left it; Mr. Mc. Sparren upon a writ of ejectment 1723 against Mumford for the 280 acres, grounded upon the confirmation 1679, and the laying out 1693, the original grant of 1668 being secreted, was cast in two tryals; he appealed to the king in council, but the society for propagating the gospel refusing to meddle in the affair, the matter rested, and Mumford kept possession.

The presbyterian incumbent minister, Mr. Torrey, the first incumbent of ordination, brought an action versus Gardiner for the 20 acres, but was cast; and Mr. Mc. Sparren, the church of England incumbent, brought and recovered ejectment against Robert Hazard tenant to Mr. Torrey.

1732, Mr. Torrey brought an action of ejectment against Mumford; both inferior and superior court gave it for Mumford; but upon Torrey's appeal to the king in council, these verdicts were disallowed, and possession ordered to the incumbent Mr. Torrey, 1734—The members of St. Paul's church of England in Narraganset, April 7, 1735, addressed the society for propagating the gospel, &c. for their assistance in advice and expence, but to no purpose.

1735, by advice from England, Mr. Torrey conveyed the said 280 acres which he recovered of Mumford, to Peter Coggschal and five others in fee in trust for himself and his successors in the presbyterian ministry: the said trustees leased the same to Hazard for a few years.

1739, the original deed of the ministerial lands in Petaquamscut purchase, which had been secreted, coming to light, Dr. Mc. Sparren in behalf of himself and successors in St. Paul's church of South-Kingston, by the advice of his lawyers, capt. Bull, col. Updike, and  
judge



judge Auchmuty, brings a new writ of ejectment against Hazard the occupant or tenant of the said 280 acres, was cast in the courts of Rhode-Island, but allowed an appeal to the king in council, which, for some reasons has not been entered, nor petitioned for a hearing.

For the information of the curious, of after-times, I shall here insert the VALUATION or quota of each township towards a publick colony rate of 5000 l. new tenor, Anno 1747.

	l.		l.
Newport	825	Gloucester	118
Providence	550	Charles-town	75
Portsmouth	276	W. Greenwich	79
Warwick	239	Coventry	60
Westerley	270	Exeter	125
N. Shoreham	83	Middletown	149
North Kingston	325	Bristol	175
South Kingston	450	Tiverton	140
East Greenwich	125	Little Compton	167
James-town	100	Warren	115
Smithfield	274	Cumberland	84
Scituate	132	Richmond	64

The affair of currencies in general is left to the appendix; at present we shall only hint, that in the colony of Rhode-Island from the votes of their general assembly, it appears, that in February 1749-50, their publick bills of credit current were 525,335 l. O. T. (whereof upon funds of taxes 135,335 l.; the rest upon loan not to be finished until 1764) which is sufficient to carry on the trade and business of the colony even at their present depreciated value; and the present design of emitting 200,000 l. O. T. more upon loan, is not as a further medium of trade, but a knavish device of fraudulent debtors of the loan money, to pay off their loans at a very depreciated value; the threatnings of Connecticut government to prohibit the currency of Rhode-



Rhode-Island bills in case the Rhode-Islanders emit more, will be an advantage to the fraud; because Rhode-Island will then have such a drug of their own and New-Hampshire bills as to render them of little or no value, consequently a real debt or mortgage may be discharged by a little or no value.

In Attleborough Gore or Cumberland of this colony are great variety of iron-rock ores, but unprofitable; here we shall give a short account of the metallick ores and minerals hitherto discovered in New-England; see p. 540. vol. I.

Mr. Baden, an ingenious miner and essayer, not many years since, was sent over to New-England from England by a company of gentlemen in quest of metallick ores and minerals; he found, 1. Iron ore, (both rock and swamp or bog ore) in plenty but not profitable. 2. Lead ore near Merimack, and Souhegan rivers, but not plenty, and so intermixed with rock and spar, is not worth working. 3. Copper ore in Simsbury hills, in the colony of Connecticut, near Connecticut river; three different companies (Belcher and Caswel, Mr. Bowdoin and company, Goff and company; this last was a bubble of Shodes) have wrought these mines with a considerable loss, and for some years have been neglected; Mr. Belcher erected a smelting furnace in Boston for his copper ore, but to no purpose. 4. Silver ore in Dracut near Merimack river; a furnace was erected in Boston for smelting this ore, but the ore proved a cheat of col. V—m's, and all miscarried.

In Attleborough Gore some copper ore intermixed with iron ore, which is a detriment to the iron ore, and of no profit as to copper.

We have some allum-slate or stone, but no salt springs, no pyrites or vitriol stone, such as is found on both sides of the river Thames along the Kentish and Essex shores in England, no lapis calaminaris. We have plenty of several sorts of earths, called boles or okers,



okers, such as black lead in Brimfield of Massachusetts-Bay near Connecticut river, rudle or red oker in many places, and some small quantities of yellow oker, which is the only valuable oker.

Our only metallick ore at present under improvement is that of iron, and may be reduced under the following heads. 1. Furnaces for smelting of rock ore into pigs; in Attleborough, now Cumberland, annexed lately to the jurisdiction of Rhode-Island, were erected at a considerable charge three furnaces; the country was well wooded for coal, but the ore proved not good or profitable, and is neglected; they were of some small use in the late war in casting of small cannon, bombs, and bullets. Here is a magnatick iron ore, which yields a red shot iron, not good. 2. Smaller furnaces for smelting of swamp or bog ore into hollow or cast ware, pots, kettles, &c. which we can afford cheaper than from England or Holland. 3. Bloomeries, which from bog or swamp ore without a furnace heat, only by a forge hearth, reduce it into a bloom or semiliquidated lump to be beat into bars; commonly three tuns of this ore yields one tun of bar iron, much inferior to the bar manufactured by the refiners of pig iron imported from the New-York, Jerseys, Pennsylvania and Maryland furnaces.

Col. Dunbar, late surveyor general of the woods in America, anno 1731, reported to the board of trade and plantations, that in New-England were six furnaces, meaning hollow ware furnaces, and nineteen forges, meaning bloomeries, for at that time we had no pig furnaces, no pig refineries.

In New-England, we have two slitting mills for nail rods, one in Milton eight miles from Boston, and another in Middleborough about thirty miles from Boston, which are more than we have occasion for. Our nailers can afford spikes and large nails cheaper than from England, but small nails not so cheap.



RELIGION, or rather the various religions in the colony of Rhode-Island. The Rev. Mr. Cotton Mather in a folio history of New-England, which he calls *Magnalia*, &c. writes, that anno 1695, (book VII. chap. 3. p. 20.) “ Rhode-Island colony is a colluvies of antinomians, “ familists, anabaptists, antifabbaterians, arminians, so- “ cinians, quakers, ranters, and every thing but Ro- “ man catholicks, and true christians ; bona terra, mala “ gens,” he should have added some brownists, inde- pendants, and congregationalists, but not formed into societies or congregations.

In this colony are no township or parish rates for the support of ecclesiasticks of any denomination ; only the church of England missionaries, ministers, and school-masters have salaries from England by the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts ; and the congregationalist minister in Westerly, as a missionary amongst the Narraganset Indians, has an exhibition from an incorporated society in Scotland, called a society for propagating christian knowledge.

In the address of the several plantations, since united by charter into one colony called Rhode-Island, to the supreme authority in England 1659, they call themselves a poor colony, “ an out-cast people, formerly from our “ mother nation in the bishops days, and since from “ the new English over zealous colonies.”

The plantations of Rhode-Island were originally settled by people privately whimsical in affairs of religion, antinomians, rigid brownists, &c. their first embodied societies of publick meeting were anabaptists (the true enthusiasts were only transients or vagrants) and to this day seem to have the majority in the colony.— In general they differ from the other two branches (presbyterians and independents of the professions in England tolerated by licence) solely in their admitting only of adults to baptism, and that not by sprinkling, but dipping or immersion ; private persons among themselves differ in particular tenets, such as, it is unlawful to pray with



with or for any practical unbelievers——That human learning is no way necessary for a gospel-preacher——differences as to grace and free-will, &c.——

Some have no particular place of meeting or worship: We shall give a more particular account of the sectaries amongst the anabaptists in the digressional article of British plantation sectaries in religious worship.

The quakers, persecuted in Massachusetts-Bay, first came to Rhode-Island 1656, and several of the most enthusiastick amongst the anabaptists joined with them; the congregational way did not take place until 1698; Mr. Honyman the first settled church of England missionary, fixed in Newport of Rhode-Island 1706, he was the senior church of England missionary, and died lately.

The baptists or anabaptists of Providence, 1654, divided into two sects concerning the essential necessity of laying on of hands (ordination) as a qualification in a person to administer baptism: the laying on of hands at length generally obtained—There is a strict association of the ordination baptists by itinerant yearly meetings all over New-England once a year.—1665, a baptist church or congregation was formed in the new plantation of Westerly, and generally embraced the seventh day or saturday sabbath, and are at present a large society, called sabbaterian baptists—1671, from the sabbaterian baptist church of Newport some drew off, and formed a first day sabbath church.

1720, in Newport was gathered a society in the congregational way; 1728, another church of congregationalists proceeded from them; their first considerable appearance, but without any place of publick worship, was 1698.—There is a congregational society in Providence, but do not thrive.—There is a congregational meeting in South-Kingston, which we have mentioned at length in the account of the ministerial lands of Pettaquamscutt.—There is a congregational church in Westerly, the minister has an annual exhibition from the Scots society



society for propagating of christian knowledge amongst the Narraganset Indians as his province; the fund was partly the donation of the Rev. Dr. Williams of London. — There is a congregationalist society in Shoreham called Block-Island. — And some in townships lately taken from the province of Massachusetts-Bay, and annexed to the colony of Rhode-Island.

The church of England society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, in this colony have four missionary ministers at Newport, S. Kingston, Providence, and Bristol, and occasional worship at Warwick and Westerly, two school masters with salaries, and lately in Newport a catechist or school-master, a donation of their late collector of the customs, Mr. Keys.

Here is no presbyterian congregation after the model of the church of Scotland, Holland, Geneva, and the French hugonots.

Many quaker meetings all over the colony.

Civil officers are chosen indifferently out of every religious society; some years since Mr. Cranston was continued governor many years as an impartial good man; he did not associate with any sect, and did not attend any publick meeting; as the charter grants an universal liberty of conscience, he was a keep-at-home protestant.

A small congregation of jews, who worship at a private house, where a clerk or subordinate teacher regularly officiates at all constituted times.

A DIGRESSION concerning the various sectaries in religion, in the British settlements of North-America.

With regard to religion, mankind may be distinguished into three general sects, 1. infidels, 2. scepticks, 3. the religious, properly so called, consisting of many peculiar modes or schemes of practical devotion.

The religious are divided into christians, &c. there we write concerning christians only.



The sacred scriptures, called our BIBLE, is the magna charta of all christian societies; this book or bible is a most valuable collection of moral precepts, sometimes delivered in plain literal sentences, but generally by way of mystery, fable, allegory, allusion, and the like, as was the manner of the eastern sages and writers of those times. I am a catholick christian, no libertine, no enthusiast, no bigot; what I relate is purely historical; bishop Tillotson writes, “the zealots of all parties have got a scurvy trick of lying for the truth.”

It is the general opinion of politicians, that a proper deference to a well regulated clergy is requisite in a commonwealth; notwithstanding, and not inconsistent with this due deference, I may be allowed to make the following remarks concerning the conversions or propagation of christian knowledge among our American Indians: I shall premise the observations of some good men who were knowing in this matter, before the missionary societies did take place. \*

Mr. Elliot minister of Roxbury near Boston, with much labour learnt the Natick dialect of the Indian languages. He published an Indian grammar, preached in Indian to

\* At our first arrival among the American Indians, we found no places and times of religious worship, only some priests called Powowers, a kind of knavish cunning conjurers, like those in Lapland, who pretend to converse with familiar spirits.

After some years communication with the neighbouring Indians, these Indians of themselves established some good and natural regulations; such as—If any man be idle a week, or at most a fortnight, he shall pay five shillings.—If an unmarried man shall lie with a young woman unmarried, he shall pay twenty shillings.—Every young man, not a servant, shall be compelled to set up a wigwam (a house or hut) and plant for himself.—If any woman shall not have her hair tied up, but hang loose, or be cut as men's hair, she shall pay five shillings.—Whoever shall commit fornication, if a man, shall pay 20 s. and if a woman, 10 s.—None to beat their wives, penalty 20 s. The Powowers, who are the Indian physicians as well as priests; any person inclinable to the christian religion, when sick, and weak minded, are used as we christians of different sects of religion use one another, that is, damn them if they do not assent to the faith of the priest.



several of their tribes, and translated 1664 our bible and several books of devotion into the said Indian language; he relates several pertinent natural queries of the Indians relating to our religion. Whether JESUS CHRIST the mediator or interpreter, could understand prayers in the Indian language? How men could be the image of God, since images were forbidden in the second commandment? If the father be nought, and the child good, why should God in the second commandment be offended with the child? with many other intricate questions concerning our accounts of the creation and the flood, particularly, how the English came to differ so much from the Indians in their knowledge of God and JESUS CHRIST, since they had all at first but one father? Mr. Elliot was so much approved of, that in relation to the Indians, in the acts of the general assembly, the acts run thus, “By the advice of the said magistrates and “of Mr. Elliot;” Mr. Elliot travelled into all parts of the Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies, even so far as Cape-Cod.

Mr. Mayhew, a noted English evangelist, † or itinerant missionary among the Indians, more especially with the Indians of Martha's-Vineyard, Nantucket, and Elizabeth islands; he learnt the Indian language, that he might be in a capacity of instructing the natives in the christian faith; his father had a kind of patent from home, as proprietor and governor of these islands.

All our missionaries who have endeavoured the conversion of the Indians, have been guilty of a grand fundamental mistake, which if not amended, will for ever render their real conversion impracticable. The clergy missionaries began by inculcating the most \* abstruse and

† In his voyage to England 1657, the vessel foundered at sea, and he was lost.

\* As it is generally agreed amongst christians, that revelations, and mysteries or miracles are ceased; religion is become a rational affair, and ought to be taught in plain intelligible words. The basis of



and mysterious articles of the christian religion. Mr. Mayhew in his journal, writes, " That the Indians declared " the

of all religions and mysteries, is, the belief of the existence of a supreme incomprehensible BEING, director of the universe; this we can investigate no other ways but by reason: the TRINITY ought to be introduced by some rational obvious analogies, such as: We offer our praises and prayers to the supreme being, called GOD THE FATHER; invited and encouraged thereto, from the consideration of the divine clemency and benevolence, that is, by the mediation of GOD THE SON; with the assistance of the DIVINE SPIRIT, GOD THE HOLY GHOST; all three being the attributes of, or personated by one and the same GOD, and which we express by three persons in the godhead: when the heathens come to understand these expressions, they may be impressed upon them in our usual mystical terms; but all abstruse fanatical formulas and creeds, such as is the Athanasian creed, ought never to be offered to them.

The catechisms whereby we initiate our children and the Indian heathen into the christian religion perhaps require castigation. That of the church of England in its first questions seems very low and silly, adapted to a nurse and her child, and may give the Indians a mean opinion of our religion doctors.

Question. What is your name?

Answer. A. B.

Question. Who gave you this name?

Answer. My godfathers and godmothers.

That of the Westminster assembly of divines, immediately enters into the most abstruse articles of our religion.

How many persons are there in the godhead?

What are the decrees of God?

Who is the redeemer of God's elect?

What is effectual calling?

Good works ought incessantly to be preached to the Indians. Free will and predestination ought not rashly to be touched upon, according to our notions of the prescience and omniscience of God, and of the free agency of mankind which renders them accountable for their actions, they are so much in contrast, that to reconcile them is one of the greatest mysteries of the christian or any other religion.

Their instruction ought to be brief, and not verbose, not to meddle with the manifold small differences and controversies among our sectaries, because, as the conceptions, humours, and interest of several people are various, a general comprehension is impracticable in nature. Only teach them that all religions are good which are consistent with society; that is, all religions are good, that teach men to be good. Our attachment to peculiar ways of worship, is not



“ the difficulties of the christian religion were such as the  
 “ Indians could not endure ; their fathers had made some  
 “ trial of it, but found it too hard for them, and therefore  
 “ quitted it.” The fundamental catholick articles of our  
 religion are short, simple, and easily understood by the  
 meanest capacity. 1. To adore one supreme being, in  
 his agency of creating and governing the universe.  
 2. To honour our natural parents, and all persons in po-  
 litical authority (parents of the country) over us. 3. To  
 love our neighbours as ourselves. 4. To be merciful,  
 even to brute beasts. Whatever is inconsistent with any  
 of these, is irreligion. “ What doth the Lord require of  
 “ thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk  
 “ humbly with thy God.” The few credenda, or articles of

from any light within us ; but is inculcated in our tender flexible  
 years, by our parents, nurses, preceptors, priests, and laws of our  
 country. Orthodoxy in religion is ambulatory ; upon a revolution,  
 the party that prevails is the orthodox.

All bigots or uncharitable idle sectaries are disturbers of society,  
 (such are the Roman catholicks, the high-fliers of the church of Eng-  
 land, the covenanters or cameronians of the kirk of Scotland, &c.)  
 and their ringleaders fall under the inspection of civil authority, and  
 may without any imputation of persecution upon account of religion,  
 by way of a salutary civil remedy, be sent to a mad-house or work-  
 house, to bring them to a right mind.

Some proper degree of learning or literature, administred to the  
 Indians, is requisite, not only to civilize them, bring them to our lan-  
 guage and manners, but to render them less subject to credulity and  
 frantickness in their devotions. The Roman catholick tenet of igno-  
 rance being the mother of devotion, is meant only of a superstitious  
 devotion, not of a proper decent mode of worship.—I do not join  
 avowedly with the free-thinkers, who from the maxim of frustra fit  
 per plura say, that the intricate method of our redemption from dam-  
 nation and hellish everlasting penances, by the omnipotent God,  
 might in a peremptory manner been done by a fiat.

Mysteries, are properly deviations from the ordinary laws of na-  
 ture or providence : mysteries in most schemes of religion are unne-  
 cessary, and too much multiplied : the standing maxim ought to be,  
*nec Deus interfit, nisi dignus vindice nodus.* Human laws and sanc-  
 tions cannot extend to numberless human vices and wickednesses ;  
 therefore divine rewards and punishments of a God who knows in se-  
 cret ought to be inculcated.



faith in any scheme of practical religion ; the less intricate, more comprehensive, and consequently not subject to split into sectaries : all enthusiastical or juggling schemes of devotion are a nuisance ; the Wh——ld (an insignificant person, but a happy dramatick actor of enthusiasm) new-lights, pretend to know one another at first sight as much as if they were of the order of free-masons.

In former times, before hired missionaries from incorporate societies took place, the voluntier provincial missionaries, viz. Mr. Elliot, Mr. Mayhew, &c. of New-England, who believed what they taught, were of exemplary good life, and spared no fatigue, were of great service in civilizing our intermixed Indians, though their faith was not strong enough to carry them out among the tribes of our adjacent wilderness Indians. We have scarce any account to give of the late missionaries from the three several societies now subsisting for propagating of christian knowledge amongst the wild Indians, or men of the woods, as the French call them. The Albany church of England missionary, sometimes visits the adjacent tribe of Mohawk Indians of the Iroquois nation. The congregationalist missionaries from the New-England society in London upon the New-England frontiers at Gorges, Richmond and Fort-Dummer, act only as chaplains to these small garrisons of ten or a dozen men each. Mr. \* Brainerd, a late missionary upon the frontiers of the

\* The rev. Mr. Brainerd, a missionary from the Scot's society to the Indians upon the rivers of Delaware and Seshquahanna, was a true and zealous missionary, giving allowances for his weak enthusiastick turn of mind. In his printed book, Philadelphia 1745, concerning the Indian conversions, "at a distance with my bible in my hand, I was resolved if possible, to spoil their spirit of Powowing, and prevent their receiving an answer from the infernal world." In the year 1744, he rode about 4000 miles to and fro among the Indians, sometimes five or six weeks together, without seeing a white man ; he had three houses of residence at distances in the Indian countries. Is there any missionary from any of the societies for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, that has reported the like ?



the Jerseys and Pennsylvania upon the exhibition of the Scots society for propagating christian knowledge, seems to have been the only minister who faithfully performed the service of an Indian missionary.

In all royal charters, and proprietary grants of colonies in British North-America, one of the principal designs is said, to be the conversion of the Indians by good instruction and an exemplary good life: the missionaries from the society do not in the least attempt the conversion of the Indians, because it requires travel, labour, and hardships: and the British people in general, instead of christian virtues, teach them European vices; for instance, by introducing the use of intoxicating liquors, for private profit, they dispense more strong liquor than gospel to the Indians; and thus have destroy'd, and continue to destroy perhaps more Indians, than formerly the Spaniards did, by their inhumane and execrable cruelties, under the name of conversions; the Spaniards destroyed only their bodies, we destroy body and mind. Mr. Mayhew in his journals writes, that the Indians told him, that, "they could not observe the benefit of christianity, because the English christians cheated them of their lands, &c. and the use of books made them more cunning in cheating." In his Indian itineraries, he "desired of Ninicroft, sachem of the Narraganset Indians, leave to preach to his people; Ninicroft bid him go and make the English good first, and

Enthusiasm in the Roman Catholick missionaries is encouraged by their church and states; it prompts them (some as merit, some as penance) to endure all manner of hardships towards promoting, not only their religion, but also their trade and national interest with the Indians. Religious superstitions, by falling in with the weak and enthusiastick natural propensities of mankind, are very powerful; but in time ought to be rectified, as reason gets the better of these human infirmities. As strong reasoning is not accommodated to the bulk of mankind, credulity or revelation is a more easy possession of the mind; without revelation a man is quite at a loss, from whence he came, for what purpose he exists, and where he is to go when he ceases to live: there is a strong propensity in human nature to religion; some abandoned politicians make a wrong use of this, to promote their wicked designs, ambitions, and interests.



chid Mr. Mayhew † for hindering him from his business and labour ;” in another place Mr. Mayhew writes, “ the Mohog Indians told him, that they did believe in God, and worship him, but as several nations had their distinct ways of worship, they had theirs, which they thought a good way.” The Indians were entirely wanting in any set form of religious devotional worship.

Seeing the religion missionaries neglect the conversion of the Indians, and take no further care than with relation to their salaries or livings, and of being stationed in the most opulent towns, which have no more communication with the savage Indians, than the city || of London has; the respective governments upon the continent of America ought to contrive some method of civilizing the Indians, which will be attended with many considerable advantages. 1. Our own tranquility. 2. Our Indian skin and fur trade. 3. By rendering them serviceable to us in our agriculture and navigation; thus a too great importation of foreigners may be avoided. In Pensylvania has been a vast importation of Palatines, Saltburghers, and other foreigners. By a late letter from a gentleman of Philadelphia, a man of veracity, penetration, and authority in the province of Pensylvania, I am informed ; (this I publish with relation to those gentlemen, who seem inadvertently to insist upon the introducing of floods of foreigners among us :)

† This saying of Ninicroft’s was very applicable to Mr. Wh—ld, a late vagrant dramattick enthusiast in North-America ; H—ly of the oratory, so called in London, an ecclesiastical mountebank ; and such like impostors, ought to be animadverted upon ; they are a scandal and reproach to the christian religion.

|| As to the conversion of Indians they make it a sine-cure, or only a name or free gift, and may be enjoyed any where to the same advantage. As an historian upon the place of observation, I could not avoid (without suspicion of partiality) representing these misapplications in a true and proper light, being a publick affair ; I do not meddle with the personal character of any missionary ; if the bishop’s commissary has any authority, it is his office and care ; I avoid being officious.



“ That the Germans in all probability, allowing for progress of time, will be possessed of the chiefest and most valuable of our lands; by their industry and penurious way of living, get rich where others starve: the Irish were settled this side of Sesquahanna river many years before the Dutch (meaning the high Dutch or Germans) came among us, and wherever they had a good plantation, the Dutch bought it from them; at present the Irish families are but here and there on this side of said river; they move to the westward of the river; the Dutch follow them, and by offering high prices for their lands, the Irish quit, and go further; the Dutch by their superior industry and frugality may out the British people from the province.” This province by importation of foreigners does at present, in fencible Men, very near equal all the English or British militia, in the English or British continent of America; in case of a French or Dutch war, these Dutch or German foreigners by herding or settling together, retaining and propagating the language and differences in religious worship; upon a discontent or disaffection (better we never had one foreign family settled among us) may become not only a useless, but a pernicious body.

The missionaries from the society in London for propagating the gospel, &c. call all dissenters, the separation: Mr. Hobart, † a late noted congregational writer, says, this society and their missionaries are episcopal separatists; both sides are notoriously in the error. William George, D. D. dean of Lincoln, in his late sermon before the society for propagating the gospel, &c. says, “ Circumstances in worship, in their nature variable, are left to be determined by the discretion of those, whose business it is to see that all things be done decently and in order.”

There

† Mr. Hobart (perhaps from party-prejudice) a gentleman of learning and application, has fallen into a very gross mistake, viz. That the church of England is a separation in New-England. Before the



There are in Great-Britain three incorporated pious societies \* for propagating christian knowledge. I shall here give some account of them, with relation to the British North-America settlements.

I. Anno 1659, the parliament of England encouraged the propagation of the gospel among the Indians in New-England and parts adjacent; and enacted a corporation, consisting of a president, treasurer, and 14 assistants, called, The president and society for propagating the gospel in New-England and parts adjacent; that the commissioners for the united colonies of New-England for the time being, shall have power to dispose of said monies of the corporation. By a collection in virtue of an act of parliament, in all the parishes of England, was collected a considerable sum, which purchased a considerable land estate. Upon the restoration, their charter was deemed void, and col. Beddingfield, a Roman catholic military officer, who had sold lands to this society,

the union of the two kingdoms of Great-Britain 1707, the ecclesiastical constitution of the English American plantations, was (Roman catholicks excepted) a general toleration of all christian professions without any preference. In the treaty for this union, it was naturally agreed by the commissioners, and afterwards confirmed in perpetuity, by acts of both parliaments; viz. that the church of England was to be deemed the established church, with the established toleration, in all the formerly English colonies, by this expression, "and territories thereto (to England) belonging." I cannot account for the reverend Mr. Hobart's lapse into that sophistical school-boy evasion, that the territories thereto belonging, is meant of the Jersey islands only, but not of the plantations; the act of uniformity, 1558, 1 ELIZ. is out of the question, because at that time we had no plantations, therefore I shall not adduce it. In the strict act of uniformity 14 Carol. II: there is no addition of territories thereto belonging, (the Jersey islands at that time belonged to England) all the charter and proprietary grants had a clause of a general liberty of conscience (Roman catholicks excepted) in their colonies, to encourage settlers of all sectaries; because an exclusive uniformity occasions much distraction and confusion among the good christians of several denominations, and might have been an obstruction to the settlements.

\* See vol. I. p. 231.



was advised to seize them as being an illegal purchase, and under value. The members of the society solicited K. Charles II. for a new charter, which they obtained, dated February 7, 14 Carol. II; ordaining that for ever hereafter within the kingdom of England, there shall be a society or company, for propagation of the gospel in New-England and the parts adjacent in America: the first nominated members were of the highest rank and stations at court; their successors to be chosen by the society, but never to exceed the number of 45. In chancery they recovered Mr. Beddingfield's land. Robert Boyle, Esq; was appointed the first governor; upon his decease, Robert Thompson was elected; and upon his death Sir William Ashurst of London, alderman. The present governor is Sir Samuel Clark, baronet, who succeeds his father Sir Robert Clark, baronet. The whole revenue of the corporation is 500 l. to 600 l. sterl. per ann. at present they exhibit small but well placed salaries to several missionaries English and Indians; and appoint commissioners in New-England to manage this charity. There was a benefaction of the good and honourable Robert Boyle, Esq; of 90 l. sterl. per ann. to this corporation; another of Dr. Daniel Williams, a dissenting minister of London; he left to the corporation the reversion of a real estate upwards of 100 l. sterl. per ann. which fell to them 1746; the clause of his will concerning it is:

“ I give to Mr. Joseph Thompson and the rest of the  
 “ society for New-England, my estate in Essex, called,  
 “ Tolshent, Becknam Mannor, or by any other name, which  
 “ I bought of Mrs. Hannah Fox, alias Bradley, with all the  
 “ profits and advantages, belonging to me after the death  
 “ of the said Fox, now Bradley, as long as the said society  
 “ or corporation shall continue; upon condition, that  
 “ 60 l. per ann. shall be allowed between two well qua-  
 “ lified persons, as to piety and prudence, to be nominated  
 “ successively by my trustees, to preach as itinerants in  
 “ the



“ the English plantations in the West-Indies, and for the  
“ good of what pagans and blacks lie neglected there.  
“ And the remainder to be paid yearly to the college of  
“ Cambridge in New-England, or such as are usually  
“ employed to manage the blessed work of converting the  
“ poor Indians there ; to promote which, I design this  
“ part of my gift. But if my trustees be hindered from  
“ nominating the said itinerants, under pretence of any  
“ statute in New-England, or elsewhere, I give the said  
“ 60 l. per ann. to the said college in New-England, to en-  
“ courage and make them capable to get constantly some  
“ learned professor out of Europe to reside there, and shall  
“ be of their own nomination, in concurrence with the mi-  
“ nister of the town of Boston, in the said New-England.

“ And if the aforesaid society or corporation shall  
“ happen to be dissolved, or be deprived of their present  
“ privilege ; my will is, and I hereby give the said man-  
“ nor, with all the profits and advantages, to the said  
“ town of Boston, with the ministers thereof, to benefit  
“ the said college, as above, and to promote the conver-  
“ sion of the poor Indians.”

II. The state of the society in Scotland for propagating christian knowledge. This society began 1700 ; by queen Anne's letters patent 1709 they were incorporated : by donations at present, 1750, they are enabled to maintain 136 schools, in which are educated above 7000 children of both sexes ; and from its first erection to this time, it has been the means of instructing about 50,000 children of both sexes. This society by a new patent, 1738, are allowed to instruct their children in husbandry and handicrafts.—By their first patent they were allowed to extend their care to places abroad, particularly to the Indians on the borders of New-York, New-Jersies, and Pensylvania ; the New-England society were supposed to have the missionary charge of New-England. They have contributed to a college lately erected in the New-Jersies.



III. June 16, 1701, king William incorporated a society with perpetual succession, by the name of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, to be accountable annually to the lord high chancellor, lord chief justice of the king's bench, and lord chief justice of the common pleas. Every year some new members are admitted, to assist the society with their good counsels and subscriptions ; the present members are about 230.

The missions with the respective salaries at this time, are

NEWFOUNDLAND.		l.		
	1.		School-master	15
Trinity-Bay	50		Fairfield	50
St. John's	50		New-London	60
School-master	10		Groton school	5
			Newtown	50
MASSACHUSETTS-BAY.			Simsbury	30
Boston	70		Norwalk	20
Newbury	60		Darby	20
Marblehead	60		New-England Itinerant	70
Salem	40			
Braintree	60		NEW-YORK.	
Scituate	40		New-Chester	50
Hopkinton	60		School-master	10
			New-York school-master	15
NEW-HAMPSHIRE.			Jamaica	50
Portsmouth and Kittery	75		Hampstead	50
			Catechist	10
RHODE-ISLAND.			School-master	10
Newport, and Catechist	80		New-Rochel	50
Narraganset & Warwick	100		Rye	50
Providence	60		School-master	15
School-master	10		Oyster-Bay schoolmaster	10
Bristol	60		Brook-haven	50
			Staten-Island	50
CONNECTICUT.			School-master	15
Stratford	70		New-Windfor	30
Catechist	10		Albany and Mohawk	50



NEW JERSEY.		1.	NORTH-CAROLINA.		1.
Elizabeth town		50	Itinerant north district		50
Catechist		10	fouth district		50
Amboy		60			
Burlington		60	SOUTH-CAROLINA.		
Monmouth county		60	St. Thomas		30
Salem		60	St. Andrew's		50
Shrewsbury school		10	St. George's		30
Newark		50	St. Paul's		30
			St. Hellen's		30
PENSYLVANIA.			St. John's		30
New-castle		70	St. James		30
Lewis		60	St. Bartholomew		30
Apaquiminick		60	Prince Frederick		30
Chester		60	Christ's church		30
School-master		10			
Oxford		60	GEORGIA.		
Periquihame		60	Savannah		50
Kent county		60			
Itinerant of Pensylvania			BAHAMAS.		
and Jersey		50	Providence		60

Salaries to missionaries, catechists, school-masters, and officers of the society, are an annual expence of about 3540 l. sterl. part of the fund for this, is yearly, by benefactions, legacies, and entrances (at five guineas each) of new members 1600 l.

Yearly payments of subscribers 600

Rents of lands, and dividends in the stocks 317

Ten pounds sterling in books are allowed to each missionary as a library ; and five pounds in devotional books and tracts to be distributed, such as bibles, common-prayers, whole duty of man, &c.

This society have the direction of two other separate charitable funds. 1. The negroe fund, which at present may amount to 3000 l. sterl. principal in old S. S. annuities ; their yearly donations are very inconsiderable.



siderable. There are two missionaries as catechists of negroes, one at New-York 50 l. sterl. per ann. another at Philadelphia at 50 l. sterl. per ann. 2. The Barbadoes estate, which is appropriated to particular uses mentioned in general Codrington's will; such as, a catechist to the negroes in the society's plantations in Barbadoes, 70 l. sterl. Sundries for a college in Barbadoes, called Codrington's college, a school-master, an usher, a professor of philosophy and mathematicks, &c.

Towards the new settlement of Nova-Scotia, the society resolve to send over six missionaries and six school-masters, to prevent the new settlers being perverted to popery, by the present French popish settlers. Our new settlers have not the least communication with the French settlers; and perhaps in the town of Halifax and garrison, there are no professed papists to be found; a parochial minister, with the chaplains belonging to the troops, and the congregational minister from New-England for the use of the New-England emigrants, may be sufficient.

The society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts is a very good, pious, and most laudable design; but the execution thereof in British North-America is much faulted. †

I. Any

† It is a profane saying of some; "he who meddles with the clergy, puts his hand into a nest of wasps or hornets:" but as this society in their yearly abstracts, request that people in America, who upon the spot have opportunities of observing what relates to the execution of this pious christian exhibition, may represent: as it falls in the course of this American history, without being reckoned officious or presuming, I may be allowed to make these remarks. — In short, the civilizing and christianizing of the heathens, which with us are the Aboriginal American Indians, and the imported negroe slaves, seems naturally to be the principal care of missionaries; the quakers observe, that good salaries called livings, in a sort of sine-cure, is the principal concern of the missionaries; itinerancies and conversions of the heathen is too laborious, and does not answer their intention.

Dr.



1. Any indifferent man could not avoid imagining, that by propagating the gospel in foreign parts, was meant, the conversion of natives of such parts as the royal charters and proprietary grants of our plantations, enjoin the civilizing and conversion of the Indians by doctrine and example. It is astonishing to hear some of these missionaries and their friends, indiscreetly affirm, that this was no part of the design, because not expressed in strong terms in their charter. King William, the granter of the charter, cannot be imagined to have meant, that the expulsion or elbowing out sober orthodox dissenters was the principal intention thereof, though at present, their chief practice; there is not one missionary (the Albany and Mohawk missionary excepted) that takes the least notice of the Indians; the society, sensible of this neglect, in their latest mission, that of Mr. Price for Hopkinton about 30 miles inland from Boston, he is particularly instructed, to endeavour the propagation of the christian religion among the neighbouring Indians.

The practice of the present missionaries, is to obtain a mission to our most civilized and richest towns where are no Indians, no want of an orthodox christian ministry,

Dr. Lisle, bishop of St. Asaph, in his sermon February 19, 1747-8, before the society, speaking of Romish Portugal missionaries in Asia, from a society called *de propaganda fide*, says, "They settle themselves in nations which are christians already, and under pretence of converting the infidels, which are among them; their chief business seems to be, the perverting of christians themselves from their ancient faith, and to draw them over." N. B. No presbyterian or congregationalist could have wrote in stronger terms, with regard to our present missionaries.—As to the conversion of the Indians not being their care; we find it not so understood in the excellent sermons preached before the society from time to time; in many of their anniversary sermons, the preacher says, that the direct aim of the society, is the propagation of christianity abroad, among the barbarous nations of America.—In such parts of the world, as have not yet been enlightened by the gospel, or are in danger of having this light extinguished.

In the charter from the parliament of England 1659, the first president of the corporation was judge Steel, and the first treasurer was Mr. Henry Ashurst, which should have been mentioned before.

and



and no Roman catholicks, the three principal intentions of their mission : they seem absurdly to value themselves upon the diversion (I do not say perversion) of the presbyterians and congregationalists. All men have a laudable veneration for the religion of their ancestors, and the prejudices of education are hardly to be overcome; why then should a person who peaceably follows the orthodox allowed or tolerated way of his forefathers, be over-persuaded to relinquish it, considering that by an interceding wavering, the man may be overset and sink into infidelity? They seem to value themselves more upon this, than upon the conversion of a heathen to our civil national interest, and to christianity, or the reformation of a Roman catholick, as is much wanted in Maryland; or preserving the British extract from running into infidelity, as in North-Carolina.

2. In their charter it is said, that in several of the colonies and factories beyond the seas, the provision is very mean in some, and in many others none at all for the maintenance of orthodox ministers; therefore the society is established for the management of such charities as shall be received for this use. So it is, their missionaries are not stationed in such poor out towns, but in the most opulent, best civilized and christian towns of the provinces; that is, in all the metropolis towns of the colonies, and other rich and flourishing towns, well able to support, and in fact do support orthodox ministers.

In all our colonies (Rhode Island excepted) there is a parochial provision for an orthodox gospel ministry: Dr. Bray, a very zealous promoter of this society, writes, that in the colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut, there was no need at all of missionaries.

In the latter years of queen Anne's administration, perhaps, the design of this charity was perverted from the original design of converting the heathens, preserving of religion among our out plantations, not able to maintain a gospel ministry, and preventing a popish influence:



it was converted to a design of withdrawing the tolerated sober religious dissenters to a conformity with the (then) high church ; \* a manuduction to popery, and the introduction of a popish pretender to the crown : but as by the happy succession of the present protestant family, all hopes of this kind are vanished ; it is in vain and will answer no end, for any party of men to foment divisions among good christians I have a very great regard for all good ministers of the christian gospel, and have no private or particular resentment against any missionary ; but as an impartial historian, I could not avoid relating matters of fact for the information of persons concerned, who by reason of distance and other business, cannot be otherways informed.

In the charter, the propagation of the church of England is not mentioned ; the expressions are general.† “ An orthodox clergy,—Propagation of the christian religion or gospel in foreign parts.” Therefore the missionaries ought to be men of moderation, that is, of general charity and benevolence, considering also that many dissenters have contributed to this charity, and are worthy members of the society. Fiery zealots || are a detriment to the design of the society.

By

\* Whigs and tories or high-church originally were only diversities of sentiments concerning the hierarchy or government of the church : afterwards by designing men, they were used to influence political affairs ; the popish and jacobitly inclined ranged themselves with the tories or high-church ; the true protestant sober moderate revolutioners, jealous of a French influence, were called whigs

† Because at that time all orthodox protestant ways of worship, were equally tolerated. In their abstract published feb. 1749-50, p. 43, concerning Connecticut, (it is the same in all the charter and proprietary grants of colonies) it is said, “ That by charter there is a general toleration of christians of all denominations, except papists, without an establiment of any one sort.”

|| Zealots of all denominations, as it is observed, if among the common people, are of the meanest knowledge, that is, they are the weakest of men, and the weaker sex or women in general ; if among politicians, they are of the deepest wicked designs. I cannot avoid instancing the administration in the last years of queen Anne's reign,



By gross impositions upon the worthy and laudable society, their charity and christian benevolence is egregiously perverted. I shall mention a few instances. 1. In the large and not well civilized province of North-Carolina, that country being poor and unhealthy, missionaries were not fond of being sent thither, though for many years they had no gospel minister of any denomination amongst them, and did degenerate apace towards heathenism || ; when at the same time the well civilized and christianized colonies of New-England were crouded with missionaries. Lately two missionaries (no

they passed an act for building fifty additional churches in London. In all countries where liberty of conscience is amicably tolerated (that is without an idle cursing and damning, from their pulpits, all tolerated dissenters,) the established church will silently and gradually swallow up all sectaries, the young people or rising generation will chuse to be in the fashionable or established way; their elders, ambitious of posts and honours, will conform; this is a natural conversion to the church established. Many missionaries settled among sober orthodox dissenters, by their immoderate indiscreet zeal for their own way, instead of smoothing by brotherly love, by a diabolical rancour estrange them from the established church: I gave one instance of this, vol. I. p. 228, concerning a missionary advancing the invalidity of all baptisms administered by persons not episcopally ordained. I shall here adduce another instance, from a missionary some years since, occasionally preaching in the king's chapel of Boston, said, that he would rather chuse to err with the church as it was 200 years ago (times of high popery) than &c; in a subsequent sermon by the ingenious and worthy Mr. Harris, king's chaplain, he was chastiz'd.

|| Not many years since, some loose clergymen of the neighbouring province of Virginia, at times, in a frolick, made a tour in North-Carolina, and christened people of all ages at — per head, and made a profitable trip of it, as they expressed.

Mr. Hall, lately appointed missionary for the north district, writes, that anno 1749, he baptized 1282 persons. Mr. Moir of the south district, cannot give an exact account of all the persons he hath baptized in his journies, for want of a person to count them (see abstract for 1749, p. 48,) who have, he thinks, sometimes amounted to more than 100 persons in one day. These two missionaries were with some difficulty obtained by the sollicitation of the present governor of North-Carolina; he wrote, " That they had no ministers or teachers of any denomination, and without some due care be taken, the very footsteps of religion will in a short time be wore out there."

more)



more) have been sent to North-Carolina ; one to itenerate south side of Neuse river, the other north side of that river. 2. One clause in their charter is, “ for the instruction of those who are in danger of being perverted “ by Roman priests and jesuits to their superstition ;” this is in no respect the case in the colonies of New-England, the most crouded with these missionaries. Maryland is our only continent colony, affected with popery, and where the parochial ministers seem not to attend their conversion or reformation ; thus the papists and disloyal are indulged or overlooked, and one would imagine that the principal design has been to pervert the protestant loyal dissenters, considering that the missionaries with the largest salaries are generally stationed in the very loyal, the best civilized and most opulent towns of the colonies, who are well able and in fact do sufficiently support a protestant orthodox gospel ministry. I shall only instance the town of Boston, the place of my residence, the metropolis of all the British American colonies ; in Boston are many congregations of sober good orthodox christians of several denominations, particularly two congregations of the church of England ; their rectors very good men and well endowed by their respective congregations, besides a king’s chaplain, so called, with a salary of 100l. sterl. per ann. from Great-Britain ; a superb costly church equal to many \* cathedrals,

\* Extract from the Boston Independent Advertiser, No. 85.

Last Friday being the 11th day of August 1749, the N. E. corner stone of the king’s chapel in this town, now re-building, was consecrated and laid with great ecclesiastical pomp and solemnity, and at about 11 the procession began from the province house. — First, his ex—l—cy our go — or with the rev. Mr. C—r at his right hand, and the rev. Mr. Br—k—ell at his left hand preceded, then the church wardens, and vestry, followed by about twenty-five couple of the principal friends of the church ; when the procession came to the church-yard, his ex—l—cy, supported by two chaplains, descended the trench where the stone which was dedicated to GOD was laying at the north-east corner. — On this stone the go — or knocked three or four times with a mason’s trowel, (just the number



cathedrals, is now a building by the church of England men : yet, notwithstanding, this most excellent and laudable charity is misapplied \* by stationing in Boston a superfluous missionary at the charge of 70l. sterl. per ann. besides the allowance from his congregation. The bishop of St. David's in his sermon before the

of raps archbishop Laud gave to the door of St. Catharine's creed church at his memorable consecration of it) some devout expressions were then dropt by the chaplain. The go—or then ascended the ladder with the two clergymen ; and this part of the ceremony being ended, his ex—l—cy and the rest of the company in the same manner they walked from the province-house, entered the king's chapel, where was a sermon very properly adapted to such an occasion, delivered by the rev. Mr. C—r from the 2d chapter of Nehemiah and the 20th verse, those words of the verse, “ The God of heaven, he will prosper us, therefore we his servants, will arise and build ”—The words that follow the text are— “ But you have no portion, nor right, nor memorial in Jerusalem.” A hymn of praise concluded the solemnity—The Latin inscription upon the corner stone is as follows.

Quod felix faustumq; fit  
Ecclesiæ et reipublicæ  
Hunc lapidem DEO sacrum,  
Regiæ capellæ  
Apud Bostonium Massachusettensium  
Restauratæ atque auctæ fundamentum  
Posuit, Gulielmus Shirley,  
Provinciæ præfectus,  
August 11mo anno salutis 1749.

Some Zoilus in contrast, has adduced a couplet from our English poet Mr. Pope.

Who builds a church to God, and not to fame,  
Will never mark the marble with his name.

\* Well may the society complain of their funds being insufficient. I do not say, that such misapplications may in part be the occasion, that last year, the benefactions and legacies amounted to no more than 731l. sterl. whereas formerly they amounted from 2000 to 3000l. sterl. per ann. even in years when they had no royal briefs ; if the number of missionaries are lessened, see abstract of 1749, and properly stationed, there will be no reason for complaint ; I heartily wish this good society may go on and prosper, and not be imposed upon by their missionaries ; it is not at present rich enough to bestow sine cures.

society



society in Feb. 1749-50, in a few words expresses the original design of the society, “An opportunity is presented both among the plain and simple Indians, and among the unhappy negro slaves—an utter extinction (meaning in North-Carolina) of christianity was no absurd or groundless apprehension.”†

Connecticut,

† Considering the slow advances which the protestant religion, and a spirit of industry had made among the common people of Ireland, and parochial ministers or clergy not answering; by charter Feb. 6, 1731, a society was incorporated for erecting protestant working schools in several parts of Ireland, the poplsh children to be kept apart from their popish parents, and subsisted in victuals and cloathing: not to be admitted under 6 æt. or above 10 æt. From 1731 to 1748 have been admitted 885 children, whereof 509 have been apprenticed. In pursuance of this charity, 1749, the schools already opened were 30, in building 11; more projected 3. The annual expence of maintaining near 900 children their present compliment, including salaries to masters, mistresses, and other incident charges, is only 4435 l. sterl. which effectually rescues so many of the rising generation from beggary, and popery, our civil as well as religious locust or caterpillar, consequently is an accession to the protestant interest, and of wealth to the nation by their being skilled, and habituated to labour. The annual benefactions towards the reading and working schools of the two incorporated societies of Scotland and Ireland grow very fast; the present members of the Irish society are about 900. The last abstract (for 1749) of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, hints, that they must be obliged to withdraw some of their missionaries, if their charity does not take a better turn; the reason is natural, the good effects of the charity for working schools is conspicuous, that for missionaries is not so; this will more and more dispose people of a charitable spirit, to vent their charities rather upon schools than upon missions. This sort of a society de propaganda fide, has at present upwards of 70 missions (including catechists and school-masters) in North-America, and is of about 50 years growth; if it produce any fruit it will be of the tardif kind, and perhaps not profitable; their accounts sent to the society generally mention only the numbers by them baptized and admitted to the lord's supper; which if administered by any orthodox minister is equally valid in the opinion of the sober and moderate of the church of England; they do not enumerate the Indians by them converted, the Roman catholicks brought over to the protestant religion, methodists or enthusiasts reduced to a sober mind, and the like, as if these were not in the design of their mission; their chief cure or care seems to be a good easy living, and the occasioning of divisions and strife among tolerated dissenters (I use the expression



Connecticut, a small colony, the most prudent and industrious of all our colonies, in which are no waste lands remaining, supplied with orthodox ministers well qualified and well paid; from misrepresentations of neighbouring missionaries, are crowded with the greatest numbers of missionaries in proportion to their extent; and in the society's last abstract are accused of a PERSECUTING SPIRIT, because three or four mean persons were prosecuted according to law, for not paying their township rates, in which might have been included their proportion towards the supporting of a gospel ministry as endowed by a legal town-meeting. So far is New-England at present from a persecuting spirit, that in the provinces of Massachusetts and Connecticut, upon a representation home of this nature, there were acts of assembly made, "That all such professed members of the church of England, shall be entirely excused from paying any taxes towards the settlements of any

tolerated dissenters) because by act of UNION the church of England is beyond dispute the established way; in the published opinion of this society, there is NO EXCLUSIVE PREFERENCE (as in mercantile affairs, there are exclusive and not exclusive charters) and the withdrawing of wild youth, from the orthodox tolerated way of their fore-fathers, to a more fashionable and less rigorous way, occasions divisions and disaffections in families. Upon the decease of a congregationalist incumbent, in a new choice, some in their nature and humours do not concur, and in resentment, perhaps by the advice of a missionary, go over to the church of England.

I shall here by way of amusement, intimate, that if this society were to relinquish their present charter, and be favoured with a new charter, for propagating of christian knowledge, working schools, and other articles of industry: to each school there may be a missionary catechist, in church of England orders, of moderation, and qualified in their working as well as devotional business; one or two acres for the site of the school, lodgings, and other conveniencies; and some adjacent small farm hired at an easy and long lease, for the improvement of the boys in husbandry, and for the profit of the school: the children to be instructed in the principles of the christian reformed religion, reading, writing, arithmetick, husbandry, and manufactures or handicrafts. In Ireland, in some schools the master has the profit of the land or farm cultivated by the boys, in lieu of his salary, and 40s. per ann. for the support of each child.

" minister



“minister or building any meeting-house,” that the taxes of persons attending the church of England, be paid to their church of England minister. By acts 1728 and 1729, anabaptists and quakers are exempted from paying to the parish or township ministry. I never heard of any persecuting spirit in Connecticut, in this they are egregiously aspersed; it is true, that a few years since they made some acts against some frantick preachers and exhorters, called methodists, intruding (without consent) into the pulpits of established ministers. In Boston of Massachusetts, May 25, 1743, at an annual voluntary friendly convention of the congregational ministers of the province, they entered and afterwards printed their testimony against the methodists, 1. For their errors in doctrine, antinomian and familistical. 2. Following impulses of a distempered imagination, rather than the written word of our bible. 3. Allowing persons of no learning or discretion to pray and teach in publick. 4. Intruding into the pulpits of settled ministers, endeavouring to withdraw the affections of people from their good and orderly ministers. 5. Ordaining ministers at large without any parochial charge. 6. Endeavouring to excite in their weak hearers, ungoverned passions, extacies, and unseemly behaviour, acting like Bacchantes. 7. By calling poor people (whose time is their only estate) unseasonably from their business and labour, to a habit of idleness and vagrancy. I cannot say, that the missionaries were very strenuous against these irregularities, with much impropriety called METHODISM, because they might find some interest in separations amongst the dissenting orthodox people, divide et impera: I find in several accounts of some missionaries sent home from time to time to the society, (perhaps that they may have some pretext of doing business) complaints of infidelity and methodism prevailing in their districts, at the same time here upon the spot, we are not much sensible of their reclaiming the one, or their opposing the other by word or writing.



I must again observe, that there was not any pretext for sending missionaries into the province of Massachusetts-Bay of New-England: they had a well regulated and well provided for orthodox clergy, as appears by the laws or acts of assembly anno 1692, the first year of the present new charter. The quarter sessions are to take care, that no town be destitute of a minister, that there be a suitable provision for a minister, and that any person to be ordained, shall be recommended by three or more ordained ministers. The missionaries from the society de propaganda fide of Rome, are instructed to endeavour to convert the infidel and heretical parts of the world; our missionaries cannot with any propriety or face, esteem the orthodox tolerated clergy of New-England, as hereticks; because in the published opinion of the society, in our plantations all orthodox clergy are upon the same footing, that is, no preference as to the exercise or practical part of their devotions; see the society's abstract in February 1749-50. To juggle people from one mode of christianity to another may produce free thinking and libertinism, where there are no essential differences in doctrine, but only in the variable vestiments and modes of worship.

Some of the missionaries in their accounts sent home, value themselves upon the bringing over some people to the observance of the festivals of the church of England: these licenced idle frolicking days are a nuisance, in settling of new plantations, which require six labouring days (in the express injunction of our fourth commandment) in the week. The last account of the charter protestant working schools in Ireland, well observes, "That the progress of these schools, in its natural course, must gradually abolish the great number of popish holy days, by means of which some hundred thousand working hands are kept idle, the labour and profit of them lost to the publick — p. 41. This damage is an astonishing drawback from the wealth and strength of the nation."



I shall conclude this missionary article with a few observations. It is a lamentable affair, that scarce any of our publick charity charters are so contrived as to prevent misapplications.

I. The scheme proposed, vol. II. p. 134. was the converting of the present idle missions into county working schools, with a church of England missionary catechist of moderation, qualified in the working as well as devotional articles: thus the charge of our present 70 missionaries will maintain and \* educate about one thousand working children; if the present missions are continued, may the missionaries be under the inspection and direction of a committee of such members of the society as reside in America, or under a missionary general, or under the superintendency of the suffragan bishop, when such is appointed for British North-America; that the missions may be ambulatory, that is, † removable to places where they are most wanted.

## II. If

\* The project of initiating white and Indian children into this mode of the church of England by church of England working schools, quo semel est imbuta recens, would be more effectual than the present missionary method; the bringing over of adults is more difficult, and when brought over they soon die, and their influence is lost; in the incorporated charitable societies of Scotland and Ireland, they only regard the rising generation, where without any strained allegory it may be called the sowing of the seeds of christianity, loyalty, and industry. The former too large charity endowments to idle clergy missions, to colleges, and to charity schools, require to be qualified and reformed; that of working schools has lately been attended with great success and benefit to the countries; that is, reading and writing being acquired, the boys are sent to sea, to husbandry, and other laborious trades; the girls to spinning and other services with some peculiar restrictions. Sir Richard Cox in a late piece concerning the linen manufacture, writes, "Numerous  
" holy-days are the bane of all industry, and the ruin of every coun-  
" try where they are permitted: and indeed there are too many al-  
" lowed by law."

† This method has had a good effect in Scotland. In Scotland the pope has two vicars apostolical, one for the lowlands, and the other  
in



II. If the present incumbent missionaries are indulged with their livings or salaries for their own natural life; upon their decease the respective missions may cease (as a mission is no inheritance, it is no hardship upon their families) and be cantoned along our inland frontiers to keep morality and christianity among the poor new settlers, and to convert the neighbouring Indians to civility and some of our orthodox professions of religion. \*

III. As this is formed with the design of a very extensive charity, the supporting of learned and orthodox ministers or teachers, without being confined to the mode of the church of England; why may not this charity be extended to ministers of any orthodox persuasion, who will declare themselves willing to serve a mission among the Indians, as also to the orthodox ministers of the poor out towns? At present, it is confined towards promoting of uniformity to the discipline and worship of the church of England; not among the heathen who never heard of christianity, nor in poor out townships, but among the sober-minded, christian only educated, and loyally tolerated protestant dissenters, in the most opulent and best civilized townships. A strict exclusive uniformity (a few lutherans excepted) is practised only in popish sovereignties.

IV. Though the members at present are about 230, any seven members with the president or a vice-presi-

in the highlands, with many inferior missionaries; anno 1740, these popish missionaries were twenty-five; anno 1747, they dwindled away to eleven; the presbyterian Scots itinerant missionaries are well subsisted by many large benefactions and subscriptions; the king allows 1000 l. sterl. per ann.

\* Our young missionaries may procure a perpetual alliance and commercial advantages with the Indians, which the Roman catholic clergy cannot do, because they are forbid to marry, I mean, our missionaries may intermarry with the daughters of the sachems, and other considerable Indians, and their progeny will for ever be a certain cement between us and the Indians.



dent may do business ; thus four or five zealots, such as the high-church, or friends to a soliciting person, may at pleasure pervert this charity ; this perhaps has been the case for some years, in appointing so many idle missions, and many who instead of promoting charity (the nexus of human society) that is, love among neighbours ; as bigots or religionists, they act the reverse.

V. The missionaries in their accounts sent to the society, ought to keep strictly to the truth, and not impose upon the world ; I shall mention two or three instances. 1. The story of the regular discipline of catechumens white and black in New-York, is not known here, though in the neighbourhood. 2. A christian congregation of more than 500 Mohawk Indians ; the whole tribe does not exceed 160 men living in a dispersed || manner. 3. A spirit of persecution now in the colony of Connecticut ; whereas there are sundry laws \* of many years standing in that colony, exempting church of England, anabaptists and quakers from contributing towards building of township meeting-houses, and from the support of township congregational ministers.

VI. As the society complain of the insufficiency of their funds certain and casual, to keep up the salaries of their too much multiplied missionaries ; they are become more circumspect and frugal, and instead of a full living or mission, considering that they confine their mission to one parish, they only make a small addition of 20 to 30l. sterl. in the S. W. parts of Connecticut colony ; the missions in South-Carolina are reduced from 50l. to 30l. sterl. per ann. and perhaps in all large salary missions, without any injury done to the incumbent, a deduction may be made equal to the allowance from the

|| This resembles the legendary story of St. Francis, at one time converting some thousands of people in a desert.

\* See the last edition of Connecticut law-book, p. 169, 170, 171.

congregation :



congregation: this will be a considerable saving, and as the parishes or townships grow, their allowance will efface the missionary allowance; this will be a total saving, and naturally answers that of the design of the charity to assist these places that are not able to subsist a gospel ministry. †

I am now got into a maze or labyrinth; to class the various sectaries in religious affairs, is an intricate labour: the New-England synod, anno 1637, condemned 82 errors. I must in general observe, that, 1. As to the fearing or rather loving of God, the best evidence is the working of righteousness. 2. What is generally called conscience, is private opinion. 3. They who have no remorse of conscience, who do not believe in future rewards and punishments, and who do not provide for their households or posterity, are infidels, or worse than infidels. 4. They who assert that the church is independent of the civil power, and justification by faith without good works; such belief is worse than no religion, being inconsistent with political society.

In concluding this article of missionaries, I must observe, that if what I have wrote is disagreeable to some, it is not from any personal resentment; several of the missionaries are my friendly acquaintances; but *amicus — amicus — sed magis amica veritas*. The original design of this society, was most humane and pious; more than 120,000 bibles, common prayers, and other books of devotion, with an incredible quantity of pious small tracts, have been dispersed in foreign parts. They are by charter allowed to purchase real estate to the value of 2000 l. sterl. per ann. and other estate to any value: to meet once a month to transact business, or oftener if need be; but no act to be valid, unless the majority

† Can Boston, v. g. be said, not able to support a gospel ministry? the interest of the money, which by estimation the church of England now a building may cost, is sufficient to maintain half a dozen church of England rectors at a comfortable allowance.



of seven members (a quorum) with the president or a vice-president concur. There is a circumstance, which has not always been attended to by the society; appointing of missionaries, faulted as to morality, benevolence, and moderation, called high-flyers, younger sisters of popery.

I shall class the religion opinions which have appeared in our colonies under three general heads, the meerly speculative, the antiquated obsolete or out-of-fashion opinions, and the professions or sectaries which at present subsist and are likely to continue.

1. Speculative private opinions are of no consequence in a state, until the opinionists form themselves into separate large society meetings; I shall enumerate a few. The ANTINOMIANS \* assert that the laws of Moses are vacated,

\* See vol. I. p. 444.

This error was become obsolete, and remained only with a very few ignorant or vicious people until lately broached here by the vagrant Mr. W——— Id, an insignificant person, of no general learning, void of common prudence; his journals are a rapsody of scripture texts, and of his own cant expressions; in his epistle to the inhabitants of Maryland he writes, “considering what usage your slaves commonly meet with, I wondered they did not put an end to their own lives or yours, rather than bear such usage;” thus in a most execrable manner he might have promoted *felo de se* among the slaves, and insurrections against their masters; the two great inconveniencies which our plantations are exposed to. I never could account (perhaps it was only frantick, and not to be accounted) for his repeated vagrancies, or strolling over England, Scotland, Ireland, and our American colonies: he was no popish missionary, because being young, he never had the opportunities of being abroad in popish seminaries or conventuals: he was no itinerant missionary (for some short time he had a mission for Georgia) of our society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts; because when he effectually acted one part towards an uniformity to the church of England, by occasioning separations and animosities among the orthodox dissenters, at the same time he found much fault with the present constitution of the church of England: he was no ministerial or court tool, as was the famous Sacheverel in the jacobite part of queen Anne’s reign, because the government at present have no occasion for such: he did not travel as a naturalist or as an historian for observation, by the perquisites of preaching



vacated, as being only temporary and local, that is, national or municipal, therefore not obligatory with christian nations; that good works do not forward, nor bad works hinder salvation.

In general, people ought to entertain a laudable religious charity towards one another, seeing they worship the same God, though in different modes: particularly, to make vestiments and other fanciful ecclesiastical decorations a matter of controversy, is very absurd; † such indifferent trivial circumstances may be adapted to the taste of the vulgar; the Greek and Armenian churches in the Levant preserve the mode of their religion by pageantries. The Jews had a superb magnificent temple, a numerous train of gaudy officers, very expensive sacrifices. Simplicity and frugality in all affairs of life is at present thought to be most natural, and is generally practised, even in religion these things have suffered successive reformatations; the church of England is less expensive than that of Rome, the three licenced dissenting worships in England are less expensive than the ‡ church

preaching to defray his charges; because he had no genius nor application for such studies. Here we may observe, what trivial things may be great incentives to devotion, such as vociferation (the strength of his arguments lay in his lungs,) a vehement frequent use of cant devotional words, a dramatick genius peculiarly adapted to act the enthusiast, proper vestiments or dress and action; in dissenting congregations he affected the church of England dress, and Paul Rubens' preaching posture in the cartoons of Hampton-Court. He and his disciples seemed to be great promoters of impulses, extacies, and wantonness between the sexes. Hypocritical professions, vociferations, and itinerancies, are devotional quackery.

† La Voltaire in his letters, writes, that the disputes among the capucins, concerning the mode of the sleeves and cowl, were more than any among the philosophers.

‡ It would be of great benefit to our out settlers if they could fall into some such method, seeing the society for propagating, &c. take no care of them; they are not able to build publick places of worship, and support a gospel ministry, and when they endeavour it, the expence retards their settlements; a great detriment to the colonies in general.



of England, and the quakers have reduced religion to no expence.

The FAMILISTS, || family or house of love, was of the anabaptist tribe in Germany, and suspected to be more addicted to carnal than to spiritual love ; they held all pleasures and dalliances among themselves lawful ; they were much transported with impulses and other frantick notions ; they persuaded themselves that they were the only elect of God, and that all others were reprobates, and that they might deceive any person who was not of their community, magistrates not excepted, even with an oath. They agreed with the antinomians in many articles.

The MUGLATONIANS \* are extinct.

The GORTONIANS of Warwick in the colony of Rhode-Island, were of so short duration, they are not to be mentioned ; see the section of Rhode-Island.

The rigid BROWNISTS † are relaxed into independents and congregationalists.

The INDEPENDENTS in all our colonies, have suffered some reformation, and are at present called congregationalists.

PURITANS were for reforming the reformed religions to greater absolute purity ; that appellation is now obsolete.

SEEKERS waited for new apostles to restore christianity ; these have quite disappeared.

|| The father of this family, was Henry Nicols, born at Munster in Westphalia, and had resided some time in Holland ; he first appeared about 1540, and pretended to be greater than Moses or CHRIST ; as Moses had taught mankind to hope, Christ to believe, he taught love, which is the greatest ; and that he himself was not like John the baptist, a fore-runner of Christ, but Christ was rather a type of him, and that the kingdom of Israel was to be established in the time of his ministry ; what he wrote was mean and incoherent, full of vain boasting and profane applications of the prophecies relating to Christ, to his own person.

\* See Summary, vol. I. p. 447.

† See vol. I. p. 443.



REMONSTRANTS and CONTRA-REMONSTRANTS, \* or predestinarians and free-will men. The remonstrants are also called arminians. † It is not a doctrine of any national church or embodied communion; there are some persons of this private opinion, among all the sectaries. Their distinguishing tenets, are, universal redemption, an indemnity or act of grace to all mankind, who by a good life accept thereof, being endued with a free will to act at liberty what is good or evil.

Concerning the sectaries in our colonies which now subsist, and are likely to continue.

I do not mean a church history of North-America; bishop Burnet well observes, that ecclesiastical histories, are only histories of the vices of the bishops and other clergy.

Most sectaries in religion have been occasioned by vulgar people not capable of giving allowances for the allegories, fables, and idioms of expression used in the Levant, from whence we had our scriptural books; but taking them into a literal and vernacular sense, whereas the prophets generally used lofty figurative expressions.

In our North-America colonies there are none properly to be called separatists, Roman catholicks excepted (in Maryland, and by the proprietary charter of Pennsylvania, Roman catholicks are not excepted) but by the act of union (territories thereto belonging) the church of England is the established church, though only nominal, in all our colonies and plantations. The denomination

\* See vol. I. p. 227.

† So called from Arminius their leader, he was some time professor of divinity at Leyden in Holland: they were also called remonstrants, from their remonstrating, 1618, against some articles of the synod of Dort concerning predestination, election, reprobation, and the like; thus the adherents to the princes of Germany, who protested against some proceedings at the diet of Spire in Germany 1529, were called protestants.



of whigs and tories † (Deo gratias) is lost: there is no general church government, ‖ by the articles of union, that of the church of England is established in perpetuity; but hitherto in favour to the good conscientious dissenters of many denominations, the colonies are not quarter'd upon by the regular ecclesiastick troops under the direction of their proper officers, archbishops, bishops, deans, archdeacons, prebends, canons, and other subaltern officers: the church of England exercise no jurisdiction (the office of the bishop's commissaries is only nominal) no more than the county associations of ministers in Connecticut, or the voluntier presbyters (in imitation of the classical kirk jurisdictions of Scotland) in several of our colonies.

I shall not here delineate or describe the papistical church of Rome, the episcopal church of England, and the presbyterian kirk of Scotland; they are generally well known.

The papists are of no note or notice \* excepting in

† Tory, originally was a name given to the wild Irish popish robbers, and who favoured the massacre of the protestants in Ireland 1641, and afterwards applied to all enormous high-fliers of the church. Whig was a ludicrous name, first given to the country field devotion meetings, whose ordinary drink was the WHIG or whey of coagulated sour milk, and afterwards applied to those who were against the court interest in the reigns of Charles II. and James II. and for the court in the reigns of king William and king George.

‖ Church governments may be various, and all equally allowable by prescription; as in the civil governments of various nations there are monarchy, aristocracy, democracy, and compositions of these, which in general alliances, treaties of peace, and other transactions among sovereignties, are equally admitted.

\* Not many years since, in Boston were some popish emissaries; but finding only some poor wild Irish carters and porters of the persuasion, they soon relinquished their mission and disappeared.

As the grants of Maryland and Pennsylvania do actually tolerate the publick exercise of the Roman catholick religion; and as that religion is pernicious to human society in general, and tends to subvert our present happy constitution; why may it not be suppressed as to publick worship, by an act of the British parliament, without giving any umbrage to the other good grants and charters at home, and in the plantations?



Pensylvania and Maryland; in Pensylvania by their new charter 1701 from their proprietary and governor William Penn, the clause of liberty of conscience does not exclude Roman catholicks, “No person who shall acknowledge  
“one almighty God, and live quietly under the civil go-  
“vernment, shall be in any ways molested.” In Philadelphia there is a publick popish chapel, frequented by a poor low set of Irish; their priests are always England or Maryland born, jesuits, and generally of good conduct and behaviour; an Irish jesuit is never sent. In Maryland are many Roman catholicks, their original proprietary was popish; at present there may be ten or a dozen publick popish chapels; father Molineux of Port Tobacco is their director or vicar.

LUTHERANS † are to be found only in the provinces of New-York and Pensylvania. The lutherans differ from the Roman catholicks principally, 1. Communion in both kinds, bread and wine. 2. Divine worship in the vulgar tongue. 3. Indulging priests or ministers with matrimonial pleasures; some profane persons might ludicrously have observed, that his reformation was owing to his indulgence of wine and women to the fraternity of clergy, as king Henry VIII. reformation in England was owing to some petticoat affair; here we may observe, that from very trivial matters, very great and good revolutions have proceeded. In the city of New-York there is one lutheran church, and in the rest of the province of New-York several dispersed lutherans by the importation of foreigners from Germany in queen Anne’s reign. In Pensylvania the lutherans have a church in Philadelphia, and several in the country. There is one Swedish lutheran church near Philadelphia, one or two more in the country near Newcastle; they are supplied

† Luther born 1483, at Mansfield in Germany, became an Augustin monk or fryar, preached against indulgences, &c. was excommunicated by the pope; he with Melancton published first the new testament, and afterward 1534 the whole bible in the vulgar tongue; he married 1524, and died 1548; the duke of Saxony was his patron.



once in seven years from Sweden, and generally with good men.

PRESBYTERIANS, church of England, and congregationalists are the same in all essential articles of christian doctrine, and their laity are all of the same faith; the proper distinctions are only with regard to their distinct clergy in forms of church government, discipline, modes of publick worship, and vestiments. The presbyterians in our colonies are of two sorts, 1. Those who follow the manner of the church of Scotland as established in Scotland by act of union: all dissenters from the church of England, (anabaptists, quakers, and moravians excepted) south of New-England, are called presbyterians, the congregationalists not excepted; thus the dissenting congregation in the city of New-York, though under a congregational minister from Boston, is called presbyterian. The Scots presbyterians are modelled according to a directory first agreed upon by an assembly of divines at Westminster in the time of the civil war, and appointed by the general assembly of the kirk of Scotland 1647; they use no liturgy. 2. These are properly called calvinists, \* and follow the confession of Heidelberg (in the palatinate of Germany) such are the church of Geneva, several churches in Germany, such are the church of Holland, and the hugonots of France; they use not only a liturgy or common prayer, but also an established form of psalmody. A calvinist French church subsisted many years in Boston, and is lately dropt, there being no French new comers, and the children of the late generations understand English better than French. There

\* Calvin was born in Picardy in France 1509, a man of general learning; he began his reformation at Geneva; died 1564, æt. 56; he was a voluminous writer; his institutions is a master-piece of elegant Roman Latin.

It is a common mistake, that by calvinists are understood predestinarians; before Calvin's time there were many predestinarians, the Mahometan predestinarians are not calvinists: some predestinarians as well as free-will men now called arminians, being private opinions, are to be found among all sectaries.



are several calvinist churches in the provinces of New-York and Pensylvania.

CONGREGATIONALISTS is the religion mode of New-England, (some church of England, anabaptists, and quakers excepted) the presbyterians are only speculative, because by act of union they can have no ecclesiastick classical jurisdiction in the colonies, and therefore are only congregational, but less rigid and narrow in admission of church members, and in discipline. The New-England congregationalists may be called independents † reformed, as not exactly the same with the independents one of the three licensed dissenting professions in England, but formed according to a platform (so they call it) of their own scheming; this platform was by a resolve of the general assembly recommended to the churches, but never enacted.

At present, anno 1750, the general method of the New-England congregationalists † is, when a gospel minister is wanted, the devout elderly men of the precinct invite sundry preachers to officiate, these are called candidates; in the next step, the church members or communicants (all males even the poorest, upon the publick charity, and negroes) at an appointed meeting, by a majority, vote for one of these candidates, and give him a formal call; the following step, is a general meeting of the men of the congregation, who pay ministerial rates, and are qualified as town voters, to approve or disapprove of the above choice; if any difficulty happens, a council of delegates from the neighbouring churches is called for advice, but their opinion is only of advice, but not absolutely obligatory; this council when they attend the ordination, are called the

† The name of independent is quite extinct in our American colonies.

† In the second session of a synod appointed by the civil legislature at Boston in May 1680, a platform and confession of faith was agreed upon, much the same with that of the independents in England, October 1658, called the Savoy confession of faith.

See vol. I. p. 438, &c. and other occasional hints.



ordination council. Upon any occasional difference in a church, a like council of advice is called, but not obligatory, and issues in a vote of the church communicants or general congregation.

The congregationalists of Connecticut are regulated by a platform or confession of their own (scarce differing from that of Massachusetts-Bay) presented to their general assembly by the ministers and other delegates Sept. 9, 1707; the general assembly or legislature ordained, that all churches || conforming thereto shall be deemed established by law; but no society or church, who soberly dissent from said united churches, shall be hindered from their worship according to their consciences.

There are several congregational churches who vary in some trifles; instance the rev. Mr. Colman, afterwards D. D. from one of the universities of Scotland, though frequently in mixed conversation he declared his dissent from the presbyterian church government, anno 1699, perhaps in humour and singularity, set up as a separatist from the generally received congregational mode, and perhaps with a design to allure some inclined to the manner of the church of England, to contribute towards his church; his separation was only in trifles, viz. using the Lord's prayer, reading of lessons in the bible, the hat-band and rose of the church of England clergy, a freer admission to the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper; his successor the rev. Samuel Cooper is a good man.

1722, there was a considerable falling off or secessus from the congregational mode by Mr. Cutler, president of Yale college in Connecticut, and some of his former pupils; in consequence of their scheme, they went to

|| In many respects I admire the prudence and œconomy of this government, but here I cannot avoid observing a seeming inadvertency, and afterwards not rectified, because by act of union May 1, 1707, the church of England exclusively was the only church established by law in all our plantations; this act perhaps was the occasion of Mr. Hobart's calling the church of England separatists.



England, obtained episcopal ordination, and the benefit of missionaries; their godliness was great gain.

ANABAPTISTS. See vol. I. p. 445. Their essential and distinguishing doctrine is with relation to baptism; they baptize adults only, and that by immersion or dipping. This formerly was a very wild sectary, and therefore run into many subdivisions scarce to be enumerated: I am well informed, that at present in Pennsylvania there are 16 or 17 different sorts of anabaptists English and German. I shall instance some of their subdivisions. 1. English, \* a sober and generally good people; German anabaptists, a turbulent people: the German anabaptists have no meetings or publick places of worship in Philadelphia, but many in the country, and generally refuse the qualification oath; one of their branchings are called menists, they have no meeting in Philadelphia, but are a numerous and wealthy people in the country, and follow farming; their distinction is wearing long beards, and refusing government oaths. The dumplers are a small body of Germans, about 50 miles from Philadelphia, men and women professing continency, live in separate apartments. The men wear a monkish habit, without breeches like capuchins, but lighter cloth; as to oaths they are the same with the quakers and moravians; though an illiterate people, they have a very decent chapel, and as craftsmen, they are very ingenious; upon a fine stream they have a grist mill, a saw-mill, a paper mill, an oil mill, and a mill for pearl barley, all under one roof, which brings them in considerable profit. There is one English anabaptist meeting in Philadelphia, and some in the country. 2. First day baptists, their weekly holy day is the Sunday, as in use with all other christians; seventh day baptists, on the seventh day or jewish sabbath they meet for

\* Not long since the vagrant Mr. W——d occasioned a separation in the Boston anabaptist church; the separatists are under the cure or care of a leather breeches maker; they are antimoralists, and therefore pernicious in society.



publick worship, and abstain from common labour, but labour, &c. on the Sunday or first day of the week; of those there is a congregation in Newport and in Westerly of Rhode-Island colony, and several in the country of Pensylvania. 3. The first day baptists are subdivided into those who use singing † in their publick worship as the generality of christians do; and baptists who do not admit of singing in publick worship; they alledge that there must be a great deal of hypocrisy in promiscuous singing, as it cannot be imagined that every one of the congregation is in the humour of singing at the same time.

QUAKERS, see vol. I. p. 447. As they are not under the confinement of creeds, confessions of faith, platforms, canons, articles, formulas, and the like, they cannot possibly break loose into sectary \* subdivisions; their principal doctrines are to be investigated from their practice, (it is to be wished that it were so in all professions of religion) their industry, frugality, mutual benevolence or friendship. † The external part of a quaker's

† The quakers, and not singing baptists, are deservedly faulted, because singing of psalms incites and heightens devotion.

\* Anno 1642 or 1644, in time of the civil wars in England, George Fox of Leicestershire, æt 25, set up for a religionary exhorter or teacher; he exclaimed against the established clergy, some of Cromwell's soldiers became his profelytes and would not fight, in course the prisons were crouded. In K. Charles II. administration they were frequently presented for refusing to pay tythes, and for not taking government oaths. Robert Barclay of Scotland wrote an Apology for the quakers 1675, and dedicated it to the king, which abated that persecution. William Penn, son of vice-admiral Penn, became a quaker, æt. 22, and with Fox went upon a mission into foreign countries, but from Holland they soon returned home; this Penn was proprietary and governor of Pensylvania; he wrote two folio volumes in favour of the quakers.

Benjamin Holmes lately wrote in favour of quakerism; his book was first published in Amsterdam 1723.

† I know of no differences among them, only some are more demure, some less demure or precise in the antiquated habit and mode of speech, that is, more jovial and debonnaire.



quaker's religion consists only in trivial matters, the antiquated modes of speech, thee, thou, thy, &c; and an antiquated dress of a plain coat without plaits, or buttons on the pockets and sleeves, beaver like hats with horizontal brims as is generally wore by the church of England clergy: the pusillanimous doctrine of not defending themselves by force against an invading enemy is very absurd: PRO PATRIA is not only a law of nations, but of nature. They say that a regular clergy with benefices are hirelings, and, like mercenary troops, do duty only for sake of their pay, and not to be so much depended upon as the militia or voluntary conscientious exhorters.

Quakers hold all swearing and paying tythes unlawful; they do not find fault with the various forms of civil government, but give obedience to any established government; all who have the gift of the light within them, men or women, are sufficiently ordained to preach the gospel without any commission from a church, or assistance from human learning; all praying and preaching premeditated or extempore without the spirit, are superstitious will-worship and idolatry; they use neither baptism nor the Lord's supper.

Unjustly they are said not to regard the scriptures, whereas in their exhortations, writings, and defences of their orthodoxy, no sect use scripture phrases and quotations † more than they do. Their affirmation instead of

Not only in the neighbourhood, but by annual or periodical itinerancies of their speakers or exhorters, and also of their most noted men.

† I shall here give a few instances of their establishing some of their tenets by scripture. 1. They seem to be generally arminian, James ii. 20. "But wilt thou know O vain man! that faith without works is dead." Acts x. 34. "God is no respecter of persons, he that fears God and works righteousness is accepted of him." 1 John ii. 2. "And he is the propitiation for our sins, and not for us only, but for the sins of the whole world." They cannot believe that God has fore-ordained a certain part of mankind to perish, and a certain part to be saved; because



of an oath, is not to be faulted, because it is equally binding, and falsifying is subjected to the same penalty as perjury; government oaths are become so common, they have almost lost their solemnity. They use the same subterfuge with our more illiterate teachers and exhorters, 1 Corinth. i. 26. &c. "Not many wise after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called; but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise," &c. Their silent waiting upon the Lord in their publick places of devotion, is faulted by many, but they say, at that time, they have a divine teacher in their own heart. They believe a resurrection of the just and unjust, and that God will give a reward to every man according to his works, whether they be good or evil; but as to the nature and manner of the resurrection they are silent, they only say, that it is not safe

because in such a belief there is no need to take care of salvation or good morals; this is execrably pernicious, and voids all doctrines, religious or moral. 2. All mankind have an innate divine light, which if attended to, directs them into a good and holy life, and averts them from sin and passions; "this is the light, (John i. 9.) which lighteth every man that cometh into the world." 3. Water baptism is not essential to christianity, it must be of the spirit, Acts xi. 16. "John indeed baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy ghost;" as Christ was born under the law, he fulfilled the law, and was circumcised: "in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision nor uncircumcision availeth any thing, but a new creature:" as they have charity for those who use water baptism conscientiously, and who use bread and wine, so they ought to have charity for us if we disuse them, because we believe they are ceased in point of obligation. 4. In answer to 1 Tim. ii. 12. "But suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence;" they adduce the apostle Paul, Rom. xvi. who advises to help these women which laboured with him in the gospel: in our bible we are told of many women that did prophesy, Acts ii. 18. "And on my servants, and on my handmaidens, I will pour out in these days of my spirit, and they shall prophesy." 5. As to their not bearing of arms, Mat. v. 44. "Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you." 6. Their refusing of government oaths, James v. 12. "But above all things my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath, but let your yea be yea, and your nay nay, lest you fall into condemnation,"

to



to be too inquisitive, how the dead shall be raised, and with what bodies. 1 Corinth. xv. 44. "There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body;" the apostle Paul saith, "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, neither doth corruption inherit incorruption."

MORAVIANS. Some have transported themselves to Pennsylvania. In a late act of the British parliament, 1749, in favour of their affirmation instead of an oath, they are called an ancient protestant episcopal church; they call themselves unitas fratrum or united brethren, as the quakers with very good propriety call themselves friends.

The moravians publish no creed or confession of faith, and can be characterised only from their manners and preaching in a whining canting enthusiastical strain; in church government they are episcopal, but refuse taking of oaths as do the menenists in Holland, and the English quakers; they refuse carrying of arms, but willingly contribute towards the pecuniary charge of a war, which quakers refuse; they use instrumental musick in their worship; in Philadelphia they have a chapel with a small organ, and in the country at Bethlehem their grand settlement about 50 or 60 miles from Philadelphia, at their solemn festivals, besides the organ they use violins, hautbois, and French horns; they possess 7000 or 8000 acres of land, and make considerable settlements; they are very zealous towards converting the Indians, some indians have joined their society and live with them; they send missionaries abroad almost every where, even to Greenland, or Davis's straits; beginning of June, 1749, there arrived in Philadelphia three natives of Greenland, two young men and a young woman converted in their own country by moravian missionaries; they came in a ship belonging to the society which had carried thither two years since a ready framed church†

† These high latitudes produce no timber or other wood.



to be erected there; these Greenlanders † in this ship had visited the brethren in several parts of Europe, in England, Holland, and Germany, and returned from Philadelphia in the same ship to Greenland. The moravians have a mission at Barbice in Surinam, and two Indian converts from thence, with the Greenland converts, and some converts of the Delaware Indians, met at Bethlehem.

1. The moravians \* have among them in Pensylvania some men of letters; Mr. Spenenbergh was a professor of some science in Germany at Hall; but they chiefly consist of handicrafts, by which they carry on their improvements cheap. They encourage marriage amongst their young people; but to marry by casting of lots to preserve an equality among themselves, which they affect very much, is not natural. By late act of parliament they are indulged with an affirmation instead of an oath in these words, "I A. B. do declare in the presence of Almighty God, the witness of the truth I say;" but if convicted of wilful and false affirming, shall incur the same pains and penalties as are enacted by law against wilful and corrupt perjury; but shall not by their affirmation be qualified to give evidence in criminal cases (quakers affirmation is good both in criminal and civil cases) and **not** to serve in juries.

After the general description of our plantation sectaries, these in each colony should have been enumerated; but by anticipation they are generally to be found, 1. Those of the four colonies of New-England are at full

† Here we may transiently observe, that at this casual congress of Indians from lat. 5, lat. 40, and lat. 65, their hair, eyes and complexions were the same; only the further north the complexions were a small matter paler: but their languages were entirely distinct. The Greenland or Davis's Straits converts were clad in seal skins, hair on, but in general were a nasty sort of christians.

\* So called from Moravia, a country adjacent to Bohemia; they seem to be a sprout from the old stock of the Hussites; the Hussites, disciples of Hufs and Jerome of Bohemia, followed the tenets of the Waldenses who appeared about 1310, and of Wickliffe an English Lollard middle of 14th century.

length.



length. 2. In the province of New-York, besides the church of England, there are the mode of the kirk of Scotland, Dutch calvinists, and some lutherans of the confession of Augsburgh in Suabia of Germany. 3. In the Jerseys there are the church of England missions, the Scots presbyterians and quakers rule the roast. 4. Besides the church of England missionaries in the country of Pensylvania, there is one English church in Philadelphia, a very large congregation. In Philadelphia (and many in the country) there are two presbyterian meetings, one called new light of Whitefield's institution, the other according to the Scots presbyterian mode; and besides at a great distance in the country there is a congregation of cameronians or covenanters, who renew the solemn league often, and deny all submission to magistrates from the sovereign to the constable, because at the revolution the king by law assumed to be head of the church, and contrary to their covenant, in England established prelacy instead of presbytery. The quakers have two large meetings in Philadelphia, and a meeting almost in every township of the three first settled counties; in the other three counties they do not prevail; but every where preserve power by their two irresistible maxims of riches and unity; they have the secret of keeping their young people up to these, and let them think and talk otherwise as they please. 5. In Maryland there are several parishes according to the way of the church of England, and the most beneficial of any in our plantations, because as the number of taxables or congregation increases, being taxed at so much tobacco per head, the value of their livings grows: whereas in Virginia the parsons are fixed at a certain salary of 16,000 wt. of tobacco per ann. without any regard to the increase of the congregation: in Maryland are ten or a dozen publick Roman catholick chapels, many presbyterians, and some quakers. 6. In Virginia there are no dissenters from the church of England, a few quakers excepted, their clergy are not noted for their piety  
and



and morality or exemplary life, and require missionary reformers more than the congregationalists of New England; it is said that many of them are a scandal to the profession of the church of England. 7. In North-Carolina scarce any religion; there are two missionaries and a few quakers. In South-Carolina there are church of England missionaries, and the progeny of some Scots presbyterians. 9 In Georgia DE NIHILO NIHIL.

### A few Miscellany Observations.

All charities, excepting to poor orphans, other impotent poor, and children of indigent parents, are charities ill applied; charities towards converting people from one mode of religion to another, where both are consistent with society, are not laudable.

By a general naturalization, foreigners may be imported to all our colonies; but to be intermixed with the British settlers, their publick worship of any denomination, and schooling to be in English; \* thus in a few years, they will not differ from the British only in family names.

In New-England the congregationalists at first acted with too much severity, which occasioned some inhabitants of Boston to petition K. Charles II. anno 1679, for a church of England, modestly called the king's chapel, (thus it is with ambassadors chapels,) signifying not an established, but tolerated or privileged place of worship.

The clamours concerning the persecutions of dissenters from the congregational way were very ill founded; for instance, 1725, the assessors of Tiverton and Dartmouth were by a proper warrant from the province treasurer committed to jail for not assessing the township towards common rates.

\* A late proposal in Pennsylvania of erecting German schools was most absurd.





## SECTION XI.

Concerning the COLONY of

## CONNECTICUT.

**T**HIS is the last of the four colonies formerly called, The dominions of New-England. It is a plantation of industrious sagacious husbandmen, notwithstanding that some of the meaner sort are villains, corruptio optimi pessima, especially in not paying their just debts to the inhabitants or dealers of the neighbouring colonies; in all their elections of governor, councillors, representatives, judges, and other publick officers, by custom, they generally prefer the most worthy. Their eastern townships have been tainted by the adjacent paper-money-making colonies of Massachusetts-Bay and Rhode-Island, and followed that fraud instead of going into the better currency of their western adjoining province of New-York; the Connecticut administration are at present sensible of this error, and have reduced all their publick fees and fines to proclamation money.—I could not avoid this preamble, by way of eulogy upon the present administration in their exemplary jurisdiction. They have subsisted as a government about ninety years, and from oeconomical experience, have formed a body of laws lately revised and published anno 1750, in a small folio of 258 pages, of the most natural, equitable, plain and concise laws for plantations, hitherto extant.

This colony at present is by royal charter, a coalition of two distinct voluntary societies, formed from  
articles



articles by subscription of many planters, then called Hartford and New-Haven colonies. That of Hartford was from an emigration of some discontented rigids of some townships adjoining to Boston (see vol. I. p. 444.) they went west southwardly, and planted the lands now called Springfield, Suffield, Enfield, Windsor, Hartford, Wethersfield, &c. some of these were within the Massachusetts jurisdiction: those who were without the jurisdiction, by subscription of articles formed themselves after the model of Massachusetts-Bay into a voluntary but not legal jurisdiction; their first election of magistrates was 1636; 1637 people from England under the direction of Mr. Eaton, Mr. Davenport, &c. purchased of the Indians, and began another distinct voluntary jurisdiction upon Long-Island sound called the colony of New-Haven, and continued one of the \* united colonies of New-England until the restoration of king Charles II. and was then with the said colony of Hartford by royal charter incorporated into the present colony of Connecticut.

John Winthrop, son of John Winthrop, governor of Massachusetts-Bay, as agent from the lords Say and Brook, arrived at fort Saybrook 1635, and was afterwards chosen governor of Hartford colony. Upon the restoration of king Charles II. he went home and obtained a royal charter incorporating Hartford and New-Haven colonies into one united colony; he was fourteen years governor of this united colony. †

\* The united colonies of New-England from 1643 to 1663, were Massachusetts-Bay, Plymouth, Hartford, and New-Haven.

During the confusions or civil war in England, the colonies in America were neglected, and acted at pleasure.

† John Winthrop, formerly governor of Connecticut, died in Boston, April 5, 1676, æt. 73, eldest son of Mr. Winthrop, governor of Massachusetts, who died March 26, 1649.

He was much given to experimental philosophy and medicine; several of his recipes are still used by that family in charity to the poor; some of his pieces are to be found amongst the first philosophical transactions of the London royal society; he was a great admirer of Van Helmont, and dealt much in antimonials.

The



The first volontaire governor of Hartford colony was Edward Hopkins, born in England 1600, a Turkey merchant of London; he returned to England, was in several offices there, and died in London 1657. Alternately with him Mr. Hains was chosen governor. After them George Willis, Thomas Wells, and John Webster were chosen governors.

Mr. Eaton, an east country merchant of London, one of the patentees of Massachusetts colony, with a parcel of planters 1637 settled at New-Haven; after being for many successive years governor, he died 1657; to him succeeded Francis Newman, he continued three or four years governor and died. Mr. Leet, a lawyer, succeeded and continued governor until Hartford and New-Haven were by royal charter united into one colony, and was their deputy governor under Mr. Winthrop while he lived, and after Mr. Winthrop's death continued ten years governor till his own death.

We should have mentioned that Robert, earl of Warwick, having obtained a grant 1630 from the council of Plymouth, procured a patent from king Charles I. of lands in New-England from Narraganset river, as the sea coast runs towards Virginia forty leagues, and east and west from sea to sea or to Massachusetts south line; this was made over to William viscount Say and Seal, Robert lord Brook, and company; they built a fort at the mouth of Connecticut river, and called it Say-Brook; but finding no profit to accrue, they sold it to the settlers 1644.

The present boundaries of Connecticut colony are its north † line upon Massachusetts-Bay province of about 72 miles, settled 1713; its \* easterly line upon the colony of Rhode-Island of about 45 miles, settled 1728; its southerly line is upon Long-Island sound, being a sea

† See vol. I. p. 416, by mistake it was said to have been confirmed by the king in council.

\* See vol. II. p. 93.



line of about 90 miles in a direct W. southerly course from the mouth of Pakatuke river to the mouth of Byram river; its westerly line as finally settled with New-York, and by a deed of surrender from the colony of Connecticut to the king May 14, 1731, is as follows.

This west line was regulated thus, beginning at 20 miles east from Courtland's point || of Hudson's river; N. 12 d. 30 m. E. 52 and half miles to a continuation of the Massachusetts and Connecticut divisional line in N. lat. 42 d. 2 m. \* From the abovesaid projection from Courtland's point run S. 24 d. 30 m. east, 7 and 1 quarter miles, then W. S. W. 13 miles 64 rod, then S. S. E. eight miles to the mouth of Byram river. A line parallel with the first two lines at the distance of one mile three quarters of a mile and twenty rod eastward is the present boundary between Connecticut and New-York, and the land comprehended by these parallel lines is called the Oblong granted by Connecticut to New-York as an equivalent for some lands upon the Sound, settled by, but not originally belonging to Connecticut; this was confirmed by the king in council. The Oblong contains about 69,000 acres, whereof 50,000 acres is in dispute, the property being claimed by Eyles and company, also by Hanly and company; † it remains a place of refuge for the miscreants from New-England and New-York.

The partition line between New-York and Connecticut as established December 1, 1664, runs from the mouth of Memoroncok river (a little west from Byram river) N. N. W. and was the ancient easterly bounds of New-York till Nov. 23, 1683, the line was run nearly the same as it is now settled.

|| Courtland's point is computed to be 40 miles as the river runs from the city of New-York.

\* This N. W. corner of Connecticut colony is 20 and 3 qr. miles from Hudson's river about 9 miles above Kingston, 1 mile below the mouth of Esopus river, and about 50 miles below Albany.

† See New-York section.



Duke of Hamilton's grant took in part of the present colony of Connecticut, this grant was from Narraganset-Bay to Connecticut river, and back into the country until it met with Massachusetts south line; but as this was never purchased of the native Indians, and never settled, it may be deemed as obsolete; there have been some attempts to revive this claim, but never prosecuted.

The Indians almost extinct; they have a small reserve upon the east side of Connecticut river at Pistol point in Weathersfield; a very small parcel of Nianticks about 5 or 6 miles west from New-London; there is an Indian reserve of — acres upon New-London river in the northern parts of that township called Mohegins.

In Connecticut are eight convenient shipping ports for small craft, but all masters enter and clear at the port of New-London, a good harbour 5 miles within land, and deep water, here they build large ships, but their timber is spungy, and not durable, it splits or rives well into staves; small vessels are built at Saybrook, Killingworth, New-Haven or Wallingsford river, &c. In the Sound the tide flows 6 to 8 feet, the deep water is upon the Long-island side.

Foreign vessels entered and cleared in the port of New-London from the 25th of March 1748 to the 25th of March 1749, scarce any registered more than 80 tons, and generally are West-India traders.

Entered inwards.

Cleared outwards.

Brigantines	3	Brigantines	20
Sloops	30	Sloops	37
Schooners	4	Schooners	5
	—		—
	37		62

Here, as in all other British colonies, the collector and other custom-house officers, are by warrant from the commissioners of the customs in consequence of an order from the treasury; the commissioners of the treasury direct all officers of the revenue.



In Connecticut the government is in the hands of the representative of the freemen or people, \* as was also the property ; but at present no colony or general lands remain (so it is in Rhode-Island) excepting some Indian reserves.

In the reigns of Charles II. and James II. the colony of Connecticut (as also of Rhode-Island) in the case of their charter, did not stand a law suit at home, as did Massachusetts-Bay, but tacitly dropt their charter or jurisdiction, and upon the happy revolution tacitly reasumed their jurisdiction, which was deemed good, and subsists to this day.

This colony (before a charter granted them, by the two distinct appellations of Hartford and New-Haven) was two of the four associated colonies of New-England; Old Massachusetts and Old Plymouth were the other two; the quota of charges of the two Connecticut colonies of Hartford and New-Haven was equal to that of the old colony of Massachusetts-Bay.

As to their wars or rather bickerings with the Canada French and their Indians, as also with our intermixed Indians in their insurrections, they were in common with Massachusetts-Bay colony and province; we refer to the section concerning Massachusetts-Bay. What happened prior to the Connecticut royal charter, see vol. I. p. 189; their share in the reducing of Port-Royal, now

\* Our colonies are of various natures. 1. In some the government and property are in the crown; South-Carolina, North Carolina excepting the property of the earl of Granville's one eighth share; Virginia, excepting the property of the north neck which belongs to lord Fairfax; New-York, New-Hampshire, Nova-Scotia; and Newfoundland. 2. In some, both government and property are in the proprietaries, Maryland, and Pensylvania. 3. In some, the government and property is in the representatives of the people, Connecticut and Rhode-Island. 4. In others, the government is in the king, but the property is in the representatives of the people, as in Massachusetts-Bay. 5. Government in the king, and property in a certain body of proprietors, as in New-Jerseys. 6. Georgia may be said not digested.



Annapolis, 1710, see vol. I. p. 308 ; their share in the sham expedition 1711 (the nation was at that time, and by management, frequently the dupe of the ministry) against Canada, see vol. I. p. 312 ; their quota in that unaccountably rash, but by divine providence extraordinary successful, expedition against Louisbourg of Cape-Breton, see vol. I. p. 350 ; the affair of the projected but abortive expedition 1746 against Canada, see vol. I. p. 315.

#### Abstract of the Connecticut CHARTER.

“ Connecticut colony was incorporated, April 23,  
 “ 1662, by charter of K. Charles II. from the humble  
 “ petition of 19 gentlemen principal proprietors in said  
 “ colony, partly by purchase for valuable considerations,  
 “ and partly gained by a conquest ; and living remote  
 “ from other English plantations ; these gentlemen’s  
 “ names are — John Winthrop, Henry Clarke, Nathan  
 “ Gold, Henry Wolcott, John Ogden, John Clarke,  
 “ John Mason, Matthew Allyn, Richard Treat, John  
 “ Talcott, Thomas Welles, Anthony Hawkins, Samuel  
 “ Willis, John Tapping, Richard Lord, Daniel Clarke,  
 “ Obadiah Brown, John Deming, Matthew Chamfield,  
 “ with all others who shall be made free of the company,  
 “ are incorporated by the name of THE GOVERNOR AND  
 “ COMPANY OF THE ENGLISH COLONY OF CONNECTICUT  
 “ IN NEW-ENGLAND IN AMERICA, with perpetual suc-  
 “ cession, to purchase land and chattles, and them to  
 “ lease or alien as corporations in England may do, with  
 “ a common seal ; and there shall be elected out of the  
 “ freemen one governor, one deputy governor, and  
 “ twelve assistants, viz. the first governor John Win-  
 “ throp, first deputy governor John Mason, the first  
 “ twelve assistants Samuel Willis, Matthew Allyn, Na-  
 “ than Gold, Henry Clarke, Richard Treat, John Ogden,  
 “ John Tapping, John Talcott, Thomas Welles, Henry  
 “ Wolcott, Richard Lord, and Daniel Clarke ; the go-  
 “ vernor may at any time call an assembly ; to have two  
 “ annual



“ annual assemblies, viz. second Thursday in October,  
“ and second Thursday of May, to consist of the assis-  
“ tants and deputies, not exceeding two from one place,  
“ chosen by the freemen of each place to be a general as-  
“ sembly, whereof the governor and deputy governor,  
“ and six of the assistants at least to be seven ; this gene-  
“ ral assembly may change the times of their meeting and  
“ elections, to admit freemen, and constitute such offi-  
“ cers as they should think fit ; and once every year on  
“ the second Thursday of May, the governor, deputy  
“ governor, assistants, and other officers, shall be in said  
“ general court newly chosen for the year ensuing, and  
“ to take their respective corporal oaths for the due per-  
“ formance of their offices before two assistants ; the first  
“ nominated governor to take his oath before a master in  
“ chancery. The inhabitants to have a power to import  
“ inhabitants and goods into the colony, paying the  
“ usual duties. All our subjects inhabitants born there,  
“ or at sea, coming to or going from thence, to be deem-  
“ ed natural-born subjects. The general assembly to  
“ erect judicatories, and to make reasonable laws, not  
“ contrary to the laws of England, and to settle forms of  
“ magistracy and magistrates, and to impose lawful fines  
“ and other penalties ; and in general, that our said peo-  
“ ple may be so religiously, peaceably, and civilly go-  
“ verned ; as their good life and orderly conversation,  
“ may win and invite the natives of the country to the  
“ knowledge and obedience of the only true God and  
“ saviour of mankind ; this with “ the adventurers free  
“ profession,” is the only and principal end of this plan-  
“ tation. A power martial to raise forces for their own  
“ defence to kill or otherways destroy by all fitting ways  
“ any who attempt the detriment of the colony, and  
“ upon occasion to use law martial ; and upon just causes  
“ to invade and destroy the natives or other enemies  
“ of said colony. Liberty is reserved to all his majesty’s  
“ subjects to fish, to build wharfs and stages upon waste  
“ lands—



“ lands—This colony is bounded east by the Narraganset  
 “ river, commonly called Narraganset-Bay, where the  
 “ said river falleth into the sea ; and on the north by the  
 “ line of the Massachusetts plantation, and on the south  
 “ by the sea ; and from the said Narraganset-Bay on the  
 “ east to the South-Sea on the west part. To be holden  
 “ in free and common foccage as of our mannor of East-  
 “ Greenwich, paying only the fifth part of all the ore of  
 “ gold and silver that may be discovered there.

“ By writ of privy-seal, HOWARD.”

Their present enacting stile is, “ Be it enacted by the  
 “ governor, council and representatives, in general court  
 “ assembled, and by the authority of the same.”

The present counties and towns are,

HARTFORD county.	
Hartford	* Norfolk
Windfor	* Cornwall
Weathersfield	* Canaan
Middletown	* Kent
Farmington	NEW-HAVEN county.
Symsbury	Milford
Haddam	Guilford
East-Haddam	Brentford
Colchester	Wallingford
Hebron	Darby
Glassenbury	Waterbury
Bolton	New-Milford
Willington	Durham
* Stafford	* Sharon
Toland	* Salisbury
Litchfield	NEW-LONDON county.
* Harwinton	New-London
* Hartland	Norwich
* Winchester	Saybrook
* New-Hartford	Stonington
* Torrington	Killingworth
* Bark-Hampsted	Lyme
* Colebrook	Groton
* Goshen	Preston

FAIR-



FAIRFIELD county.

Fairfield  
Stratford  
Norwalk  
Stanford  
Greenwich  
Woodbury  
Danbury  
New-Town  
Ridgefield  
\* New-Fairfield

WINDHAM county.

Windham

Lebanon  
Plainfield  
Canterbury  
Mansfield  
Coventry  
Pomfret  
\* Morthlake  
Killingley  
Ashford  
Volentown  
\* Union

Being in all about a hundred representatives.

Every township sends two representatives excepting those marked \* which are new or poor townships, pay no colony rates, and consequently send no representatives to the general assembly or legislature: Haddam and East Haddam send only one representative each.

The freemen of each town shall in September meet to chuse representatives for the general assembly, and twenty persons in nomination for the next May general election. In April the twelve assistants to be chosen by the freemen of each town out of the twenty nominated persons, to be sent sealed up to the general assembly, with the votes for the governor, deputy governor, secretary and treasurer; as also votes for the representatives for the May assembly called proxies, returned by the constable of each town.

The assistants and the representatives are paid out of the colony treasury.

Annually two general courts, the first at Hartford, called the court of election, second Thursday in May, where the freemen shall elect a governor, deputy governor, twelve assistants, treasurer and secretary, the second at New-Haven second Thursday in October: in the general court shall consist the power of making laws, granting levies, disposing of colony lands, erecting of judicatories and officers, granting release in criminal



minal or capital cases, dissolving and proroguing of themselves. The governor, deputy governor, or secretary may call a general court upon emergencies. No member of the general court during its sessions, to be arrested, except for treason or felony. Every town may send one or two deputies. Previous to all other business, the house of representatives or deputies are to chuse a speaker and clerk. They are the only judges concerning their own election. Every day's absence, fine 10s. to be paid to the colony treasurer. In an equivote the governor in the upper house, and speaker in the lower house, shall have a casting vote.

#### Courts of judicature.

All cases exceeding the value of 40s. shall be determined by a jury of twelve men in common law.

Annually in January at a town meeting there shall be chosen jury-men to serve in the several courts, qualification 50s. at least freehold rated in the general list; the names of the jury-men so chosen shall be put in a box with a lock, and when any number of jury-men are summoned to serve at any court, the town constable shall at random draw so many out of the box, as is required from that town; any juror so drawn, but not appearing at the court, penalty 10s. and deficiencies in juries to be filled de talibus circumstantibus. The number of jury-men to be annually chosen in each town.

IN HARTFORD county.		NEW-HAVEN county.	
Hartford	20	New-Haven	20
Wethersfield	20	Milford	12
Windfor	20	Wallingford	15
Farmington	20	Brentford	10
Middletown	20	Guilford	12
Symsbury	12	Durham	6
Glastenbury	10	Darby	6
Hebron	10	Waterbury	6
	—		—
	132		87



NEW-LONDON county.		New-Town	12
New-London	15	Ridgefield	6
Norwich	15	Greenwich	10
Preston	15		—
Stonington	15		112
Groton	15		
Lyme	15	WINDHAM county.	
Saybrook	15	Windham	12
Killingworth	15	Lebanon	12
	—	Coventry	12
	120	Plainfield	12
		Canterbury	12
FAIRFIELD county.		Pomfret	12
Fairfield	20	Volentown	12
Stratford	20	Ashford	12
Norwalk	20	Mansfield	12
Stanford	12		—
Danbury	12		108

N. B. I cannot account, why Hadham and East-Had-  
dam, Colchester, Bolton, Willington, Toland, and Litch-  
field in the county of Hartford; New-Milford, and Dur-  
ham in the county of New-Haven; Woodbury in the  
county of Fairfield; and Killingley in the county of  
Windham, who send representatives to the general court  
or assembly, do not send jurors to the courts below.

All judges and justices are appointed by the general  
assembly, and commissioned by the governor with the  
province seal; the governor, deputy governor, and as-  
sistants, are justices ex officio.

As to the courts, where though the case may be of  
considerable value, no jury is required; there is

1. The court of probates.
2. Court of vice-admiralty are the same officers as for  
New-York.
3. Justiciary court of admiralty; some of the judges  
are from New-York.

There



There shall be a superior court of judicature, ambulatory from county to county; this court to consist of one chief judge and four other judges (whereof three a quorum) and shall have cognizance of all pleas of the crown that relate to life, limb, or banishment; of divorce; of all pleas, real, personal, or mixt; the same to try by a jury or otherways, proceed to judgment, and award execution. This court to be held in each county twice annually. The chief judge, or in his absence, any three of the judges, may call a special court upon extraordinary occasions. Any one judge may open and adjourn the court, and where no judge presents, the sheriff may adjourn the court to next day. The judges to appoint and swear their own clerk.

An inferior court of judicature to be held in each county twice a year, by a judge with two or more justices of the quorum commissioned for that purpose; to determine by a jury or otherways all civil causes, real, personal, or mixt, as also all criminal matters, not extending to life, limb, banishment, or divorce. Have power to levy a county tax.

A special county court may be called upon any extraordinary occasion, and may adjourn themselves to any distant time, to appoint and swear their own clerks and county treasurer. Every chief judge or president, or moderator in any civil court, shall have a casting vote.

A court of probate consisting of one judge and a clerk by him to be appointed, to be held in each of the following districts, called the district of Hartford, New-haven, New-London, Fairfield, Windham, Plainfield, Guilford, Woodbury, Stanford, East-Hadham, Litchfield, Danbury, and Norwich. In difficult cases may call in two or three justices of the quorum. Any person aggrieved may appeal and review to the next superior court of the county.

The judges of probates to enquire after all escheats, and give notice to the colony treasurer, who is to make sale by publick vendue of all escheats for the benefit  
of



of the colony ; but if afterward any just title of an heir appear, it shall upon reasonable terms be restored.

Executors after two months probate, neglecting to register an inventory of the deceased's estate, shall forfeit 5l. per month. Executors refusing to accept, administration shall be granted to the next of kin, or principal creditors. Executors neglecting to prove a will after 30 days, shall forfeit 5l. per month. Administration upon intestate estates, to the widow or next of kin, at the discretion of the judge of probates. The distribution of intestate estates to be, one third of the personal estate to the widow for ever, and her dower of one third of the real estate for life, the remainder to be equally divided among the children, but the eldest son to have a double share ; and if all daughters, they shall inherit as copartners; the division of the estate to be by three sufficient freeholders upon oath appointed by the judge of probates. The portion of any child dying before of age or married, shall be divided among the survivors. No representatives to be admitted among collaterals after brothers and sisters children. Where no legal representatives, the widow shall be allowed one moiety of the personal estate for ever, and one third of real estate for life. All sales of lands made by administrators shall be void.

Marriages. No person to be married unless published in some congregation, or publickly posted up eight days before such marriage. No person to join people in marriage, besides a justice in the county or an ordained minister of the parish where the parties dwell. Any justice or minister marrying persons without publication, and certificate of the consent of the parents or guardians, penalty 20l. Any man endeavouring to obtain the affections of a maid, without liberty of courtship from the parents or guardians, for the first offence 5l. &c. — Degrees of kindred forbidden marriage, are according to the levitical law, and such marriages are declared to be null and void, and to sit



fit upon the gallows with a rope about their neck, and stripes not exceeding forty, and to wear the letter I on their arm or back. If any persons within said degrees do marry or cohabit, or persons cohabiting after divorce; penalty as adultery; excepting cases of absence, as the law directs, where the superior court may grant liberty to marry again.

A man found abed with another man's wife, both to be whipt not exceeding 30 stripes. Men or women wearing contrary apparels, fine not exceeding five pound.

The age of consent for marriage is to the man 14 æt. to the woman 12 æt. No person unmarried shall keep house of himself, without consent of the town, penalty 20s. per week. Contracts of persons under parents, guardians, or masters, are not valid. The select-men, and overseers of the poor, with the assent of the next justices, may bind out poor idle children, boys to 21 æt. girls to 18 æt.

The dower for widows where no jointure was made before marriage, is one third of the personal estate without limitation, and one third of the income of the real estate for life, but to keep it in good repair.

All persons of right understanding æt. 21 or upwards, though excommunicated; by deed or will if 17 æt. and upwards, may dispose of personal estate. The age for chusing of guardians shall be 14 æt. for males, and 12 æt. for females.

Where parents or masters neglect children under their care, the select-men may bind them out, boys to 21 æt. girls to 18 æt.

Ideots, impotent and distracted, shall be under the direction of the county courts, to be provided for by the following degrees of kindred; father or mother, grand-father or grand-mother, children or grand-children, if able. The estates of such (if any) by a proper order may be sold for their maintenance. Where no sufficient relations or estate does appear, they shall be  
sup-



supported at the charge of the town where they live. The select-men are to appoint them guardians.

Idle persons and drunkards, by warrant to be brought before a justice; the goods of such persons shall be under the management of the select-men, who may sell all or part (not real, without an order of the general assembly) of their estates, and on deficiency, dispose of their person to service for a certain time, to pay their just debts. May appeal from the select-men to the county court. All such persons are disabled from making of contracts.

In this colony is no particular court of chancery; in some cases the general court act as a court of chancery or equity.

Justiciary courts of oyer and terminer, called assizes and general goal delivery, is the same with the superior court.

The court of vice-admiralty, the same judge and other officers of that court, which serve for the province of New-York, serve also for the colony of Connecticut.

The justiciary court of admiralty for trial of crimes committed at sea consists of judges, some from the colony of Connecticut, and some from the province of New-York, pursuant to the instructions from home.

A justice may determine in any case not exceeding 40s. if land is not concerned; if the judges find that the jury have not attended to the evidence, they may cause them to return to a second and third consideration, but no more. The judges to determine in cases of law, where the jury brings in a non liquet or special verdict, viz. "if the law be so in such a point, then we find for the plaintiff, but if the law be otherways, then we find for the defendant." May appeal from a justice to the county court, and from thence may review to the next county court, or appeal to the next superior court; from the review to the second county court, may appeal to the next superior court, but without any review in the superior court;



court ; but if from the first county court he appeal to the superior court, he is admitted to review in the next superior court. In a debt upon bond, bill, or note, for a value not exceeding 40s. no appeal to be allowed, and if not exceeding 10l. no appeal is allowed from a county court.

No appeals are allowed to the king in council. Some have gone home by way of complaint at a considerable charge, but no relief, excepting in the case of John Winthrop, Esq; who procured a declaration of the king in council, " That their law concerning dividing land inheritance of an intestate was contrary to the law of England, and void : " but in subsequent cases this colony have no regard to the declaration.

The general assembly hear writs of error against proceedings of the superior court ; and in some instances act as a court of chancery.

Where any other court exceeds their jurisdiction, the judges of the superior court may grant a prohibition with the same power, as the king's bench in England.

Sheriffs to be appointed by the governor and council called assistants, giving security ; in case of riots or great oppositions in his office, may raise the militia of the county, and to be under his command.

Each county appoints one king's attorney.

In cases of account, the court may appoint three auditors.

In cases of abatement of a writ, the plaintiff upon his paying to the defendant his costs to that time, may amend the defect and proceed. No writ shall abate for a circumstantial mistake.

In all actions before a justice, six days warning is required ; before a county or superior court, twelve days.

Any defendant upon default, paying down to the adverse party costs, may be admitted to the tryal.

All titles of lands to be tried in the county where the land lies.

No person to be kept in prison, where sufficient estate  
does



does appear ; where no estate appears, the debtor shall satisfy the debt by service.

Fees. For attending the general court, per diem, to an assistant 6s. to a representative 4s. and 4d. per mile, travelling out; chief justice of superior court 12s; assistant judges 9s; county courts chief judge 7s; justices of the quorum 5s; licence to a tavern keeper 3s; acknowledging any instrument 6d; to the secretary for the colony seal 1s; to the general assembly for every petition 1l: attornies fees, superior court 8s; inferior or county court 4s; goalers fees, commitment and discharge 2s; for dieting each prisoner per week 2s; to a county surveyor of lands and for his horse, besides expences, 4s. per diem. N. B. These fees seem to be in bills of the emission equal to three and half old ten. of New-England common currency.

Publick houses of entertainment for each town to be nominated in January annually by the magistrates, select-men, constables and grand jury-men, be approved of by the next county court, and licensed by them: the house-keeper not to suffer sons not of age, or servants, to sit tipling, fine 6s; strangers and foreigners excepted: none to keep company in publick houses evening next following the Lord's day, or days of fast; any person found in a tavern (some exceptions) the night before and the night after the Lord's day, or after nine o'clock in any other night, fine 3s; by a special warrant, houses may be broke open in searching after persons in taverns; inhabitants not to sit in a tavern drinking above one hour at a time, excepting upon extraordinary occasions, fine 6s; tavern hunters to be posted up at the tavern doors with a prohibition of entertaining them upon penalty of 3l; no tavern-keeper to bring an action for drink, sold after two days; none but licensed houses to sell strong liquor in quantities exceeding one quart of wine or spirits, or one gallon of any other liquor, fine 3l. first offence, 6l, second offence, and so doubled every offence; if not  
able



able to pay, to be whipt not less than 10, and not exceeding 15 stripes every offence.

In Connecticut (and all over New-England every constituted township is a CORPORATION;) the qualification for a voter or freeman is 21 æt. and upwards, with a freehold rated in the common list at 50 s. or personal estate rated at 40 l. besides his poll or person. Township meetings or assemblies may make prudential laws or orders, penalty of transgression not to exceed 20 s. Township officers to be chosen annually in December, viz. select-men not exceeding seven, listers (assessors) not exceeding nine, &c. all elections to be by a major part of the qualified voters. Town clerks to register marriages, births, and burials.

No person to be admitted an inhabitant of a town, but by consent of the select-men; no stranger to reside exceeding—days without liberty from the select-men, and the entertainer finable. A stranger continuing after being warned out, fine 10 s. per week, or whipt not exceeding ten stripes. One year's residence qualifies a person for an inhabitant. A stranger entertained above four days, the entertainer shall be at the charge if taken sick. Vagrants to be ordered from constable to constable back to the place they came from; if they return, shall be toties quoties whipt not exceeding ten stripes.

Annually first Monday of March the proprietors not constituted into townships, are to meet and chuse a moderator, clerk, treasurer, and a committee to manage affairs in the intervals of their general meetings. By a major vote computed by interest they are to be chosen, and may levy taxes as may be needed. Sufficient partition fences to be five foot if rails or wooden fences, stone fence four feet high; or hedges, brooks, ditches, creeks, rivers, in the judgment of the fence-viewers, equivalent thereto. No person to feed his cattle in his neighbour's land, as if common field, without leave, from 10th April to 10th October.



Taxes consist in the articles of rates, impost, and excise.

Rates comprehend the poll-tax. Every person annually, at or before September 10, to give in a list of his polls and rateable estate : those lists to be returned to the general court in October : persons to be four-folded who leave out part of their estate, or who give in no estate ; the listers may relieve people overcharged, may appeal to a justice and to the select-men of the town. — Every male person from sixteen to seventy æt. to be set in the list at 18 l. (governor, deputy governor, assistants, ministers of the gospel, president and tutors of the collegiate school, students there, school-masters and infirm persons are excused) every ox at 4 l ; each steer, cow, or heifer of three years and upwards at 3 l ; steer or heifer of two years at 40 s ; each steer or heifer of one year 20 s. Each horse or mare of three years old and upwards at 3 l. of two years old 40 s. of one year old 20 s. Every swine one year old and upwards 20 s. Each dwelling-house with adjoining land 20 s. per acre ; plow and mowing land in some counties 15 s. in others 10 s. in others 7 s. 6 d. per acre ; boggy mowing meadow land 5 s. per acre ; all upland pasture or mowing 8 s. per acre. Peculiars to be assessed by the nearest town. Vessels at 15 s. per tun. The president of Yale college, and all ministers of the gospel, their estates in the towns where they live are exempted. All allowed attornies at the law, 50 l. their faculty ; and others higher in proportion to their business. All traders, &c. to be rated for their faculties at the discretion of the listers.

RATES. In our American colonies, in assessing of rates, real estate is generally valued at seven years income, which is favourable. In Great-Britain lands are sold at twenty to thirty years purchase.

In Connecticut 1 d. rate, produces 4000 l. to 5000 l. currency.

IMPOST. There is a high duty upon the exportation of all timber and lumber to the neighbouring governments



ments of Massachusetts, New-York, Rhode-Island, and New-Hampshire; this is designed in lieu of a prohibition, that after some years the colony may not be destitute of those materials. The impost upon rum is per gallon 1 d. if imported directly from the West-Indies or sugar islands, and 2 d. from all other parts; a drawback is allowed upon its exportation.

All foreign trading vessels not owned in the colony at clearing, to pay ——— powder money to the naval officer.

The governor with advice of the council, upon occasion, by proclamation may for a time prohibit the exportation of grain and other provisions; delinquents forfeit these goods by an order obtained from a special county court.

Excise 3 d. per gallon on all wine and distilled liquors; this is applied to defray county charges. The county courts to appoint receivers of the excise, fees 2 s. in the pound. Receivers may agree with the publick houses by the year.

The act regulating maritime affairs extend from p. 147 to p. 152, in twenty-seven sections in their law book; does not contain any thing peculiar.

By the act for forming and regulating the militia. The governor to be captain general, the deputy governor lieutenant general: the military companies of the several townships to be formed into 13 regiments of foot, and to each regiment of foot, one troop of horse of 64 men, officers included. The field officers of each regiment, colonel, lieutenant colonel, and major, to be appointed by the general assembly, and commissioned by the governor. Once in four years to be called together for regimental exercise. All male persons from 16 to 50 æt. to attend military musters, excepting Indians and negroes, secretaries, justices, church officers, members of the collegiate school, allowed physicians and surgeons, representatives, school-masters, attornies at law, a miller to



to each grist mill, ferry men, constant herdsmen, constant mariners, sheriffs, constables, and impotent persons. All militia listed soldiers to be provided, besides his accoutrements, with one pound of good powder, four pound of bullets, and twelve flints. In each company of 64 soldiers besides officers, there shall be a capt. a lieut. and four serjeants; where 32 soldiers, there shall be a lieut. ensign, and two serjeants; where but 24 soldiers there shall be two serjeants. The companies to be trained four times a year, every soldier for not appearance to pay 3 s.

The arms and ammunition of all persons in the government to be viewed on the first Monday of May annually. Each trooping horse freed from rates and impresses. Disorders on training days, may be punished by laying neck and heel, riding the wooden horse, or 15 s. The fines to be applied for colours, drummers, halberts, banners, trumpets, trumpeters, and other charges of the company. The colony to provide a magazine of powder and shot, and the selectmen of each town to provide military stores for their towns.

The select men may appoint watches and wards in their several towns.

Any persons may form themselves into artillery companies so called, for promoting of military exercises.

Deserters from the king's service sea or land, fine 20 l. and half a year's imprisonment.

The training militia of this colony may consist of about 15,000 men. 1740, at a great struggle in the election of a governor, there were about 4000 freemen voters. †

No

† In the house of representatives of Massachusetts-Bay, in their journal June 3, 1748, they declare that Connecticut is two thirds as big (meaning in persons and estates, but not in extent of territory, Plymouth and province of Main included) as the province of Massachusetts-Bay. With submission, I find Connecticut not half so big in numbers and estates as Massachusetts-Bay. At times by the prudent  
N 2 administration



No impresses of persons or cattle, but by warrant, with a reasonable allowance for service, and for damages if any happen.

Their produce, manufactures, trade and navigation.

Connecticut uses scarce any foreign trade; lately they send some small craft to the West-India islands; they vent their produce in the neighbouring continent colonies, viz. wheat, Indian corn, beaver, pork, butter, horses, and flax. For some years they have been endeavouring to raise hemp and flax; flax may succeed, but hemp seems to require a stronger soil and warmer climate, it thrives better further south, as in Pennsylvania; that from the northern parts, does not dress so

administration of the jurisdiction of Connecticut colony, their taxes were only 4000 l. to 5000 l. currency per ann. whereas the polls and rates of the Massachusetts-Bay, were at the same time per ann. about 400,000 currency.

1742, by the valuation on Massachusetts-Bay were 41,000 white males taxable for polls; allowing for concealments they may be estimated at 50,000 fencibles; which multiplied by 4 according to Dr. Halley's rules, makes 200,000, men, women, and children; and in Connecticut about 100,000 people. In general the nearest estimate that can be made of the people in New-England, is

Massachusetts-Bay	200,000
Connecticut	100,000
Rhode-Island	30,000
New-Hampshire	24,000
	<hr/>
	354,000

One fourth part of these are 90,00 fencible men, one fifth is 70,000 fencible marching men, sufficient to swallow up the French of Canada, and Cape-Breton islands at a few meals or encounters.

In political ballances, the number of inhabitants is a grand article. In Great-Britain and Ireland are about 10 millions of people, in France about double that number, in Spain about five millions, according to the duke de Ripperda's estimate, in the seven United provinces called Holland, about three millions; but the produce of trade called money, sometimes implies the inferiority of fencible men, thus the general ballance of trade being in favour of Holland, it becomes the center of exchange for all Europe.

kindly,



kindly, nor whiten so well. The Russia hemp exported from the northern parts of Archangel, Narva, Revel, and Riga, is brought down from the southern parts of Russia.

Wool, hemp, flax, and iron, are the general materials of all our manufactures. The raising and manufacturing of hemp, flax, or any other herba into cordage, cauras, and other linen, is a general and great advantage without any detriment to our mother country; it may be some disadvantage to our traders to Russia, Germany, and Holland; but private lucration ought to give way to a publick good. The linen business employs variety of people, pulling the flax, watering of it, breaking, swingling, hackling, spinning, weaving, &c.

Some years since, the government of Connecticut established a corporation for commerce, called the New-London society; but in the fraudulent humour of these times, contrary to the design of their institution, they soon began to manufacture printed society notes to be imposed as a currency: the government in their wonted prudence declared it a nuisance; these bills were forbid a currency, and called in at the charge of the society.

In all countries the inhabitants may be reduced to three classes, 1. Villinage or coatters. 2. Yeomanry or farmers who improve their own freeholds; and 3. Gentry who live by the rents of their estates farmed to others; the second sort is generally our case.

Irish potatoes or solanum esculentum tuberosum, C.B.P. is much planted in New-England, thrives well, and is of good use; varieties here, are the rough coat, red coat, flat white, and long white: my taste prefers the rough coat.

\* There is copper ore in Simsbury hills, about a dozen miles

\* I learned from Mr. Baden, as was hinted before, an ingenious miner and essayer sent from London a few years since by a company of gentlemen, to explore New-England for metallick ores and minerals; he found, 1. Bog and rock iron ore plenty, but not profitable. 2. Some lead ore, but so intermixed with rock and spar, as not to



miles west of Connecticut river; it has been wrought, but did not turn to account; at present it lies dormant.

For their wheat and Indian corn; see elsewhere, as also for their merchantable salt pork.

Ship building and staves are their chief lumber export.

† Wool not sufficient for the house consumption of the colony.

A very considerable produce in the colony of Connecticut is a seminary of learning, or schola illustris, called a collegiate college, and when professors in several sciences

turn to any account. 1. In Simsbury near Connecticut river, there were three different companies wrought for copper ore; Mr. Belcher and Caswell, they also erected a smelting house in Boston, those turned to no account, and the affair dropt. 2. Some associated merchants of Boston, got a lease of some adjacent copper mine lands, they carried it on with vigour, and sent quantities of their ore to England, the company found the scheme turn to no advantage, and desisted. 3. A company of bites, rented some adjoining lands; they pretended to find some shoades, a good symptom for veins; they put some of these pretended rich shoades aboard of a small sloop; this sloop perhaps by contrivance sunk in Connecticut river; the owners did not find it adviseable to weigh the ore, lest the fallacy of the shoades might be discovered. Schaylers rich copper mines in the Jerseys are not much wrought, the owners keep them deposited as old gold. There are some symptoms of copper ore in Attleborough, but not explored. In Attleborough there is a magnatick iron ore, it yields a red shot iron, not good, (see vol. I. p. 540.) In Attleborough Gore is some copper ore, but so intermixed with the iron rock ore, as to render both unprofitable.

Mr. Baden found some allom slate or stone; but no vitriol stone or pyrites, such as is found both sides of river Thames in England, along the Kentish and Essex shores; no salt springs; we have ruddle, which serves to mark sheep, and may serve as a ground colour for priming, as Spanish brown, and black lead in Brimfield, these are not metallick ores, but boles or terras; of okers there are none of any value, some yellow oker.

In New-England, they do not forge bar iron sufficient for their home consumption, by bloomeries and refineries; they import from England, New-York, Jerseys, Pennsylvania, and Maryland.

† England is always jealous of our exporting sheeps wool to foreign market, but it may be depended upon, that our New-England wool is not sufficient for home consumption; and we import many woollens from Great-Britain. Some years since, but not at present, some was shipped from Nantucket to France, very small quantities.



are endowed, it will be called an university; this plant is vigorous and thriving, under the cultivation of the present president, the worthy reverend Mr. Clap.

Some account of Connecticut college, called Yale college in New-Haven.

Anno 1636, the general assembly of Massachusetts-Bay (see vol. I. p. 543.) granted some money towards erecting a college or collegiate school in Cambridge near Boston; the people of Connecticut contributed some small matter; and after some years, because of the distance and charge, their ministers and some in civil authority presented, 1701, a memorial to the general assembly, desiring that a collegiate school might be erected and endowed, and proposed 10 ministers of 40 æt. and upwards, as trustees for ordering the same; survivors to supply vacancies, seven to be a quorum: accordingly a charter \* for this purpose was granted October 1701, to appoint officers, make laws, but not repugnant to the laws of the civil government, to give degrees, possess lands not exceeding the yearly value of 500 l. and other estate, and to receive yearly out of the publick treasury, 100 l. currency †; Saybrook was resolved upon as a proper place, and the trustees chose Mr. Piereson minister of Killingworth for rector, ‡ and until a place could be fitted up in Seabrook, the scholars were to meet at the rector's house in Killingworth, where they continued till the rector's death, 1707. Mr. Hemmingway, since minister of Easthaven, was the first scholar and solus about half a year. Several of the trustees gave books out of their own libraries to begin a library for the college; Mr. Lynde of Saybrook gave a house and land; major James Fitch of Norwich gave land in

\* This charter was drawn up by Mr. secretary Addington of Massachusetts-Bay.

† Equal at the time to about 70 l. sterl.

‡ The rector and 10 trustees constituted the corporation.



Killingley, which were afterwards, 1730, converted into 628 acres in Salisbury. There was a general contribution throughout the colony.

Upon rector Pierſon's death, Mr. Andrews of Milford was choſen pro tempore until they could procure a reſident rector, and the ſenior claſs was removed to Milford, the others to Saybrook under the care of two tutors; they boarded at private houſes, and went to ſchool at their tutors chambers under the inſpection of Mr. Buckingham of Seabrook, one of the truſtees, and continued in this ſtate about ſeven years; in this ſpace of time ſundry donations of valuable books were made to the library, particularly by Sir John Davie of Groton upon his recovery of the family honours and eſtate in England. The greateſt donation of books was from the generoſity and procurement of Jeremiah Dummer, Eſq; agent in London, ann. 1714, he ſent over above 800 volumes of valuable books, whereof about 120 volumes at his own coſt, and the reſt by procurements from Sir Iſaac Newton, Sir Richard Blackmore, Sir Richard Steel, Dr. Burnet, Dr. Woodward, Dr. Halley, Dr. Bentley, Dr. Kennet, Dr. Calamy, Dr. Edwards, Mr. Henry, Mr. Whiſton, &c. governor Yale of the Eaſt-India company, ſent 300 volumes: but a great part of this valuable library was loſt in a tumult upon the removal of the library from Seabrook.

There were, diviſions concerning a fixed ſituation for the college, and in the mean while, 1718, it was agreed that the ſtudents might go where they ſaw cauſe to be inſtructed: the greater part went to Wethersfield under the inſtruction of Mr. Eliſha Williams, afterwards rector, ſome remained at Seabrook under the tuition of Mr. Hart and Mr. Ruſſel.

1716, the majority of the truſtees voted a convenient college and rector's houſe to be erected in New-Haven, which was effected accordingly, but with much oppoſition and confuſion from the northern and eaſtern parts of



of the colony ; \* the trustees notwithstanding held their first commencement at New-Haven in September 1717.

The forefaid Elihu Yale, Esq; an East-India merchant, from his correspondence with Mr. Saltonstall governor of Connecticut, bestowed in the whole, 100 l. sterl. in three hundred volumes of books, and about 400 l. sterl. in effects, and by will designed 500 l. sterl. more, but this was never accomplished ; 1718 Mr. Dummer sent more books value 30 l. ; and Jahaleal Brenton, Esq; of Newport, Rhode-Island, gave 50 l. sterl. The college building was raised October 3, 1717, 170 feet long, 21 feet wide, and three stories high ; cost about 1030 l. sterl. contained above 50 studies, besides the hall, library, and kitchen. September 12, 1718, there was a splendid commencement, and the trustees gave it the name of Yale college, and sent a letter of thanks to Mr. Yale for his generosity to the colony, and letters of thanks to Mr. Dummer, and general Nicholson, for their donations of books. In December following, upon removing of the books from Saybrook, there happened a tumult, about 250 of the most valuable books, and fundry papers of importance, were conveyed away by unknown hands, and never could be recovered.

1719, the trustees chose Mr. Cutler, minister of Stratford, to be a resident rector, and for his accommodation a rector's house was built 1722, cost by subscription, 35 l. by impost upon rum, 115 l. and some part out of Mr. Yale's donations by sale of lands 120 l. and by a general contribution 55 l.

1722, at the commencement he declared himself to be of the church of England, and designed for episcopal orders, which by going to England he obtained with a D.D. at present he is a missionary in Boston. The college con-

\* The affair was referred to the general assembly 1717, the upper and lower house differed, and the reference dropt. N. B. last year there were scholars residing at New-Haven 13 ; at Wethersfield 14, at Saybrook only 4.



tinued without a resident rector four years, the foresaid Mr. Andrews performed this office at their commencements.

1723, the general assembly gave to the college an additional explanatory charter, † viz. that a trustee might resign at pleasure, that seven trustees should be a quorum and to act by a majority, that a minister of 30 æt. might be chosen a trustee, and that the rector should be a trustee ex officio.

Mr. Daniel Turner of London sent them a collection of valuable books, 28 volumes in physick and surgery; the college conferred upon him a diploma of M. D.

1725, September 29, the trustees chose Mr. Elisha Williams minister of Newington parish in Wethersfield as rector, and upon giving his consent to the confession of faith and rules of church discipline agreed upon by the churches of the colony of Connecticut, he was installed rector by the trustees; he reformed the college very much, and advanced useful and polite literature.

In October, 1732, the general assembly granted to the college 1500 acres of land, being 300 acres in each of the new towns of Norfolk, Canaan, Goshen, Cornwall, and Kent: which after some years may be valuable.

1732, the rev. Dr. George Berkley dean of Derry, (late) bishop of Cloyne in Ireland, came over to found an episcopal college in the continent of North-America, or the British West-India islands; he resided some time at Newport of Rhode-Island, and purchased a country seat with about 96 acres of land. For certain reasons, he gave over his design of erecting an episcopal college, and returned to England; although there was something peculiar in his manner, he was a gentleman of general learning, and of a generous disposition to propagate the same among mankind; he was a good judge of the world, and of all our colonies and seminaries of learn-

† It is said to be drawn up by governor Saltonstall.

At the first founding of this college, it was ordered, that where no special provision was made by the trustees, the laws of Harvard college in the province of Massachusetts-Bay should be their rule.



ing; (the episcopal college of Williamsburg in Virginia not excepted,) he gave the preference to the college of Connecticut, a laudable colony; he gave his farm in Rhode-Island to this college, the income to be premiums from time to time for the best Greek and Latin scholars in the judgment of the president and senior episcopal missionary of the colony; this has been some incitement to excel in the classicks. He gave them a fine collection of books of near 1000 volumes, whereof 260 were folio's, 400 l. sterl. value. These donations were made partly out of the dean's own estate, but principally out of the monies put into his hands for founding the episcopal college.

Rector Williams, by reason of indispositions, October 31, 1739, resigned, returned to his own estate in Wethersfield, and was employed in a civil and military capacity. The reverend, learned, worthy, and mathematically ingenious Mr. Thomas Clap, minister of Windham, succeeded; and in April 1740, gave his assent to the Seabrook articles 1708, of faith and discipline; he had been 14 years minister of Windham, he was installed rector: his first essay was to form a new body of laws, and to place the books of the library in a proper distinct order, to be with facility come at; this catalogue is printed.

1742, the general assembly augmented the annual grant to the college, whereby they were enabled to support three tutors and a rector, (formerly one tutor carried on two classes) the president requires considerable encouragement, as he is obliged to perform the office of president, professor of divinity, professor of mathematicks, and of a tutor in ordinary.

1744, Anthony Nougier of Fairfield, by will left to the college 27 l. sterl. to be put to interest.

The assembly was petitioned by the trustees, for a new and more perfect charter, whereby the college was to be incorporated by the name of the president and fellows (not trustees) of Yale college in New-Haven. This was approved of by the name of an act for the  
more



more full and compleat establishment of Yale college, &c. dated May 9, 1745, it is ordained, 1. That † Thomas Clap, Samuel Whitman, Jared Eliot, Ebenezer Williams, Jonathan Marsh, Samuel Cooke, Samuel Wittlesey, Joseph Noyes, Anthony Stoddard, Benjamin Lord and Daniel Wadsworth, are a body corporate and politick by the name of the president and fellows of Yale college in New-Haven, with succession. 2. All former donations to this collegiate school, though in various expressions, are confirmed and vested in the said president and fellows, with succession. 3. That the foresaid president and fellows shall continue during life, or until they resign, or are displaced. 4. There shall be a general meeting of the president and fellows annually second Wednesday of September, the major vote of the members present shall be definitive; in case of an equivote, the president shall have a casting vote. 5. The president and fellows, six at least, concurring, may remove and appoint in their room a president and fellows, a clerk, a treasurer, tutors, professors, steward, and other necessary servants. 6. That the president, fellows, tutors, professors, and all other officers, before they enter upon the execution of their office, shall publickly take the oaths, and subscribe the declaration appointed, 1 Georgii I. 7. The corporation may appoint from time to time regulations not repugnant to the laws of England or of the colony, but may be disallowed by the general assembly. 8. The corporation may confer degrees as in other colleges. 9. All estates belonging to the college, (if real, not exceeding the value of 500 l. sterl. per ann.) all members and resident officers of the college, tutors and students, are exempted from rates, military service,

† This is an ingenious gentleman, mathematically learned; at this time, 1750, contriving some compendiums and other improvements in astronomical calculations. Many of the students (students in college about 80) are expert in astronomical calculations, from the solid good tuition and instruction of the worthy Mr. Clap, a credit to the colony.



working upon the high ways, &c. 10. A grant of 100 l. proclamation money annually during the pleasure of the assembly.

1745, Philip Livingston, Esq; of the king's council of New-York, as he had four sons educated in this college, gave 200 l. currency, to begin a foundation for a professor of divinity, to be called Livingstonian professor of divinity.

1746, Mr. Samuel Lambert of New-London, merchant or dealer, left some lands to the college, but from some intricacies in his affairs, they turned to no great account, excepting about 100 acres in Wallingford, and 62 acres in New-Haven.

There were a great many smaller donations from time to time, which in a summary are not to be enumerated, and for the same reasons I am obliged to omit the lists, from the foundation to this time, of the successive rectors or presidents, trustees, treasurers and tutors.

1748, upon a motion of the president, the general assembly ordered a new college to be built at a publick colony charge, 100 feet long, and 40 feet wide, 8 rooms on a floor, 3 stories high, besides garrets and cellars.

The regulations as to the degrees of batchelors and masters are the same as in Harvard college of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, see vol. II. p. 546.

This college at New-Haven thrives much; in Sept. 1749, there commenced 11 masters and 23 batchelors; at Cambridge in Massachusetts-Bay, July 1749, there commenced only 9 masters and 22 batchelors, though a college of much longer standing, and in a large government: at that time it was observed by many, that every thing in the province of Massachusetts-Bay was upon the decline, attributed to the late bad civil administration.



## Mountains and Rivers.

Connecticut is generally broken land, that is, hills and dales, but well watered. Simsbury or the copper mine hills are their highest lands, but not fertile, as it is said of all metallick ore hills.

The noted rivers and runs of water in Connecticut are, 1. Those which fall into Thames river or New-London long creek. 2. Connecticut river with its branches. 3. Housatonic river with its branches, which at Stratford falls into Long-Island sound. Paukatuke river which divides Rhode-Island colony from Connecticut colony, and Byram river which divides Connecticut colony from the province of New-York, are of no consideration. 4 Upon the Long-Island sound is a range of townships.

1. Thames river is a long navigable creek of about 14 miles, the head of it is in Norwich; this is the barcadier for the easterly parts of Connecticut, and in time may be the principal trading place of the colony; at present the township of Norwich pays the highest tax of any township in the colony, and consists of five or six parishes. From Connecticut river to the eastern boundary of the colony, is an extraordinary well watered country, consisting of two principal rivers and their branchings, which fall into the bottom of this creek in Norwich, these two rivers are Satucket and higher Wilemantick, and Quenebaug. Quenebaug rises in Brimfield, passes through Sturbridge, and Dudley in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, thence in the colony of Connecticut it divides Pomfret from Killingley, Canterbury from Plainfield, and in Norwich falls into Sakatuke river which discharges into Thames river or creek: this river from Brimfield of Massachusetts-Bay, in its course in Thompson parish of Killingley of Connecticut receives French river from Leicester and Oxford, and further in Killingley receives five mile river, whereof Honeycomb Brook comes from Douglas, and Muddy Brook from Woodstock, next Nathomy brook



brook from Pomfret, Mousashop river from Valington, Rouland's brook in Canterbury, and many other runs of water too minute to be mentioned : Quenebaug river falls into Satucket river a few miles before it discharges into the said creek. Satucket river where it originates in Brimfield is called Willemantick river, and in Stafford of Connecticut receives several small runs of water, it divides Toland from Willington, and Coventry from Mansfield ; in Windham (where it is called Windham river) it receives in its western side Scagungamog river and Hope river, on its western side it receives Manchoag river which had received Fenton river, and higher had received in Ashford Bigelow river, Still river and Bungea river from Union and Woodstock ; in Norwich it received Quenebaug river, as above.

2. Connecticut river with its branches and townships upon the river, its branches are enumerated, vol. I. p. 459, &c. in the section of Massachusetts-Bay.

3. Housatonick, Westenhock, or Stratford river, see vol. I. p. 456.

4. Upon the Long-Island sound is a delightful and profitable range of good townships, the glory of all our American plantations, Stonington, Groton, New-London, Lyme, Saybrook, Killingworth, Guilford, Brentford, New-Haven, Milford, Stratford, Fairfield, Norwalk, Stamford, and Greenwich.

As the governors are annually elective, that is, very variable, I shall not mention such temporary matters ; only observe, that the Winthrop family has for many years been the most noted in New-England : Mr. Winthrop was the first resident governor of Massachusetts-Bay, his son John Winthrop, Esq; procured the present charter of Connecticut colony, and was their charter or first governor, and afterwards their elective governor for many



many years; this man's son John was successively governor for many years, he died æt. 69, November 27, 1707, was born in Ipswich of New-England 1638; Gurdon Saltonstall, a worthy man, a congregationalist preacher, was elected in his room, and was with good content successive governor, elected for many years till death, October 1724, was succeeded by Joseph Talcot, Esq; &c.

Currencies, I refer to the appendix; at present only observe, that the 28,000 l. sterl. reimbursement, and rates of seven pence per annum, will cancel all their paper currency, in two or three years. †

\* In New-England, we are still in confusion as to our paper currencies; governor Sh—y's precipitate scheme of 1749, has had a bad effect, nothing could be rather excepting the Cape-Breton expedition, where the chance against us was vastly great, but beyond all human probability successful; the unexpected intervention of some British men of war under the direction of Mr. Warren, alleviates the miraculousness of the affair; it pecculated and depopulated New-England, occasioned near one million sterling additional national debt to the kingdom of Great-Britain, and finally was restored to the French in a better state than statu quo. Perhaps the Ch—cto settlement in Nova-Scotia as a barrier against the Canada and Cape-Breton French with their Indians, at present carried on with much vigour, may turn to the same bad account as G—gia (which God forbid) said to be a barrier against our southern enemies the Spaniards, and their Indians. Mysteries of state I do not pretend to explore or explain, quæ supra nos non ad nos; the soil adjacent to Ch—cto is so irrecoverably bad, it can never be a PLANTATION; it may answer as a good fishing village, or may, as a place of arms, be supported at a great charge: I do not say this was a political amusement, to divert people (by giving them something to play with in their imaginations) from canvassing the surrender of Cape-Breton without any equivalent to the British nation, not so much as an explicit confirmation of the cession of Nova-Scotia, or L'Accadie.

That New-England is still in confusion, appears, 1. By the assembly of Massachusetts-Bay being perhaps obliged to dispense with an act of their own, confirmed by the king in council, and to prolong the time for cancelling their province bills: the generality of the responsible merchants of Rhode-Island, though they have always declared against multiplying of a depreciating currency, in a memorial to the general assembly of Rhode-Island, say, though the act December



I shall here insert abstracts of some of their laws exemplary, natural, plain, and concise, adapted to plantations.

In the late authoritative revival (1750) of their municipal laws; the introductory law or act, is, in the manner of a magna charta, securing the general privileges of his majesty's subjects in the colony, in these words, "Be it enacted, &c. that no man's life shall be taken away, no man's honour or good name shall be stained, no man's person shall be arrested, restrained, banished, dismembered, or otherwise punished; no man shall be deprived of his wife and children; no man's goods or estate shall be taken away from him, nor any ways indamaged under the colour of law, or countenance of authority; unless it be by virtue or equity of some express law of the colony warranting the same, established by the general court, and sufficiently published. In case of defect of such laws in any particular case, by some clear and plain rule warranted by the word of God.

All his majesty's subjects within this colony, whether they be inhabitants or not, shall enjoy the same justice and law, that is general for the colony, in all cases proper for civil authority, and courts of judicature in the same; and that without partiality or delay.

That no man's person shall be restrained or imprisoned

1748 of Massachusetts-Bay for drawing in their publick bills of credit, was in a too violent and hasty manner. 2. The colony of Rhode-Island this spring, 1751, have emitted 100,000 l. currency with a greater interest and to be cancelled after ten years; this is a step towards reformation.

Connecticut continues honest. New-Hampshire always inclinable to a depreciating fraudulent paper currency, from a difference between their governor and house of representatives, formerly mentioned vol. II. p. 34, have had no legislative capacity for some time, and consequently incapable of augmenting their paper currency, much to the detriment of their governor, who by consenting to such emissions, might have obtained an addition to his salary.



by any authority whatsoever, before the law hath sentenced him thereunto; if he can and will give or put in sufficient security, bail or mainprize for his appearance and good behaviour in the mean time, unless it be for capital crimes, contempt in open court, or in such cases where some exprefs law doth allow or order the same.

No person, except in his own case, other than a qualified attorney, is allowed to plead at the bar: in cases not exceeding 5 l. one attorney only is allowed: in larger cases, two attornies and no more.

Each town shall have a peculiar brand for their horses on the near or left shoulder.

All casks shall be of the London assize, viz. butts, 126 gallons, puncheons, 84 gallons, hogsheads, 63 gallons, tierces, 42 gallons, barrels 31 and half gallons.

Miller's allowance for grinding per bushel, three quarts Indian corn, two quarts other grain, one quart malt.

Every town to have a sealer of weights and measures.

In Connecticut, as generally among the congregationalists of New-England, according to the jewish manner, they begin and end the Lord's day at the setting of the sun.

Here are about 150 established ministers called presbyterians, congregationalists, and consociated; besides conscientious dissenters, said not to be established but tolerated. In some townships are many parishes or precincts.

In all our colonies voluntary associations (most of which may afterwards be confirmed or incorporated by provincial or colony charters) towards academies and libraries, ought to be encouraged.

The civilizing and christianizing of the Indians was one great and professed condition in all our royal grants.

I do not endeavour a strict pedantick narration; but though in a common place manner, I shall observe some method.

Common interest is 6 per cent per ann. letting of cattle and maritime affairs excepted.



In all our plantations, colonies, and provinces; they abound with civil and military titles of judges, squires, colonels, majors, and captains; gratifications for being of a governor's party, or by a pecuniary interest.

By an act of the assembly of Connecticut, in building of vessels, no timbers or plank to be allowed other than white oak and rock oak, except for the deck and ceiling.

In New-England, particularly in Massachusetts-Bay, it is not only the depreciating of the currencies by enormous paper credit emissions called money, but the scarcity of labourers from vast expeditions unprofitable and ruinous to the colonies. In manufactures, our labour is so dear, that we cannot afford our goods any where at market, so cheap as other plantations or countries may. It is not scarcity of provision or depreciations only, but chiefly scarcity of labourers and consequently advance of labour: that in bricks, where the difference is only in labour, about 40 years since they were sold at one piece of 8 per thousand, at present they are sold at three pieces of 8.

Concerning the TENURE OF LANDS. All grants of colony lands by the general assembly shall be according to the most free tenure of East-Greenwich in the county of Kent in England, conform to our charter grant. All townships, and farms, to particular persons, shall be from the general assembly by patent signed by the governor and secretary with the colony seal. Title of lands to be tried in the county where the lands lay. All estates for ministry, schools, and charitable uses, are free from payment of rates.

Three freeholders appointed by the court of probates to divide real estate among legatees or heirs of intestates. No Indian title without the approbation of the general assembly to be pleadable. Proprietors having lost their bounds, three freeholders appointed and sworn by a justice of the peace, may set up and fix the bounds, but



with appeal. In devise of real estate, wills to be witnessed by three persons in the presence of the testators. Guardians to minors with some persons appointed by the court of probate may divide lands with the surviving partners. Lands held in partnership to be divided by a writ of partition. Persons presuming to sell Indian rights of lands not confirmed by the general court, fine 50*l*. and the persons wronged by such sales to recover treble damages. All grants and divisions of lands heretofore made by ancient custom of town-meetings shall be good and valid though without consent of the proprietors act May 9, 1723. Hereafter undivided common lands shall belong to the proprietors exclusive of other inhabitants, which proprietors may have their own meetings to manage such undivided lands. Sales of lands devised to be sold by executors, shall be good and valid, though some of the executors do not join in the sale. Five proprietors of undivided lands may obtain a meeting to be called by a justice's warrant. All estates though accruing by wife, formerly sold by the husband alone, (act bears date Oct. 10, 1723) the deeds shall be valid, but for the future no such deed shall be valid without the wife's consent by hand and seal. Proprietors of land in common, may make rates to defray necessary charges. By an act of parliament 1732, in any actions in the plantations, when one of the parties plaintiff or defendant resides in Great-Britain, evidences to prove any matter or thing, may be taken in Great-Britain before any chief magistrates where the party resides, which certified and transmitted, shall be good as if done viva voce in open court in the plantations; and all houses, lands, negroes, and other hereditaments, as by the laws of England, shall in the plantations be liable to satisfy debts: where an administrator makes it appear, that the deceased's personal estate is not sufficient to satisfy the debts, the assembly may direct his real estate to be sold towards paying of his debts. Partition of lands not to be valid till surveyed and recorded. No deed of



real estate is compleat until it be signed, sealed, witnessed, acknowledged and recorded.

No lands to be bought of Indians without consent of the general assembly. † No Indian to be sued for debt. No indenture for service made by an Indian, shall be valid, unless acknowledged before authority.

Debtors. Any book debt not accounted for with the original debtor in seven years, shall not be pleadable after the debtor's death.

Upon execution issued, the sheriff shall at the usual place of the debtor's abode demand the debt; upon non-payment he shall levy the execution upon the moveables (necessary apparel, household stuff, tools, and arms excepted) and set up a list of said goods upon the town post, to be sold by out-cry after twenty days. In want of goods, and upon the creditor's refusing lands, the debtor's body may be seized. May levy execution upon real estate valued by appraisers. All executions are returnable in sixty days, or to the next court.

Debtors committed to jail, swearing that they have not estate to the value of five pounds, shall be subsisted by the creditors at a certain rate. Debtors and felons to be kept separate. The county sheriffs to have the custody of the jails.

As to absent or absconding debtors, if no estate is to be found, the debtor's agent, or usual place of abode, may be served with a writ; if no debtor nor agent appear, the writ may be continued to next court, and if need be to one court further, and then judgment to be rendered for the plaintiff, and execution granted upon the debtor's effects wherever found: persons conceal-

† The assembly 1722, confirmed a purchase made six or seven years since from the Mohagan Indians upon the Mohagan hills, part of their reserved lands, to governor Saltonstall, major Livingston, Dennie, Rogers, and Bradshaw; this was constituted the north parish of New-London.



ing the goods of absconding or absent debtors, are liable to satisfy the debt sued for.

No writ of error shall be brought for the reversal of any judgment after the space of three years, and no review upon a writ of error.

The estates of deceased insolvent debtors to be distributed in equal proportions to the creditors; debts to the government, sickness, and general charges being first paid; saving to the widow (if any) her household goods and dower during her life, and upon her death to be distributed among the creditors. A certain time allowed for receiving claims, the commissioners to be appointed by the judge of probates: creditors not bringing in their claims during that certain time allowed, are forever excluded.

No action to be brought for bill, bond, or note, but within the space of seventeen years. No action of trespass or defamation (fine for defamation not to exceed ten pounds) but within three years.

Any debtor in a debt not exceeding 20 l. may confess judgment before a single justice.

**Criminal affairs.** The governor, deputy governor, or three assistants, may reprieve a condemned malefactor to next general court or assembly.

The capital crimes are conspiracy against the colony, rape, bestiality, sodomy, false-witness in cases of life and death, wilfully firing houses, disfiguring, or dismembering the private parts, and wilful murder, blasphemy, Deism, first offence incapacity of any employment, second offence outlawed.

All complaints and presentments, to be made within one year after the offence is committed, excepting in capital crimes; dismembering is banishment, and theft exceeding ten shillings.

All fines imposed by the general court or assembly, and by the superior court, belong to the colony treasury; imposed by the county court, belong to the county



county treasury ; imposed by an assistant or justice, belonging to the township treasuries.

Tavern offences, see the paragraph of excise.

A bill of divorce and liberty to marry again, may be granted by the superior courts, in cases of adultery, fraudulent contract, wilful desertion for three years, or seven years absence not heard of.

Single persons committing fornication to be fined 33 s. or whipped, not exceeding ten stripes ; anti-nuptial fornication only half penalty.

Every person playing at dice, cards, or tables, fine 20 s.

Forgery. Three days publick pillory, double damages to the injured party, and incapable of being an evidence in law. The form of their oath is, You swear by the the name of the ever-living God.

All kind of delinquents to pay the charge of presentation, guilty or not guilty.

Perjury 20 l. fine, and six months imprisonment ; if unable to pay his fine, shall sit in the pillory with both ears nailed, and incapable of giving evidence.

Lord's day, penalties ; neglecting of the publick worship, working or playing on the Lord's day, 10 s. rude behaviour, disturbing the publick worship, 40 s. travelling, 20 s. going abroad excepting to publick worship, 5 s. no vessels to sail excepting upon extraordinary occasions, 30 s. and several other particulars ; refusing to pay shall be publickly whipped.

Theft, to forfeit threefold, and a discretionary fine, not exceeding 40 s. and if the value amount to 20 s. and upwards, shall also be whipped not exceeding ten stripes ; if the offender cannot pay, the person may be sold for a certain term of years service : penalty for receiving or concealing stolen goods, is the same ; buying goods of slaves, penalty is treble value, service or whipping.



Riots. \* Three or more persons assembled together, to do an unlawful act; if they obstruct the proclamation in reading, or do not disperse after proclamation made by a proper officer, shall be punished by fine not exceeding 10 l. for each person, and imprisonment not exceeding six months, or by whipping not exceeding 40 stripes: if any rioter is killed or hurt by any person of the posse, such person is indemnified. The prosecution must be within twelve months. The sheriff, if need be, may raise the militia in his aid.

Manlaughter (without premeditated malice) but wilful; penalty, forfeiture of goods, burnt in the hand with letter M, whipped, and disabled from being evidence in law.

Lascivious carriage may be punished at discretion by

\* About thirty years since, there was a riot act made in New-Hampshire.

In the province of Massachusetts-Bay, the violent, hasty, and rash manner of calling in all their publick credit bills in the space of one year by act of assembly, which had been gradually emitted in the course of fifty years, was found impracticable, and was like to have produced a general tumult: this occasioned the making of a riot act, February 14, 1750-1, to be in force for three years, viz. where any persons to the number of twelve, armed with clubs, or other weapons, or any number of persons consisting of men, armed or not armed, shall be unlawfully riotously assembled; any justice of peace, field officer, or captain of the militia, sheriff, under sheriff, or constable, shall make proclamation to disperse; if they do not disperse within an hour, every such officer with assistance, may carry them before a justice, and if in resisting any person is hurt, or killed, the officers and assistants are indemnified: persons not dispersing in the space of one hour, shall forfeit to the king all his lands and chattels, or such part thereof at the discretion of the justice for the use of the province, and be whipped thirty-nine stripes, one year's imprisonment, and receive the same number of stripes once every three months during his imprisonment. Demolishing houses the same punishment or penalty. This act to be read every general sessions of the peace, and anniversary meeting of each town; no prosecution after twelve months; the judges may abate the whole or any part of the whipping.

In the colony of Rhode-Island, there are no riot acts, because, as generally supposed, they are inconsistent with their constitution.



the county court ; by fine, house of correction, or corporal punishment.

Burglary or robbery ; penalty is branding, ears cut off, and whipping : third offence is death.

Counterfeiting or altering publick bills of credit of this or of the neighbouring colonies ; penalty, cutting off ears, branding, and work-house for life, estates forfeited, and to be debarred of all trade. Any society presuming to emit bills of credit to be used in trade, to be punished as in case of counterfeiting ; the utterer to forfeit double the same.

Criminal persons making their escape from the authority of other provincial governments to this government, may be remanded back to the place of perpetration.

The colony acts relating to the religious observation of the first day of the week, Sunday, sabbath-day or Lord's-day, perhaps are too puritanical ; they seem to droop gradually, I shall not revive them.

Any person of the age of discretion (which is 14 æt.) publishing a lie to the prejudice of the common-wealth, or damage of private persons, to be fined, stocks, or whipping.

Apprentices and servants æt. 15 or upwards, absconding from their master's service, shall serve three times of their absence. Servants or apprentices flying from the cruelty of their masters, may be protected by a magistrate and discharged from their service.

A woman delivered of a child, afterwards found dead, if she cannot prove, at least by one witness, that such child was born dead, the mother shall be accounted guilty of murder.

Any slave or Indian striking a white man, penalty whipping, not exceeding thirty stripes.

Penalty for persons who resist, or abuse any king's officer, fine not exceeding 10 l.

Cursing or swearing ; penalty 6s. or the stocks. Every  
householder



householder to have at least one bible, orthodox catechism, and other books of practical godliness.

A house of correction to be established in each county, two thirds of their earnings towards their support, and one third for other charges.

Penalty for selling strong liquor to an Indian 10 s. per pint; drunkenness and idleness are the general vices of Indians. An Indian convicted of drunkenness, penalty 5 s. or 10 lashes. All the Indians in a township shall be mustered once a year, and the requisite laws read to them. All English families taking Indian children into their families, shall teach them to read English, and instruct them in the principles of the christian religion; for every three months neglect, a discretionary fine not exceeding 30 s.

The laws relating to the observation of sabbath day and regulation of publick worship are severe; and too many to be inserted here; these are under the inspection of the grand jury, tything men, and constables.

Private lotteries, and wagers to vend goods, forfeiture is the value of the goods.

Parish churches of the established religions (presbyterians, congregationalists, and consociated ministers) are under the direction of the county courts; tolerated dissenters from those professions are left at large.

Any Indian, molatto, or negroe travelling without a pass, may be seized as a runaway.

Schools are well regulated, and have a colony allowance. Every ecclesiastical society of 70 families or upwards, shall have a school for the instruction of children to read and write. A grammar school to every head or county town. One college or schola illustris in the colony.

There are severe penalties for cutting down of trees, or firing of woods and lands; the accused, where there is no proof, must exculpate himself by oath.



## A DIGRESSION,

Concerning North-America grain and grazing, with a few occasional remarks relating to natural history, especially as to the seasons, winds, and weather, in a loose miscellany common place manner.

Connecticut is a good country as to climate and soil; and is valuable for grain and pasture. Any country is happy, where the meaner inhabitants are plentifully and wholesomely fed; warmly and decently cloathed: thus it is in Connecticut.

Upon the first arrival of Europeans in America, the Indians bread kind were only the mays or Indian corn of the cerealia or grain, and the phaseolus or kidney beans called Indian or French beans of the legumina or pulse kind. \* Besides they eat earth-nuts of several kinds, berries of many kinds, and variety of mast, † too numerous to be enumerated and described in a summary. As also their hunting of sundry kinds of quadrupeds or beasts, moose, deer, &c. their fowling, especially of birds, webfooted; their catching of river, pond, and sea fish, especially of the testaceous.

As the frumentum Indicum, or Indian corn, was their principal subsistence, though not spontaneous, but cultivated, I cannot avoid giving some particular description and account of it; hitherto it has not been minutely describ'd. It has with much impropriety been called frumentum Saracenicum; properly, frumentum Saracenicum (from the Saracens country in Barbary) is buck-wheat, and at present is cultivated by the Dutch in the govern-

\* The Indians upon the shore, used the pisum maritimum spontaneum perenne humile repens; beach pease; flowers end of May; it resembles that of marison. H. Ox. 2. 43.

† Masts, from masticare, are several sorts of forest-nuts, chesnut, walnut, hazle-nut, and the like.



ment of New-York for hasty pudding, and as provender for horses.

Its most profitable culture is in light sandy land, with a small intermixture of loam, it requires sand heat, such as is that of pitch pine or huckle-berry lands. Though a hungry grain, it requires much and repeated labour. It is first plowed, then cross plowed, next harrowed all smooth, then furrowed and cross furrowed; at proper distances of about four feet at the intersections in hollows are dropt five or six seed grains (a peck sows or plants one acre) and by the hoe covered with earth the end of April and beginning of May; soon after its first appearance, it is plowed two furrows lengthways between each row of grain, and by the hoe the weeds are brought towards the grain; this is called the first weeding; after some time it is cross plowed two furrows between each planted row, and by the hoe the earth and weeds are brought to the corn, this is called half-hilling; next it is plowed lengthways, as before, two furrows, and by the hoe the earth is brought to the roots, and forms a hill to prevent the winds eradicating of it; sometimes it is hoed a fourth time: in middle of August the grain becomes mellow fit for roasting, a sort of delicacy in the sugar-islands, called mutton: it emits its coma, plume, or blooms, end of June; then they cut off the top of the stalks, that the grain may receive the more nourishment. † A wet summer makes it run too much into stalks and leaves, which starves the ears. End of September and beginning of October the ears are hand gathered, the tops are very agreeable to cattle for fodder.

† Here the farina fecundans of vegetables seems to be evinced: this plume or flower, if cut off before its maturity, the mays bears no ear or grain. In New-England where the grain is of various colours (white, yellow, reds of several shades, blues of several shades, marbled, and mixtures of these in the same ears) the grains planted of various colours, and in the neighbourhood receive alterations in their colours or shades by the various impregnations: this is observable also in other vegetables, beets, carrots, &c.



The ears have 8, 10, 12, 14 rows of grain, the more rows, the better is the grain; some say there has been 18 rows, but none under 8 rows.

Indian corn does not weigh so heavy as New-England wheat; their Indian corn at a medium is in weight 45 lb. their wheat 55 lb. per bushel. The Virginia Indian corn is white and flat, yielding a better or whiter meal; the New-England corn is of a pale yellow, smaller but thicker, and answers better in fatning of beeves, hogs, and other stock; Virginia corn is planted at greater distances, being of greater growth, and is all white; in New-England and Canada it is generally of a pale yellow, does not bear so many ears as that of Virginia, it is of a lesser habit and quicker growth. The Indian corn of New-England at a medium produces 25 bushels per acre, and ripens in a shorter time; || (this a providence in nature, because their hot seasons are shorter) the Virginia seed in New-England does not ripen into grain, as requiring a longer growth than the New-England seasons do allow. The West-India or sugar islands have per ann. two crops of Indian corn planted May and September: in our continent we have only one crop planted in May. Capt. Hill of Douglass by way of experiment planted Indian corn, middle of June, it was ripe middle of August in a hot season. End of April they begin to plow; Indian corn harvest is beginning of October; when it begins to be in the ear, rain or drizle occasions a smut.

The phaseolus; which we call Indian beans or French beans, because the French from the Canada Indians were the first in propagating them. \* It is the phaseolus

|| Thus in Lapland and the northern parts of Sweden, barley from sowing ripens two weeks sooner than at Stockholm; and in New-England, Indian corn ripens in a fewer days from planting or sowing than in Virginia.

\* When English pease (*pisum majus flore fructu albo. C. B. P.*) sell at three, these Indian beans sell in proportion at two; they are more



*seolus Indicus fructu tumidiore minore niveas et versicolor.* Morison, tab. 4. sect. 2. They are generally white, and there is an indefinite number of simple colours and variations or marblings.

In New-England (some parts of Connecticut excepted) the general subsistence of the poorer people (which contributes much towards their endemial pforick disorders) is salt pork and Indian beans, with bread of Indian corn meal, and pottage of this meal with milk for breakfast and supper.

For the varieties of *phaseolus* called Indian beans, *calavances* and *bonavist*, see vol. I. p. 122, and the sections further south.

Connecticut wheat is full of cockle †. 20 bushels per acre is a good crop. It is said, in Canada they sow no winter grain. New-England wheat is subject to blast; some think that it proceeds from the *farina fecundans* of adjacent barberry bushes. ‡

Our best wheat is from Virginia and Maryland, next best is from Pensylvania, 55 lb. to 60 lb. per bushel, and casts whiter than the English wheat; the further north the flour casts the darker; Nova-Scotia wheat casts almost as dark as rye. Some years since in a scarcity of wheat in New-England, some was imported from England; from the long westward passages it became musty, cast dark, and did not answer.

In New-England the allowance to a baker of ship-

more colicky than pease: the tribe of the *phaseolus* is very large; some years since, Peter Coelart in Holland cultivated above 100 distinct species. The cow itch, as we pronounce it, is the cow-hege of Zura in the East-Indies: *phaseolus filiquis hirsutis, pilis pungentibus*.

† *Lychnis segetum major.* C. B. P.

‡ *Barberis latissimo folio Canadensis.* H. R. P. it is plenty all over North-America, it is of a larger habit than that of Europe, is 10 to 12 feet high; it is used as hedges, but spreads too much into suckers. There is a law in Connecticut, p. 13. for destroying these bushes, they are thought "to be very hurtful by occasioning, or at least increasing the blasting of English grain."



biscuit is 3 bushels and quarter wheat for 112 lb. wt. of biscuit, besides — per ct. wt. for baking.

Herrings \* have formerly been taken notice of.

In New-England some oxen of 18 ct. wt. and hogs of 25 score have been killed; Connecticut salt pork is the best of America; they finish the fatning of their hogs with Indian meal.

In New-England their barley is a hungry lean grain, and affords no good malt liquor; molosses is the principal ingredient in all their buvrage. Their barley of four rows called French barley is not so good as that of two rows called English barley. Their oats are lean, chaffy, and of a dark colour.

In New-England they sow their winter grain 3d and 4th weeks of August.

In New-England, after gathering in their common grain, flax, &c. the first natural appearance of indigenous plants is *panicum non cristatum spica multiplici*, *ambrosia*, and *virga aurea annua Virginiana Zanoni*. Near Boston and other great towns, some field plants which accidentally have been imported from Europe, spread much, and are a great nuisance in pastures, such as *ranunculus pratensis repens hirsutus*, C. B. P. Butter cups, *bellis major*. I. B. the greater wild white daisy, *dens leonis*. Ger. dandelyon, &c. at present they have spread inland from Boston, about 30 miles.

Great-Britain and New-England, though differing about 10 d. in lat. seem to be of the same temperature: New-England is somewhat colder in winter and warmer in summer, from the vast land continent N. W. of it,

\* Upon the coast of Great-Britain, the herring fishery begins a little before midsummer; they emerge or make their first appearance off Crane-head in Brassa-Sound N. Lat. 61 and half d. from thence gradually proceed south to Dogger-Bank, where that summer fishery ends: the winter fishery begins off Yarmouth, and continues about 70 days, they proceed southward, and are caught in plenty about the Thames mouth until the latter end of January.

which



which receives and communicates continually (therefore with intenseness,) by the lambent air these different temperatures of the seasons. N. W. is our general or natural wind. 1. After storms or perturbations of our ambient air from any point of the compass, being expended, the wind settles N. W. 2. All our spring and summer sea breezes, return to the N. W. 3. In middle of February 1731-2, called the cold Tuesday (the most intense insupportable cold I ever felt) the wind was at N. W. It is not easily accounted for, that in different countries though the temperature of the air be nearly the same, the natural growth of plants differs much, v. g. the bellis minor or lesser wild daisy, a native of Great-Britain, abound there from 50 d. to 60 d. of lat. but will not grow in North-America. All of the cucurbitaceous kind, pompions, &c. (Mr. H—y an ecclesiastical mountebank, in his farces called oratory, calls the New-England people pompionites) by cultivation without the force of hot beds grow well, but in Great-Britain requires force.

In a new country there may be a tax upon improved lands, as a fund for premiums to encourage the clearing and planting of wilderness lands for the first year; the second and third year are the next profitable for produce, and requires no bounty, and afterwards, especially in New-England, it ought to be smoothed and lay for pasturage.

In New-England, two acres cow-pen land may raise about a tun of hemp, but is soon exhausted.

Locusts, called grasshoppers, and a species of caterpillars, some years are very noxious to our pastures; in the summer 1749, a small locust, with a drought destroyed our herbage; they generally prevail June and July.

Lands in New-England which yield at a medium 20 ct. wt. of hay are the best, if 40 ct. wt. the hay is rank and four; some fresh meadows, if mowed more than once, yield greater quantities. In mowing lands an uniformity of grass ought to be attended to and endeavoured, because some grasses ripen soon, and are upon



the decline before others attain a perfection for mowing. End of June and beginning of July the height of upland or English hay harvest is over; third and fourth weeks of August they mow their salt-meadow hay. Salt-hay is from salt or spring-tide marshes; fresh hay is the natural growth of inland marshes; English or upland hay, is the herbage imported from Europe. † New-England crops or produce are very uncertain, for instance of hay, in the spring 1750, it sold for 4l. New-England currency, in the spring 1751, it sells for 15 s. per ct. wt. Two acres, if good, is a cowland.

Cyder is a considerable produce for consumption and exportation; when distilled, it does not yield above one twelfth spirit; end of August they begin to make a mean sort of cyder from the windfalls.

Turneps sowed in any latitude thrive, even in Davis's Straits or West-Greenland; our best New-England turneps are from new lands N. E. from Boston.

Some remarks relating to the natural history of New-England.

The seasons from year to year are better determined by some passenger birds and fish, than by the blossoming of trees, and flowering of some inferior vegetables; for instance, swallows constantly arrive from the southward in the second week of April with a latitude of only two or three days; peaches sometimes blossom beginning of April, in some years not till beginning of May, a latitude of 30 days. Anno 1735, last day of December, 1st and 2d of January, fell about 20 inches of light snow, wind N. W. northerly, followed by a very hard frost, and peaches did not begin to blossom

† In hot countries they make no hay; it dries too quick, dry rots and turns to dust. In some parts of North-America, the winters are too long and cold, and in other parts too hot for grass, consequently can afford no quantity of provender for cattle, and will never be beef countries.



till May 7. Anno 1719, the beginning of winter was very severe; peaches did not blossom the spring following.

End of autumn and beginning of winter, if dry, follows a mild winter; but if falling weather, rain, or snow (freezing inland is a basis for snow to lodge and chill the winds from N. to W.) produces hard freezing in our plantations, which are to leeward. 1731-2, Feb. 14 and 15, *tinctura sacra* froze, the coldest weather I ever felt, after a flight of hail and snow, the wind from S. came suddenly to the N. W. 1732, April 5, wind N. E. northerly falls about 14 inches snow, soon dissolved, a great storm at sea; 1751, April 6, all day a heavy fleaky snow, but soon dissolved. Travelling in Connecticut from Pennsylvania, 1716 June 26, finger cold, roads froze, ice thick as a crown-piece, Indian corn beginning to bloom is hurt. \*

Mackarel † set in second week of May, lean, and seem to eat muddy. Some are caught all summer; there is a second setting in for autumn, fat and delicious eating; they are a N. lat. fish, and are not to be found south of New-England; beginning of July for a short time they disappear or will not take the bait.

Herrings (a bad kind) set in middle of May, they seem to be whimsical or variable as to their ground.

Frogs seem to be dormant, as are snakes in the winter or very cold season; we have three species of frogs, ra-

\* The northerly and N. E. snows, as being from the sea, are softer and milder, than those from the north westerly land continent. Great snows lodged in the woods westward, covered from the dissolving influence of the sun, by their chill retard our springs; it is a vulgar error, that the snows lodged upon the ice of our western great lakes is the occasion; from the observations of a curious gentleman, an officer belonging to the four independent companies stationed in the province of New-York, who commanded the garrison at Oswego upon the lake Ontario about three years, I find that the great lakes are never frozen over, and consequently cannot lodge snow.

† Hook mackarel for a market are preferable to those caught by seins which bruise one another.



*na viridis arborea*, the green-tree frog; the *rana terrestris et aquatica*; the *rana maxima Americana aquatica*, the bull frog.

1719-20, January 7, the coldest of days; wind at N. W. snow laying about one foot deep; Charles-Town ferry (tide runs 4 or 5 knots) froze over in 24 hours, passable on the ice (no weather, it is said, so cold, since winter 1697) continued extreme cold to the 14th. This year the peaches did not blossom.

Wild geese fly to the southward middle of September, and return beginning of March; a wild goose may yield half lb. feathers; six brants yield 1 lb. feathers. Cuckows return beginning of April. †

In the winter season, we have from 15 to 20 days at times, a frost so severe, as in chambers to freeze the ink.

In maritime places, as are all our North-America colonies, the weather is variable, according as the wind blows from the sea or inland; in islands it is more constant, because all winds do come from the sea; as also inland countries, as is Canada, their winds are all from the land, and consequently of the same nature.

The New-England winters generally set in end of October and beginning of November, and are over middle of March; the extreme frosts are from Christmas to middle of February; the very hot weather is in the first weeks of July.

Early winters are generally severe and long. 1732, the rivers froze up middle of November, and continued froze until end of March, many cattle die for want of provender.

Mr. Thomas Robie, a fellow in Cambridge college of New-England, an ingenious accurate observer, com-

† In Europe the cuckows, passenger birds, arrive generally beginning of April, therefore the first day of April is called fools day; this bird is so foolish as not to have any exclusive nest; hence silly married men whose wives are not exclusive but common, are called cuckold, kockoek, or cocu.



paring with Mr. Derham's observations at Upminster in England, found that winds continuing long in one quarter, especially if strong, were nearly the same in both places, allowing some days for their passage from one place to the other.

Salmon are a high latitude fish, they are not to be found south of New-England; the further south the later they set in, and continue a shorter time; for instance, in Connecticut river they set in beginning of May and continue only about three weeks; in Merrimack river they set in beginning of April, to spawn, and lie in the deep cold brooks until September and October, then silently (so as not to be observed) and with dispatch, they return to the sea; in Chebucto, Cape-Breton, and Newfoundland, they continue the greatest part of the year. The people living upon the banks of Merrimack river in Massachusetts-Bay of New-England, observe, that several species of fish, particularly salmon, shade and alewives, are not so plenty in the seasons as formerly; perhaps from disturbances or some other disgust, as it happens with herrings in the several friths of Scotland.

Smelts a high latitude fish, set in to Boston wharfs middle of September and take the hook; beginning of February they go up to spawn in the freshes; no smelts south of New-England; tom-cod goes up to spawn end of November.

We reckon it a good passage for trading vessels, from New-England to London in 4 weeks, and from London to New-England in 6 weeks.

In New-England generally the falling weather is from N. E. to S. E. in winter, if the wind is N. of E. snow: if S. of E. rain. The N. E. storms are of the greatest continuance, the S. E. storms are the most violent. 1716-17, February 20 to 22, wind at N. E. northerly, fell a very deep snow upwards of 3 feet upon a level. N. W. freezing wind backing to the S. W. if reverberated, proves the most intense cold weather; thus chemical reverberated heats are the strongest.



Trees generally lose their leaves middle of October. The button tree or *platanus occidentalis*, is of a fine parabolick form fit for avenues, but its verdure is of short continuance, and the tree is not long lived ; it is not full in leaf till middle of May, and its leaves begin to fade end of July,

Our great rains are in August about two months after the summer solstice, and our great snows in February two months after the winter solstice ; the greatest snow in my remembrance was 1716-17, third week of February.

In falling weather, wind, the further north from the east, the finer and dryer is the snow ; the further south from the east, the more fleaky and humid is the snow ; when the wind comes south of the S. E. it turns to rain.

The winds from the W. S. W. to the N. N. W. are dry winds, fit for dry curing of salt-fish ; further north they are damp and soft as coming from the ocean ; further south are from the hot latitudes, and sun-burn the fish.

Early springs accelerate the buds and blossoms of trees, and frequently a subsequent easterly chill, blasts or pinches them ; but are advantageous for hay, because a late spring is too soon succeeded by the summer, and the grass before it becomes thick, runs into stalks, straw or stubble, and feed : Indian corn requires early springs, because if too late it is in danger of autumnal frosts.

In extreme freezing weather the insensible perspiration or vapours from the harbour, house pumps, &c. becomes a sensible perspiration, being by the cold condensed in form of smoke.

1732-3, the winter was very severe and long with gusts of wind, 50 to 60 vessels bound to New-England could not hover upon the coast to wait a favourable spurt of wind and weather for pushing in ; but were obliged to bear away to Bermudas, South-Carolina, and the West-India islands ; peaches were not generally in



blossom till middle of May; these effects of a severe winter did not reach South-Carolina.

Oats, barley and rice, are ripe middle of July.

No herrings (alewives, the same species) appear south of Great-Britain, and none south of New-England, which makes a difference of 10 d. in lat. but not in temperature; therefore the temperature must be nearly the same, though differing in latitude; this is also observable in salmon.

We have natural pacers of horses, which at a cow run, (a gait which they acquire by pasturing, when colts, with the cows) will pace three miles in seven minutes.

1719, October 14, hard frost as if mid-winter, robins disappear. This winter I walked round Boston Peninsula at a quick pace upon the ice, without all the wharfs, in one hour seven minutes.

End of February arrive wild geese, brants and teal.

Our intense hot days are with the wind from S. to W. S. W; from N. to E. N. E. is our most chilly weather. The dry winds are from W. to N. N. W. all other winds carry more or less damp, this is manifest in the drying of salt cod-fish. Our dry winds with continuance are from the continent N. N. W. to W. S. W. our falling weather, is from the ocean, wind N. N. E. to E. S. E. the other winds are variable and partake of both. From middle of October to middle of April requires chamber fires. Long winters are bad for neat cattle, because without sufficiency of grass or hay, subsisting only by grain, they lose their cud. Our seasons as to temper of the weather may be reckoned, winter from the winter solstice to the spring equinox, spring from said equinox to summer solstice, summer from said solstice to autumn equinox, and autumn from thence to winter solstice.

End of August the symptoms of approaching winter begin to appear, we call it the fall (autumn) of the year, the leaves of maple turn red, the leaves of birch turn yellow. The alnus or alder holds its leaf, and the verdure



duration of its leaf the longest, it is a conifer; the betula, tho' a conifer, loses its leaf soon. Some others are the latest of our wilderness flowers. We have scarce any winter flowering shrubs. August sometimes is a very hot month; 1719, August 15, so hot that some men and cattle die in travelling the road (the succeeding winter was very cold and long) some boys faint away at school, strong wind S. W. southerly, dusky morning.

In some very severe winters, such as 1732, lumps of ice settle upon the oyster banks, and kill the oysters.

When tides set in higher than usual for the season and time of the moon, it is a sign of easterly winds at sea, and vessels from Europe have short passages.

Early winters are generally severe and long.

The New-England earthquake of November 5, 1732, an undulatory motion was felt the same day and hour at Montreal in Canada, but more violent; this was not so violent as that of 1727, October 29, 10 and half in the night, a vibrating motion was felt at Barbadoes the proceeding day.

In hot countries, the birds have gay plumage, and sing but little; their flowers have beautiful mixtures of colours, but little or no fragrancy. In hot countries no good wines, extreme heats or colds do not agree with wines.

Where there is a hollow sea, land is at a great distance: certain kinds of fish and fowl are symptoms of land.

The quality of lands in New-England is known by the produce; in the best lands are chestnuts and walnuts, next is beech and white oak, lower is fir, then pitch pines, then whortles or huckle-berry plains, lastly, some marshy shrubs, low and imperfect, being the lowest degree of suffrutex vegetation.

We have a few winter birds of passage, which arrive in autumn when the summer passenger birds depart, and go off in the spring when the summer passage birds return, v. g. the snow bird or *passer nivalis*. Some passen-



gers remain only a few days, some a few weeks, others for some months.

In New-England are some pretty little quadrupedes, *putorius Americanus striatus*, the pol cat or skunk. *Sciuri* or squirrels of several kinds, the black, the grey fox squirrel, the ferret squirrel, &c. I seem to forget that a place is reserved in the appendix for some things relating to natural history. †

Gooseberries, raspberries, and strawberries are spontaneous in all our North-America settlements.

The clearing and cultivating of wilderness lands, is a very laborious and tedious affair.

Between the tropicks, winds are generally easterly, called trade winds; from the tropicks to the high latitudes, they are variable, but mostly westerly, being an eddy of the trade winds: in the north high latitudes the winds are froze N. E. to N. W. ||

The

† My summary design does not allow of botanick excursions. I shall only observe, 1. that in the country near Boston, I have collected and described about eleven hundred indigenous species of plants, perhaps a few of them might be casually imported from Europe. Ray in his synopsis of British plants, enumerates about 1400 distinct species. Tournefort in his *Histoire des plantes des environs de Paris*, enumerates and describes about 1037 species. 2. New-England, perhaps all North-America, seems mostly to abound with plants, flore composito, flore apetalo, capillares, musei, lichenes and mushrooms. Between the tropicks, they are generally anomalous, monopetalous and polypetalous, not reduceable to our European tribes, and require a botanical addition of more tribes; Tournefort in his appendix and corollary has no new genus of *verticillatæ umbelliferæ*, *cariophylei*, and very few of the *papilionacei*. 3. The marine plants seem to be the same all over the earth, perhaps from the communications of the seas: the maritime plants differ much. 4. The further south, the timber and other wood rives better into staves and the like, but does not yield much crooked timber, being spongy; in the intermediate latitudes, from the alternate variable hot and cold weather, it is not durable; in very hot countries their wood is hard and ponderous.

|| Our intense heats are many weeks after the summer solstice, in the first half of July; our intense colds are in January; thus it is in



The great import of molosses into New-England, hinders the cultivation and malting of barley and other grain; therefore ought to be charged with a high duty, equivalent to a prohibition.

Hunting and other sports of the field are little used in America.

The discovery and subsequent possession of American lands, gave the English an exclusive right against all other people, the native Indians excepted. Grants of lands to particular persons, or to companies and corporations by the crown, notwithstanding of other purchasers from the Indians, fixes the tenure of the lands in the crown, by some small quit-rent. The Indians of the N. E. parts of America seem to be the least improved of human kind; they are strangers to religion, policy, and arts.

In New-England, idleness prevails too much; they observe religiously that article in the fourth commandment, rested the seventh day, but neglect a very essential article, six days shalt thou labour; when wages are high and provisions cheap, they do not labour half their time.

Wild pigeons, *palumbus torquatus migratorius*, see vol. I. p. 126, in their passage northward, begin to appear in New-England end of February and beginning of March, but not in large numbers, because they travel more inland for the benefit of last autumn berries of several sorts in the wilderness; they return in their passage southward, in larger quantities, end of August; and some years since have been sold at 4d. currency per dozen;

in all phænomena of nature where there is a reciprocation of causes and effects; the intenseness of the effects are some time after the efficient causes have passed their height; the oscillation of the ocean in tides, the tides are not the highest until the third or fourth tide after new and full moon; in summer the hottest time of the day is about 2 or 3 hours P. M. and in winter the coldest time of the day is generally about the same hours; our cold weather is protracted into the spring season of the year, and occasions short springs; our warm weather is protracted also, and occasions long autumn weather.

they



they at that season keep towards the plantations for the benefit of their harvest. They are of great advantage in their seasons towards victualling our plantations; the country people feed some of them (they are caught alive in nets or snares) for some time with Indian corn, and brought to market, and are good delicate eating; cumming feed or its oil, are found by experience the best lure to induce the pigeons to their nets. The spring flights 1751 were very large, like thunder shower clouds, but soon over.

Cuckows, as above, come in 4th week of March, and beginning of April; black-birds arrive from the southward about the same time with the swallows, 2d week of April.

Mackarel. See above.

Brants arrive middle of February, very lean and of short continuance, they return in autumn fat, and in October proceed southward.

Catesby, a late assiduous naturalist, enumerates 113 distinct species of birds from 30 to 45 d. N. lat. in North-America, and observes, that animals, particularly birds, diminish in number of species as we rise the degrees of northern latitudes. He observed about 18 sorts of serpents; whereof only 4 are of the viper kind, and of these the rattle-snake, *viper caudifona Americana*, is the most pernicious.

A frosty winter produces a dry summer; a mild winter produces a wet summer.

Rains and fogs are more common on the shore and in soundings than in deep water at sea.

In Canada the winds are more uniform and intensely cold than in New-England, because the bleak damp easterly winds from the ocean do not reach so far; the Canada springs are sometimes more early than the springs in New-England; in Canada the snows fall early before the frosts enter the ground deep, therefore so soon as the snows dissolve, the sun sooner enters the ground, than in a frozen soil.



Forests cover and retain the snow long in the spring, and occasion late springs by their chill ; when cleared, we shall have better seasons.

In a miscellany or loose article, I may be allowed to insert any thing for information or amusement, if not too foreign to the proposed subject. 1. Our Indians formerly accounted by single wampum, by strings of wampum, and by belts of wampum ; in the same manner as the English account by the denominations of pence, shillings, and pounds. 2. An Indian preacher, nagement or naturally in the introduction to his sermon, said, " Brethren, little I know, and little I shall say ;" though generally the less a preacher knows, the more tedious are his sermons. And in the old manner of jingle, said, God does not require of us to part with our sons, as he did of Abraham of old, but to part with our sins. 3. Clergy, though by some said to be of human institution, are designed as of good use to persuade people into civility and good manners, and seem to be essential to society ; but their bad examples of immorality and passionate condemning of all who do not follow their not essential mode or whims, renders them more hurtful than beneficial to society.







## SECTION XII.

Concerning the PROVINCE of

NEW-YORK.

**T**O deduce this colony and any other of the British colonies in America, ab origine, as it were, with their progressive improvements and vicissitudes, see vol. I. sect. 2. article 3. giving some account of the discoveries and first settlements in America from Europe:— and sect. 4. general remarks concerning the British colonies in America, — and particularly p. 204. concerning New-Netherlands, comprehending the present British provinces of New-York, New-Jerseys, and some part of Pennsylvania. In a summary, references are more proper and consonant, than recapitulations.

As New-Jerseys, and part of Pennsylvania, were formerly with New-York called the Dutch colony of New-Netherlands, or Nova-Belgia; I cannot here avoid by anticipation mentioning some things concerning them.

In those times all the country from Maryland to New-England was called Nova-Belgia, or New-Netherlands.

King James I. by letters patent April 10, 1606, in one patent incorporated two distinct companies or colonies. 1. The first colony to Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, Richard Hackluit prebend at Westminster, and Edward Maria Wingfield, Esq; adventurers of the city of London with their associates; from 34 d.



elsewhere, in the affair of the English exclusive trade and property in those parts ; but in the scene of the doleful civil wars in England under various forms of administrations, finding intricate labour enough at home, neglected the American plantations ; and their neighbouring European settlements at full ease were much increased to our prejudice. The progeny of the banditti Swedes, who first settled Delaware river, still live in a separate manner, they have at times preachers and books of devotion from Swedes, but do not hold their lands of the Penns ; because the royal grant to Penn exempts lands then settled by any christians ; but they are as to jurisdiction under the government of Pennsylvania.

New-York and New-Jersies at first were traded to, and some settlement made there, by the English and Dutch : the Dutch placed a governor there, of which the court of England complained to the states of Holland ; the states disowned it, and said, that it was only a private undertaking of an Amsterdam West-India company, and K. James I. commissioned Edward Langdon as governor, and called the country New-Albion ; the Dutch submitted to the English government : during the civil troubles in England in the administrations of K. Charles I. and of the republican party, the Dutch again established a government there, till it was reduced by England 1664. When this reduction was upon the anvil, K. Charles II. made a previous grant of that country, called by the Dutch, NEW-NETHERLANDS, March 12, 1663-4, of property and government to his brother the duke of York. Duke of York, June 24, 1664, made a grant of that portion now called New-Jersey, (so called, in compliment to Sir George Carteret a Jersey-man) jointly to lord Berkley of Straton, and to Sir George Carteret vice chamberlain, and of the privy council ; a further account of this belongs to the section of New-Jersies.

K. Charles II. anno 1664, fitted out an expedition for the reduction or recovery of New-Netherlands, so called  
by



41 d. of northern latitude, including all the lands within a hundred miles directly over-against the sea coast, and back into the main land one hundred miles from the sea coast, and each plantation or settlement to extend 100 miles along the sea coast. 2. The second colony Thomas Hanham, Raleigh Gilbert, William Parker, and George Popham, Esqrs. of the town of Plymouth, with their associates; liberty to begin their first plantation and seat, at any place upon the coast of Virginia, where they should think fit, between the degrees of 38 and 45 of northern latitude; with the like liberties and bounds as the first colony; provided they did seat within a hundred miles of them.

What relates to Virginia is referred to the section of Virginia. Anno 1610, my lord Delaware was sent governor to Virginia by the South Virginia company; falling in with the land about two degrees to the northward of the capes of Virginia, discovered a fine large bay, in compliment to his lordship, called Delaware-Bay.

The Swedes and Finns seem to have been the first occupiers of some parts of that large country, afterwards called by the Dutch, NEW-NETHERLANDS; they made settlements both sides of Delaware river, and began several towns and forts, Elsenburgh, Casimier, now called New-Castle, &c. The Dutch traded thither and soon became more powerful and rich than the Swedes; the Swedes and Finns followed husbandry only, and being in constant fears from their neighbouring numerous Indians, put themselves under protection of the Dutch 1655, and John Kizeing the Swedish governor, made a formal surrender of that country to Peter Stuivesant governor for the states of Holland. Whereupon all that tract of land in North-America from the latitude of about 38 d. to the latitude of about 41 d. in Connecticut, was called New-Netherlands by all people, except the English, who still claimed it as part of New-England; in fact, governor Argol of Virginia had several bickerings with the Dutch, particularly 1618 in the bay of Delaware, and with others elsewhere,



by the Dutch, consisting of a squadron of ships commanded by Sir Robert Carr, and some land forces aboard under the command of col. Richard Nicols. Upon their arrival at New-Amsterdam, since called New-York, the Dutch after some shew of resistance, but much terrified, upon the offers of protection for their persons and properties, and liberty to remove with all their effects, if they saw fit, submitted to the English; articles were drawn up, signed and exchanged in September 1664; the English possessed of New-Amsterdam, called it New-York: in a short time thereafter, the English squadron entered Delaware bay and river, and all the settlements there, followed the example of the Dutch capital New-Amsterdam, and possession of all New-Netherlands was taken for and in the name of the duke of York, to whom K. Charles his brother had previously given it by a royal patent; and all manner of jurisdiction, as well civil as military, was exercised throughout the whole country, excepting in the Jerseys, which the duke of York had disposed of to Berkley and Carteret, by the sole appointment of the duke and his deputies.

By the third article of the peace of Breda signed July 21, 1667, between England and the United Provinces, the English were to remain in possession of that whole country, in exchange for the country of Surinam, which the Dutch had taken from the English. K. Charles in the beginning of 1672, having declared war against the United Provinces, the Dutch sent a squadron of ships to New-York, which they soon reduced with the rest of the country; but by a peace concluded at Westminster, February 9, 1673-4, in the sixth article it was again restored to England in general terms, "that whatsoever countries, islands, towns, ports, castles, or forts have or shall be taken on both sides, since the time that the late unhappy war broke out, either in Europe or elsewhere, shall be restored to the former lord and proprietor, in the same condition they shall be in when the peace itself shall be proclaimed; after which time there shall



shall be no spoil nor plunder of the inhabitants, nor demolition of fortifications, nor carrying away of guns, powder, or other military stores which belonged to any castle or fort at the time when it was taken."

This tract of land, as it had been taken and possessed by a foreign power, though afterward delivered or surrendered back by treaty, to obviate or remove all disputes concerning the validity of former grants, K. Charles was advised to make a new grant of that country to his brother the duke of York by letters patent, bearing date, June 29, 1674.

Let us now proceed more particularly to the province of New-York, the subject of this section.

Anno 1664, K. Charles II. appointed commissioners to settle the boundaries of the several colonies: \* from misinformation they settled the line between New-York and Connecticut by a N. N. W. line, as is mentioned in our vol. II. p. 161; they were made to believe that this N. N. W. line would leave 20 miles to New-York on the east side of Hudson's river; whereas it soon crossed Hudson's river, and left many of the Dutch settlements upon Hudson's river, to the colonies of Massachusetts-Bay, and Connecticut, but these colonies never took possession thereof. This line is upon record in New-York and Connecticut.

The partition line of New-York with Connecticut was run February 24, 1684, by commissioners of both colonies, and signed at the town of Milford in Connecticut by col. Thomas Dongan governor of New-York, and by Robert Treat, Esq; governor of Connecticut, and confirmed by king William in council, March 28, 1700; but as this line was not well marked, distinguished, or ascertained, especially as to the equivalent lands; not long since, by both parties, it was finally run, well marked out,

\* We formerly mentioned, their settling of the boundaries between the colonies of Massachusetts-Bay and Rhode-Island.



and ascertained, and confirmed by the king in council, as is related in our vol. II. p. 161. in the section of Connecticut.

As to the eastern boundary of the province of New-York; New-York hint at claiming so far east as Connecticut river, because 1. By ancient Dutch maps published before the English royal grants of the colonies of Massachusetts-Bay and Connecticut, the Dutch had actually a fort at the mouth of Connecticut river, as appears by records. † 2. That part of New-Netherlands in the duke of York's grant, is described, "and also all that island or "islands, commonly called by the several name or names "of Mattowacks or Long-Island, situate, laying, and "being towards the west of Cape-Cod and the narrow "Highganfets, abutting upon the main land between the "two rivers, there called and known by the several names "of Connecticut and Hudson's rivers, and all the lands "from the west side of Connecticut river to the east side "of Delaware-Bay." 3. This island, now called Long-Island, remains with the province of New-York, by a mutual tacit consent of both colonies. In answer to these allegations it is obvious, 1. That the line lately settled between New-York and Connecticut, and confirmed or ratified by the king in council, is at twenty miles east of Hudson's river, and cuts off all their claims of this nature upon Connecticut. 2. By the like parity of reason, and precedent, the New-York claim to that part of Massachusetts-Bay, which lies west of Connecticut river, is cut off; moreover, the Dutch never traded or settled so high upon Connecticut river. 3. Therefore in equity, New-York is bounded north of Connecticut N. W. corner, by a line parallel to and at twenty miles distant east of

† The children of William Brown, Esq; of Salem in New-England, are great-grand-children of a grand-daughter of mynheer Provost, at that time governor of this fort.



Hudson's river, to over-against the great crook \*, elbow, or great falls of Hudson's river, and thence in a due north line to the south boundary line of the French Canada country; || this line with other disputable claims

\* Great crooks of boundary rivers not well discovered and described at the times of granting and bounding colonies, are now construed as a termination of such lines; thus it was lately by determination of the king in council with respect to the line between the provinces of Massachusetts-Bay and New-Hampshire at Pantucket falls of Merrimack river, see vol. I. p. 423.

|| The various disputes between the courts of Great-Britain and France (I must once and again beg pardon for meddling in state affairs, or arcana imperii, by chance they fall in my way, and in some manner I scramble over them) concerning the national properties and jurisdictions of some disputable countries in America, which perhaps might have been settled in the late definitive (so called) treaty of Aix la Chapelle, more expeditiously and with better effect, considering  
1. That by meer dint of good fortune, providence seemed to be of our side, and gave us possession of Louisbourg at the mouth or entrance of St. Laurence or Canada great river, the French Dunkirk of North America. 2. By our natural superiority at sea, we had entirely obstructed the French plantation American trade, which might have induced or forced the French to make us some favourable concessions; than by tedious and generally ineffective subsequent treaties by commissaries, which frequently terminate only in a neutrality till next general rupture, or in some mutual concessions by way of equivalents detrimental to that side who may have lately received the law; thus for instance, if the court of Great-Britain at this juncture should quit claim, the neutral islands in the West-Indies to the French, as an equivalent for some concessions to be made in Nova-Scotia by the court of France to the British.

At present, 1751, the French with a considerable military force, make a stand on the north side of Chiconecto bay and river in about 45 d. 25 m. The parallel of 45 d. is the northern extent of king James I. grant 1606 to the North-Virginia company; this is perhaps the foundation of the French claim. If the partition line with France or Canada is to be settled at 45 d. north lat. continued, it will fall in with St. Laurence or Ontario river, a little above Montreal; including the greatest part of Champlain or Corlaers lake with the formerly Dutch country adjoining. If the south limits of Canada are thus settled, New-York west line will begin at this termination, and pass along Ontario river to Ontario lake, along Ontario lake, and its communicating run of water to lake Erie, till it meets with Pennsylvania north line.



is now in agitation at Paris by British and French commissaries.

Unless there be some general, but definitive articles of agreement, see vol. I. p. 13, with the French, concerning boundaries, we ought to have a continued residence of commissaries at Paris or elsewhere; if the present commissaries are so happy as to settle the boundary lines, between Canada on the French side, and Nova-Scotia, New-England, and New-York on the British side, there will still remain further lines to be settled, of which I can give some instances, which may occasion great contention, the symptoms whereof appear already; but as these things at present are in embryo, I shall touch upon them only by way of annotational amusement. \*

The

\* There is a tract of valuable land west southerly from Pennsylvania: Pennsylvania in the grant extends 5 d. W. from Delaware river, and takes a considerable share of lake Erie, and within which bounds since the late peace the French have erected a fortification with a view of claiming that country, as formerly they built a fort at Crown-point, to fix a claim to the country of lake Champlain. Our Indian traders inform us, that below lake Erie, upon the river Ohio, called by the French La Belle Riviere, and the great river Ouabache, which jointly fall into the grand river of Mississippi, are the most valuable lands in all America, and extend 500 to 600 miles in a level rich soil. Luckily for us, the French, last war, not being capable of supplying the Indians of those rivers with goods sufficient, these Indians dealt with our traders, and a number of them came to Philadelphia to treat with the English; hitherto they have faithfully observed their new alliance: these Indians are called the Twichetwheels, a large nation, much superior in numbers to all our Six nations, and independent of them. This gave the government of Canada much uneasiness, that so considerable a body of Indians with their territory, trade, and inlet into the Mississippi, should be lopt from them; accordingly the governor of Canada in the autumn 1750, wrote to the governors of New-York and Pennsylvania, acquainting them, that our Indian traders had incroached so far on their territories by trading with their Indians; that if they did not desist, he should be obliged to apprehend them, wherever they should be found within these bounds; accordingly in the spring 1751, some French parties with their Indians, seized three of our traders, and confined them in Montreal or Quebeck: the Twichetwheels, our late allies, resented this, and immediately rendezvouzed to the number of 500 to 600,



The north and south boundaries in North-America, dominions belonging or claimed by different sovereignties, and of separate colonies under the same sovereign, are best determined by parallels of latitude which may be supposed invariable; thus the boundary of Hudson's-Bay company by the treaty of Utrecht is well fixed at 49 d. N. lat.; perhaps that of Canada with Nova-Scotia, New-England and New-York, may be settled at 45 d; in New-England that of Massachusetts-Bay with New-Hampshire, by the king in council is fixed at a parallel of about 42 d. 50 m; Massachusetts-Bay with Rhode-Island and Connecticut is in 42 d. 2 m; New-York with Pennsylvania is in 42 d. completed, or the beginning of the 43 d. which is 20 miles north of New-York station point with the Jerseys; Virginia with the Carolinas as settled, 1739, is in about 36 d. 40 m. Some colonies are only bounded by rivers, the river Powtomack bounds Virginia from Maryland, the river Savannah divides South-Carolina from Georgia,

600, and scoured the woods till they found three French traders, and delivered them up to the government of Pennsylvania. Here the matter rests, and waits for an accomodation betwixt our governor and the French governor, as to exchange of prisoners; and as to the main point of the question, in such cases the French never cede till drubb'd into it by a war, and confirmed by a subsequent peace. However, it is probable that in a few years our settlements, if well attended to, will be carried thither, if with the protection of the Indians of that nation, they are countenanced by our governments. With this view the governor of Pennsylvania is labouring with the assembly to have some place of strength, security, or retreat for our Indian traders, under the name of a trading or truck-house; the Indians have given their consent to this scheme, which they never granted to the French; it will be a difficult matter to persuade a quaker assembly into any thing, where a military strength or security is implied.

We may observe, that some part of these Indian lands W. southerly of Pennsylvania, to the quantity of 600,000 acres, have a year or two ago, been granted by the crown to a company of gentlemen in Virginia, free of quit-rent for 21 years; in the prayer of their petition, they propose the settling and cultivating the same, as well as to carry on trade with the Indians. The whole of this affair is now represented at home to the ministry, by the governor of Pennsylvania.



In all affairs the French act the hucksters, at first make great demands, but afterwards gradually recede. It is said, that as the French are now in possession of Crown-Point fort and settlement near lake Champlain in about 44 d. N. lat. their first demand of boundaries was a parallel of 44 d. lat. which cuts off from us part of New-York and New-Hampshire, almost the whole of the province of Main, all the good country upon Quenebeck river, all Sagadahock or the late property of duke of York, almost the whole of Nova-Scotia, including Annapolis-Royal in 44 d. 40 m. and Chebucto in 44 d. 10 m. and Canso; the French court are since said to have ceded, and proposed to make a cession of one degree of latitude; that is, their bounding parallel of latitude shall be 45 d. as the grant of K. James I. anno 1606, to the North-Virginia company extended no further; and moreover, that the French governor Champlain had taken possession of the gulph and river of St. Laurence before this, and before the Dutch occupied the New-York settlement. This parallel of 45 d. in favour of the French includes all the Canso islands with the northern parts of the bay of Fundy: and the good country upon St. John's river; leaving to Great-Britain the peninsula of Nova-Scotia, Crown-Point, and the greatest part of the country upon lake Champlain or the Dutch Corlaers lake; † the cession of Nova-Scotia to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht, was understood by the nation or people of Great-Britain to be according to the extent of the French commission so far as Cape-Rosiers, to Mr. Subercasse their last governor of L' Accadie; but by a parallel of 45 d. in the meridian of Cape-Rosiers in lat. of 50 d. 30 m. we give up 5 d. 30 m. of latitude; in the meridian of Quebeck in lat. 46 d. 55 m. we give up about 1 d. 55 m. of latitude; in the meridian of Mont-

† This Corlaer was a principal man amongst the Dutch settlers, and this lake was called by his name; the French call it lake Champlain, and it generally has obtained that name; Champlain was the first governor of Canada.



real, a very small matter. Thus the French explain the loose treaty of Utrecht, to our very great disadvantage, as if they gave the law, and were supreme judges thereof; O tempora!

The north boundary of the province of New-York, may be, the south line of Canada when settled; probably it will begin at a point in a meridian twenty miles east of the crook or great falls of Hudson's river, and running west will cross lake Champlain, and terminate in Cataragui river.

Its W. line runs up Cataragui river, and lake called generally lake Ontario, and terminates on lake Erie in north lat. 42 d. complete. From Oswego upon lake Ontario may be reckoned the width of the government of New-York, 220 miles, viz. due W. from the lake 200 miles to Albany on Hudson's river, and from Albany 20 miles due W. to the west line of Massachusetts-Bay province.

The southern line of the province of New-York is in several directions or flexures. 1. From lake Erie along the north or head line of Pennsylvania in lat. 42. to Delaware river. 2. Thence 20 miles down said river to the north divisional point of New-York and New-Jersey on said river in lat. 41 d. 40 m. 3. Thence in a straight line E. 42 d. S. to 41 d. lat. on Hudson's river. 4. Thence 12 miles down Hudson's river to north end of the island of New-York, then down said Hudson's river on the W. side of New-York island to Sandy-point, the entrance of New-York road and harbour about 30 miles. 5. Thence along the southern shore of Long-Island, round the E. end of Long-Island, including Fisher's island and Gardner's island, which lie near the entrance of New-London harbour in Thames river of Connecticut colony; then along the northern shore of Long-Island found to over-against the mouth of Byram river, where the western divisional line between New-York and Connecticut begins.

The eastern line is from the mouth of Byram river,  
along



along the Oblong as described in the section of Connecticut, vol. II. p. 161, to the N. W. corner of Connecticut colony or S. W. corner of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, about 80 miles: thence in a parallel with Hudson's river at 20 miles distance E. from Hudson's river, along the western line of Massachusetts-Bay, about 47 miles to the N. W. corner of Massachusetts-Bay, which is the S. W. corner of lands lately annexed, or crown lands put under the jurisdiction of the province of New-Hampshire pro tempore; thence in a like parallel from Hudson's river, about 40 miles upon the western line of New Hampshire, to the latitudes of the great falls or crook of Hudson's river; thence in a due meridian line on the west line of the crown lands, † at present in the jurisdiction of New-Hampshire, to the south boundary line of Canada, when by much protracted and finally perhaps disadvantageous negociations it shall be determined. The reader may observe, that I have neither inclination nor interest to be of any side, other than solicitous for a national concern.

We may observe, that as the dividing line between New-York and New-Jerseys in duke of York's grant of 1664 to lord Berkley and Sir George Carteret, is from the N. latitude of 41 d. on Hudson's river, to the lat. of 41 d. 40 m. on the northermost branch of Delaware river; so that the fixing of the two latitudes, and running of the line between them, was all that was required for the settling

† In a late final settlement of the north boundary of the province of Massachusetts-Bay; if the administration at home, for the interest of our mother country and its plantations, had been advised by gentlemen intelligent in the affair; the lands north of that line, being crown lands, might have been annexed to the province of Massachusetts-Bay, though not in property, yet in jurisdiction, as are the lands of Sagadahock; the insignificant impotent small province of New-Hampshire can never be capable of cultivating and defending it against the Canada French and their Indians; so large a tract of wilderness lands as this, is, leaving a vast country uncultivated, or to the use and improvement of the French.



of that line: accordingly 1719, by act of the general assemblies of both provinces, commissioners and surveyors were appointed; after many observations, the latitude of 41 d. 40 m. on the northermost branch of Delaware river was settled, and executed by indentures under hands and seals; and to commemorate the same, these indentures were recorded at Perth-Amboy in New-Jersey, lib. D. No. 2. p. 280, &c. and in New-York in a book of entries beginning August 1739, p. 168, &c. then a streight line was run by the said commissioners and surveyors to Hudson's river, and the surveyors made many observations there, of the meridian altitudes of the sun and proper stars, to discover the proper latitude on Hudson's river; but the commissioners never met afterwards to fix that point; therefore it remains undetermined to this day, though frequently demanded by the East-Jersies.

The deed of the equivalent lands, (see vol. II. p. 161) called the Oblong from Connecticut to New-York in the king's name, was not sealed or delivered until May 14. the grant of the greatest part of these lands to Sir Joseph Eyles and company was next day after, being the 15th of May, and not put upon record till some time thereafter. The controversy between Eyles and company, and Hauly and company, concerning the property of these lands, is still subsisting; the contracted nature of a summary does not allow us to insert it at large; only we observe, \* that Sir Joseph Eyles and company, March 10, 1730-1, presented a petition to the king in council for this land, by the name of "a certain tract of land in your majesty's province of New-York in America, &c." computed at 62,000 acres; on the same day it was referred to a committee of the privy council, and 24th of that month, they refer it to the lords commissioners of trade and plantations; the

\* This I insert in so minute a manner, by way of information, how plantation affairs are managed at the several boards in Great-Britain.



lords of trade made their report to the lords of the committee, "We think it for his majesty's service to grant to them, their heirs and assigns, the lands they petition for," &c. and on the 30th March 1731, the lords of the committee make their report to the king in council, "apprehending that all reasonable encouragement ought to be given for the settling of lands in your majesty's plantations, do agree with the opinion of the said lords commissioners for trade, &c. and that it may be advisable for your majesty to grant to the petitioners the said lands in the manner above proposed." April 8, 1731, the king in council approves of the report of the lords of the committee, and orders a grant accordingly, by ordering the lords commissioners of his majesty's treasury to prepare a warrant for passing it, and on the 4th of May 1731, the lords commissioners of the treasury directed the warrant for the grant to the attorney and solicitor general; the grant itself, under the great seal of Great-Britain, is dated May 15, 1731; after reciting the words of the petition, "are graciously pleased to gratify the petitioners of their request: know ye," &c.†—About the same time the governor and council of New-York granted, by virtue of their royal instruction for granting of province lands, to Hauly and company the same lands; which of these grants shall take place, is not as yet decided; it is certain, that the deed of these equivalent lands, from Connecticut to his majesty was not sealed and delivered until May 14, 1731, yet at the distance of 1000 leagues was granted next day to Eyles, &c.

The extent of the province government or jurisdiction of New-York is as follows; from N. to S. that is, from Sandy-Hook in lat. 40 d. 30 m. to the supposed Canada line in the parallel of 45 d. lat. are 313 English miles;

† There seems to be some imposition in the petition of Sir Joseph Eyles and company, representing these lands, as productive of pitch, tar, other naval stores, mines, and furs.



the extent from W. to E. is various. 1. From the E. southerly termination of the boundary line between the Jerseys and New-York in lat. 41 d. upon Hudson's river to Byram river, where the colony of Connecticut begins, are 10 miles. 2. From the W. northerly termination of the said boundary line between Jersey and New-York on the north branch of Delaware river in lat. 41 d. 4 m. to Connecticut W. line, including the Oblong, are 82 miles, whereof about 60 miles from Delaware river to Hudson's river, and 22 miles from Hudson's river to the present Connecticut W. line, Oblong included. 3. From 41 d. 40 m. on Delaware river, New-York runs 20 miles higher on Delaware river to the parallel of 42 d. lat. which by Pennsylvania royal grant divides New-York from the province of Pennsylvania; upon this parallel New-York is supposed to extend west to lake Erie; and from thence along lake Erie, and along the communicating great run of water † from lake Erie to lake Ontario or Cataraqui, and along lake Cataraqui and its discharge Cataraqui river to the aforesaid Canada supposed line with the British colonies; we shall instance the breadth of New-York province from Oswego; || as being a medium

† In this run of water or communicating river, are the noted great Niagara falls frequently mentioned, and a French pass to keep up the communication between Canada and Mississippi, called fort Denonville.

|| Oswego, formerly mentioned, is a fort and Indian trading place in times of peace, with a garrison of 25 soldiers from the four independent regular companies, to prevent any disorders in trade; this being in the season a kind of Indian fair: last French war the garrison consisted of 200 men of regular troops and militia, and the French did not find it convenient to molest them. Our traders with the Indians fit out from Albany, and pay a certain duty upon what they vend and buy at Oswego; their rout is; from Albany to Schenectady town or corporation upon Mowhawks river, 16 miles land carriage; thence up Mohawks river, in this river is only one short carrying place at a fall in that river; from Mowhawks river a carrying place of 3 to 5 miles according to the seasons, here are convenient Dutch land carriages to be hired, to a river which falls into the Oneides lake; then from this lake down Onondagues river to Oswego trading place



dium in this line. Oswego fort and trading place with many nations of Indians upon the lake Ontario, Catarqui or Oswego in lat. 43 d. 33 m. lies west northerly from Albany about 200 miles, and 20 miles from Albany to the west line of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, in all about 220 miles. Montreal lies N. by E. of Albany above 200 miles.

Besides, the main land country of New-York, there are some islands belonging to it. 1. Long Island, called by the Indians Matowacks, and by the Dutch, Nassau, it lies in length from E. to W. about 120 miles, and at a me-

place upon lake Ontario, there is a short fall in Onondagues river. Almost the whole of the east side of the Ontario lake lies in the Onondagues country. From Oswego fort to Niagara falls or French fort Dononville are about 160 miles, and from Oswego fort 60 miles to fort Frontanac, also called Catarqui fort, where the lake vents by Catarqui river, which with the Outawae river makes St. Laurence river called the great river of Canada; this fort Frontanac is about 200 miles down that rocky river to Montreal.

By conjecture of the French Coureurs des bois in round numbers, the circumferences of the five great lakes or inland seas of North-America, are, Ontario 200 leagues, Erie, 200 leagues, Hurons 300 leagues, Mihagan 300 leagues, and the upper lake 500 leagues.

As I do not write this, as a rigidly connected piece, I mention several things as they occur, but without any considerable deviation. 1. The Mohawk nation of our allied New-York Indians live on the south side of a branch of Hudson's river called Mohawks river, but not on the north side thereof, as is represented in the French maps. 2. The Oneides nation lie about 100 miles W. from Albany, near the head of the Mohawks river. 3. The Onondagues lie about 130 miles west from Albany. 4. The Tuscaroras, an adventitious or sixth nation (in former times they were called the Five nations) live partly with the Oneides, and partly with the Onondagues. 5. The Cayugas about 160 miles west from Albany. 6. The Senecas who live upon the frontiers of Pennsylvania are about 140 miles west from Albany. A France noted writer M. de Lisle calls these Five nations by the name of Iroquois.

Formerly the French had popish missionaries with the Oneides, Onondagues, and Cayugas, and endeavoured to keep them in their interest.

There is scarce any beaver in the country of the Five nations; therefore their hunting at a great distance from home, occasions frequent jarrings with other Indian nations; this trains them up by practice, to be better warriors than the other Indian nations.

dium



dium is about 10 miles broad; its east shore is a sandy flat, as is all the E. shore of North-America from Cape-Cod of New-England in N. lat. 42 d. 10 m. to Cape-Florida in about 25 d. N. lat. Upon this shore of Long-Island are very few inlets, and these very shallow: its north side is good water, being a sound between it and the main land of Connecticut; the widest part of this near New-Haven of Connecticut does not exceed 8 leagues. Two thirds of this island is a barren sandy soil. The eastern parts were settled from New-England, and retain their customs; the western parts were settled by the Dutch, where many families to this day understand no other language but the Dutch. It is divided into 3 counties, Queen's county, King's county, and Suffolk county, and pays considerably above one fourth of the taxes or charges of the government of the province. Hell-Gate, where is the confluence or meeting of the E. and W. tide in Long-Island sound, is about 12 miles from the city of New-York. 2. Staten-Island at its E. end, has a ferry of three miles to the W. end of Long-Island; at its W. end is a ferry of one mile to Perth-Amboy of East-Jerseys, it is divided from East-Jerseys by a creek; is in length about 12 miles, and about six miles broad, makes one county, called Richmond, which pays scarce one in one and twenty of the provincial tax; it is all in one parish, but several congregations, viz. an English, Dutch, and French congregation; the inhabitants are mostly English; only one considerable village, called Cuckold's-town. 3. Nantucket, Martha's vineyard and Elizabeth islands were formerly under the jurisdiction of New-York,; but upon the revolution they were annexed by the new charter of Massachusetts-Bay, to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts-Bay; not many years since, some of the freeholders of these islands when occasionally in New-York, were arrested for the arrears of the general quit-rents of these islands. 4. Manhatans, the Indian name, New-Amsterdam the Dutch name, or New-York the English name, may be called an island, though it has a communication



munication with the main land, by King's bridge, the whole island being about fourteen miles long, but very narrow, is all in the jurisdiction of the city of New-York; it lies on the mouth of Hudson's river.

In the province of New-York are four incorporated towns, who hold courts within themselves, send representatives to the general assembly or legislature, with sundry exclusive privileges. 1. The city of New-York and its territory, formerly established by col. Dongan, sends four representatives. 2. The city of Albany probably had their charter also from col. Dongan, and is nearly the same with that of New-York, sends two representatives. 3. The borough of West-Chester; and 4. The township of Schenectady; it seems these two corporations had their charters before the revolution, and each of them send one representative to the general assembly.

As a specimen of town corporation charters, in the plantations, I shall insert an extract of the charter of the city of New-York; it is the fullest and the most exclusive of any of them. It begins by mentioning or reciting several grants of privileges which they have enjoyed by patents and charters. "Whereas the city of New-York is an ancient city, and the citizens anciently a body politick with fundry rights, privileges, &c. as well by prescription as by charters, letters patent, grants and confirmations, not only of divers governors and commanders in chief in the said province, but also of several governors, directors, generals, and commanders in chief of the Nether Dutch nation, whilst the same was or has been under their power and subjection. That Thomas Dongan, Esq; lieutenant governor of New-York, under king James II. August 27, 1686, by a charter confirmed all their former grants not repugnant to the laws of England and province of New-York, with some additions, granting to them all the unappropriated lands to low-water mark in Manhattan's island, under the yearly quit-rent of one beaver skin, or the value thereof; their jurisdiction to extend all over the island, &c." That this charter was confirmed by a subsequent charter from  
lord



lord Cornbury governor, April 19, 1708, with some additions granting to them the ferries, &c. That as some questioned the validity of their former charters, because they were in the governor's name only, and not in the name of their kings and queens, they petition governor Montgomery for a new charter, confirming all their former privileges, with some additions; granting to them four hundred feet below low-water mark in Hudson's river, &c.

Governor Montgomery's charter by which they now hold, is dated January 15, 1730, and afterwards confirmed or corroborated by an act of the provincial assembly or legislature of New-York, and declared to be a publick act, relating to the whole colony. The substance of this charter is as follows.

“ They are incorporated by the name of the mayor, al-  
 “ dermen and commonality of the city of New-York.—  
 “ The city to be divided into seven wards, viz. west-ward,  
 “ south-ward, duck-ward, east-ward, north-ward, Mont-  
 “ gomery-ward, and the out-ward divided into the Bowry  
 “ division and Harlem division.—The corporation to con-  
 “ sist of one mayor, one recorder, and seven aldermen,  
 “ seven assistants, one sheriff, one coroner, one com-  
 “ mon clerk, one chamberlain or treasurer, one high con-  
 “ stable, sixteen assessors, seven collectors, sixteen con-  
 “ stables, and one marshal. The mayor with consent of  
 “ the governor, may appoint one of the aldermen his de-  
 “ puty. The governor yearly to appoint the mayor, she-  
 “ riff, and coroner, and the freeholders and freemen in  
 “ their respective wards to chuse the other officers, ex-  
 “ cepting the chamberlain, who is to be appointed in coun-  
 “ cil by the mayor, four or more aldermen, and four or  
 “ more assistants. The mayor to appoint the high con-  
 “ stable; all officers to take the proper oaths, and to con-  
 “ tinue in office till others have been chosen in their  
 “ rooms; when any officer dies, the ward is to chuse an-  
 “ other; upon refusal to serve in office, the common  
 “ council may impose a fine not exceeding 15 l. for the  
 “ use of the corporation. The mayor or recorder, and  
 “ four



" four or more aldermen, with four or more assistants, to  
 " be a common council to make by-laws, to regulate the  
 " freemen, to lease lands and tenements, &c. but to do  
 " nothing inconsistent with the laws of Great-Britain or  
 " of this province ; such laws and orders not to continue  
 " in force exceeding 12 months, unless confirmed by the  
 " governor and council. May punish by disfranchising, or  
 " fines for the use of the corporation. The common coun-  
 " cil shall decide in all controverted elections of officers.  
 " The common council may be called by the mayor, or  
 " in his absence by the recorder ; fine of a member for  
 " nonattendance not exceeding 20 s. for the use of the  
 " corporation. The corporation may establish as many  
 " ferries as they may see fit, and let the same. To hold a  
 " market at five or more different places every day of the  
 " week, excepting Sunday ; to fix the assize of bread,  
 " wine, &c. The mayor with four or more aldermen  
 " may make freemen, fees not to exceed 5 l. ; none but  
 " freemen shall retail goods or exercise any trade, penalty  
 " 5 l. ; no aliens to be made free. To commit common  
 " vagabonds, erect work-houses, goals, and alms-houses.  
 " The mayor to appoint the clerk of the market, and  
 " water bailiff ; to licence carmen, porters, cryers, sca-  
 " vengers and the like ; to give licence to taverns and  
 " retailers of strong drink for one year, not exceeding  
 " 30 s. per licence ; selling without licence 5 l. current  
 " money toties quoties. The mayor, deputy mayor, re-  
 " corder, and aldermen for the time being, to be justices  
 " of the peace. The mayor, deputy mayor, and re-  
 " corder, or any one of them, with three or more of the  
 " aldermen, shall hold quarter sessions, not to sit exceed-  
 " ing four days. Mayor, recorder, and aldermen, to be  
 " named in all commissions of oyer and terminer, and  
 " goal delivery. The mayor, deputy mayor, recorder,  
 " or any one of them, with three or more of the aldermen,  
 " shall and may hold every Tuesday a court of record, to  
 " try all civil causes real, personal, or mixt, within the  
 " city and county. May adjourn the mayor's court to any  
 " time not exceeding 28 days. The corporation to have a  
 " common



“ common clerk, who shall be also clerk of the court of  
 “ record, and sessions of the peace, to be appointed  
 “ during his good behaviour, by the governor; eight at-  
 “ tornies in the beginning, but as they drop, only six to  
 “ be allowed, during their good behaviour, for the mayor’s  
 “ court; the mayor’s court to have the direction and  
 “ cognizance of the attornies, who upon a vacancy shall  
 “ recommend one to the governor for his approbation.  
 “ The mayor, recorder, or any alderman, may with or with-  
 “ out a jury determine in cases not exceeding 40 s. value.  
 “ No freeman inhabitant shall be obliged to serve in any  
 “ office out of the city. A grant and confirmation to all  
 “ the inhabitants of their hereditaments, &c. paying the  
 “ quit-rent reserved by their grants. The corporation  
 “ may purchase and hold hereditaments, &c. so as the  
 “ clear yearly value exceed not 3000 l. sterl. and the  
 “ same to dispose of at pleasure. To pay a quit-rent of  
 “ 30 s. proclamation money per ann. besides the beaver  
 “ skin, and 5 s. current money in former charters re-  
 “ quired. No action to be allowed against the corporation  
 “ for any matters or cause whatsoever prior to this char-  
 “ ter. A pardon of all prosecutions, forfeitures, &c.  
 “ prior to this charter. This grant or the inrolment there-  
 “ of (record) shall be valid in law, notwithstanding of  
 “ imperfections, the imperfections may in time coming be  
 “ rectified at the charge of the corporation.”

As I am now to relate the French and Indian wars  
 which concern the British province of New-York, with  
 their other Indian affairs; as also some account of the  
 successions of governors and governments in the colony  
 of New-York; instead of summary references, as we  
 proposed, for the ease of the reader I shall use a con-  
 nected and fluent short recapitulation, which will point  
 out sundry of our claims in North-America.

French and Indian wars, with other Indian affairs.

Sebastian Cabot, a subject of England, employed by K.  
 Henry VII. to discover a N. W. passage to China, ann.



1496, touched at all the considerable inlets on the eastern coast of North-America from Cape-Florida in N. lat. 25d. to N. lat. 67 and half d. and took a NOMINAL possession of the whole for the crown of England (see vol. I. p. 273) but making no settlements, he made no title by occupancy, or purchase from the Indians.

Sir Walter Raleigh, a native of England, anno 1584, with people settlers, landed at Roanoak in the present North-Carolina, settled and took possession for queen Elizabeth, and called all the North-America coast by the name of Virginia, \* in honour to the virgin queen Elizabeth. After sundry small adventures to Virginia in general, April 10, 1606, two companies were incorporated in one letter patent by K. James I. called the South and North-Virginia companies. The South-Virginia company began a settlement in Chesapeak-Bay 1607; the North-Virginia company carried on (but in separate adventures) some small trade in fish and furr, but made no settlement with continuance till 1620 † when they began to settle Plymouth in New-England; being late in the season, the weather obliged the designed settlers to put up with the first land or harbours, accordingly they landed in Plymouth-Bay of Massachusetts, and have continued there ever since.

Capt. Henry Hudson ‡ in some Dutch company's ser-

\* Some pedantick criticks, in imitation of some annotators upon the Greek and Roman classicks, imagine that he meant a young virgin country, never before occupied by the Europeans.

† The designed settlers had made a sort of contract with the council of Plymouth or North-Virginia company, for a territory upon Hudson's river: this evinces that in these times, the Dutch or any other European nation by prior discovery, occupancy, prescription, or any other claim, had no equitable right to that country.

‡ This Hudson was a great enthusiastick projector of N. E. and N. W. passages, and gave name to Hudson's-Bay, and Hudson's river of New York; he perished in one of his passage adventures, being never heard of more.

It is said by the French, that Canada was first settled by the French under Champlain their first governor 1603, being five years before Hudson took possession of New-Netherlands for the Dutch.



vice, but an Englishman, anno 1608, came to the mouth of Hudson's river (as it is since called) though in the limits of both said corporations or companies, and without licence from the king of England, purchased (as it is said) of the Indians that certain territory, and disposed of his rights to the Dutch West-India company, or rather to some merchants of Amsterdam; and the Dutch made some imperfect irregular settlements there. Sir Samuel Argol governor for the South-Virginia company 1618 drove the Dutch from their usurped settlement: however, the Dutch obtained 1620 of that pacifick easy prince K. James I. leave to make a small settlement there, for wooding and watering of their Brazil fleets, and 1623 the Dutch made a regular colony of it, and their commander in chief was called director general of New-Netherlands.

Carr, sea commander, and Nichols land commander, arrived before New-Amsterdam, since called New-York, with an armed force August 20, 1664, and summoned the Dutch governor to surrender; accordingly 27th following, articles were agreed upon; New-Netherlands was surrendered to England, and col. Richard Nichols was appointed lieut. governor by the duke of York, who had obtained a previous grant thereof from his brother K. Charles II. New-Netherlands was confirmed to England by the treaty of Breda 1667: but as England, March 17, 1671-2 proclaimed war against the Dutch, the Dutch easily reconquered it from the English 1673, col. Lovelace governor; but afterwards by the treaty of London 1673-4 the Dutch made an absolute cession thereof to England; and in consequence thereof as New-Netherlands had been conquered since the first grant, to prevent difficulties in titles, K. Charles II. made a second grant, June 29, 1674, to his brother the duke of York, with the right of government to him, his heirs and assigns. I shall not anticipate what matters of this grant belong to the sections of the Jerseys and Pensylvania. Governor Andros by letters of October 31, 1674, acquaints the  
neigh.



neighbouring governors, that he had received possession of New-York, &c. No act of government appears upon record from July 19, 1673, to November 6, 1674; then were published the second royal letters patent to the duke of York of New-York and the Jerseys, dated June 29, 1674.

The Dutch interlopers at their first arrival in this country 1608, entered into alliance with the Five Nations called by the French Iroquois; it continued without interruption, and remains to this day a firm alliance with the English || who succeeded the Dutch in the European jurisdiction of these countries.

These five tribes of Indians are called nations, though properly all of one nation; they are distinguished by the names of Mohawks, Oneides, Onondagues, Cayugas, and Senecas. In the North-Carolina war with the Tuscaroras Indians 1711, many of these Tuscaroras were obliged to fly their country, and settled with the Onondagues and Cayugas, and are now called the Sixth nation. The several small villages of Sesquahanna and Delaware river Indians, are under the protection of the Senecas; the Senecas are by far the largest of the Six nations, and lie upon the frontiers of Pennsylvania. Several of the renegadoes of the Five nations have settled above Montreal, and are called Cohunagos or praying Indians.

Why do we not send military officers amongst the Indians to instruct them in the European arts of war. The French with good success follow this practice. Some say that the officers of the four independent companies of fusiliers \* in New-York live like military monks in idleness and luxury.

The French use an argument with the Indians to be of their side, viz. that they do not covet their lands, as the English do.

|| The reader may excuse my frequent inadvertent impropriety of writing in times since the union, English instead of British; it is the common speech expression, but very improper.

\* Fusiliers are so called, because they are supposed to be armed with light musquets called fuses.



During K. William's war, the inhabitants of Canada lived in continual fears of these Five Indian nations, their seed time and harvest were much neglected. Canada is a tyrannical government and barren soil. Their lands scarce produce sufficient for the sustenance of the inhabitants.

We may observe, that amongst the abovesaid Six Indian nations or tribes, the Onondagues resemble that canton, where the deputies of the several Swiss cantons meet upon affairs of great concern. The Onondagues, Oneides, and Cayugas, have frequently been in the French interest, by the management of the French missionary priests. Our missionary priests, instead of this laborious, but vastly useful publick duty, are indulged in a sort of sine cures, in our most opulent and well provided settlements; they labour only in confounding the sober and industrious well-meaning presbyterians, congregationalists, &c. to the great detriment of the publick good; a new regulation amongst our missionaries is much wanted.

1665, Sept. Courfai arrived governor of Canada; next spring with 28 companies of regular troops, and all the marching posse of Canada that could be spared, marched perhaps 250 leagues into the country of the Five nations; they did little or no execution; and 1667 a peace was concluded between the French and their Indians, and the province of New-York with their Five nations of Indians; this peace continued till 1683.

1684, De la Barre governor of Canada, with all the posse of Canada, marched and rendezvouzed at Cataragui fort, † while at the same time he was only amusing

† It is now called fort Frontenac, being built by count de Frontenac governor of Canada, on Cataragui lake, near the mouth of Cataragui river, which runs to Montreal, and with the Ouatawaes river forms the great river of Canada called the river of St. Laurence.

M de la Salle upon Cataragui lake built a bark of 60 tuns, but the neighbouring Indians in jealousy soon burnt her.



the government of New-York, with some trifling complaints against the Five Indian Nations, to lull them asleep. 1684, in July, lord Howard of Effingham, governor of Virginia, and col. Dongan lieut. governor of New-York, had an interview with the Five Indian nations at New-York.

1685, marquis de Nonville, who succeeded the governor general de la Barre, with 1500 men, regular troops, Canada militia, and Indians, rendezvouzed at fort Frontenac or Cataraqui, designed against the Five Indian nations; they did no execution.

1687, governor general Nonville with 1500 French and Indians insulted the Seneca nation. In return for this the Five Iroquois nations to the number of 1200 men, July 26, 1688, invaded the island of Montreal; the governor general with his court, were there at that time; they ravaged the country, killed many people, and carried off captives; the Mohawks lost only three men; the French abandoned their fort upon Cataraqui lake, and left 26 barrels of gun-powder.

In February 1689-90, the French, consisting of 500 Coureurs des bois (in New-England they are called Swampiers,) with as many Indians or savages, made incursions upon the province of New-York; they burnt Corlaer's village called Schenectady, and murdered 63 persons.

In the memory of man the Mohawks never received such a blow as in the winter 1692-3; col. Fletcher with 300 volunteers marched to Albany, and the French with their Indians returned home.

1696, the French with a large force made an incursion upon the New-York Indians, with a design to destroy the settlements of Albany and Schenectady, but were repulsed by governor Fletcher.

During queen Anne's war, the Five Indian nations

For the Indian nations where the English and French have particular concerns, see vol. I. p. 179.

For the Iroquois or six nations of Mohawk Indians, see vol. I. p. 185; they may consist of about 1500 marching men.



had a neutrality with the Canada French and their Indians, and by this means the province of New-York carried on a continued advantageous trade with Canada.

New-York had no concern in the New-England Indian war 1722 to 1725.

The French had lately erected a fort at Crown-Point near the lake Champlain upon the frontiers of New-York government; during the late French war from 1744 to 1747 inclusive, Crown-Point was the rendezvous of the Canada French and their Indians, consequently their onsets were mostly upon the province of New-York and the N. W. corner of the province of Massachusetts-Bay: 1745 from Crown-Point they destroyed Saratoga settlement, about 30 miles above Albany. The New-York frontier places where militia were posted, are Schenectady, Albany, and Kinderhoek. Anno 1745, 1746, and 1747, the French and their Indians, above Albany, killed and captivated above 320 of our people.

Toward that chargeable amusement, called the intended expedition against Canada of 1746, New-York province contributed 15 companies of 100 men per company; the 6l. New-York currency in levy money, and victualling for 16 or 17 months, was a considerable load.

The four independent regular companies of 100 men each, stationed at New-York many years, are an advantage to the country; they draw from Great-Britain, about 7,500l. sterl. per ann.

Succession of governors in the province of New-York.

I shall not enumerate the commanders in chief, during the possession and jurisdiction of the Dutch, they were stiled variously, viz. directors, generals, governors, &c. The present stile of the British governor, is, "Captain  
" general, and governor in chief in and over the province  
" or colony of New-York, and territories thereon de-  
" pending, and vice admiral of the same." Before the revolution, the commanders in chief had only the title of lieutenant governor under the duke of York, as  
he



he was principal governor by patent. Upon K. James II. abdication, the property and government of the colony of New-York, and the territory of Sagadahock in New-England, reverted to the crown.

The first English governor was col. Richard Nichols, his commission bore date April 2, 1664, he was commander of the land forces in the reduction of New-Netherlands, and one of the commissioners for settling the boundaries of our colonies in North-America. He continued governor to 1683, and was succeeded by

Sir Edmond Andros, \* he was governor only for a short time, and was removed to the government of New-England; the several charter colonies of New-England having from the iniquity of the times, either by a course in law had their charters taken from them, or tacitly dropt; he arrived in Boston in December 1686 with lieut. governor Nicholson and two independent companies of soldiers. See vol. I. p. 413. In April 1689, by a revolution in New-England, in consequence of the general revolution at home, he was disqualified and went home; excepting his bigotry † to popery and the arbitrary power of his prince, he was a good moral man. He was appointed governor of Virginia 1692; he died in London 1714, of a good old age.

Andros was succeeded by col. Dongan 1684; he was a Roman catholick, but much of a gentleman and patriot,

\* Sir Edmond Andros 1672 had some command in New-York, and after him col. Lovelace.

† The Roman catholick religion or popery seems to be requisite where an arbitrary power in the king and his ministry are endeavoured after. An enthusiastick implicit faith as to religion in the pope and his clergy, is in a political way, a natural introduction of a passive obedience in civil affairs, to the king and his ministry; and perhaps in all politias, an enthusiastick (man is an enthusiastick animal) superstitious deference for the clergy is a fine qua non in civil government; therefore the clergy ought to be sacred, and not ridiculed by the inconsiderate wits of the age; the famous Dr. Swift is here much to be faulted, his fort was in this sort of ridicule. The devotion we pay to the clergy introduces a proper submission to civil authority; and it is the clergy's business to labour this point.



he was irreconcilable to a French interest; upon the revolution, being a papist, he was in consequence dismissed from his government; but as a reward for his merits, he was created earl of Limerick. He made several grants of lands in Sagadahock, the duke of York's property, at present under the jurisdiction of the province of Massachusetts-Bay; these grants in time, when claims are to be settled, may occasion much confusion.

Upon the revolution, col. Benjamin Fletcher was appointed, he came over 1692 with some regular troops, and was very industrious in repulsing the Canada French and their Indians. In his time, 1696, the church of England in New-York (called Trinity church) was built; it is the only church of England upon the island.

After this col. Leslie usurped the government (as his partisans said, for a publick good) for which he and his friend Milburn suffered as traitors, having held out for some time the fort against col. Slaughter, who was appointed governor by the king, and upon this kind of interregnum, succeeded Slaughter, he died soon in New-York.

Col. Dudley, as president, succeeded in the chief command of the province; he was afterwards governor of the province of Massachusetts-Bay for many years, see vol. I. p. 478. He was a cunning man, and some say, a notorious time-server.

Lord Bellomont was appointed governor 1697; in his very late passage to his government of New-York, the ship by stress of weather was obliged to bear away to Barbadoes, and did not arrive in New-York till May 1698. He was at the same time governor of New-York, Massachusetts-Bay and New-Hampshire: he did not proceed to Boston till June 1699, and after obtaining a generous allowance of 1000l. and a gratuity of 500l. from the assembly, he returned to New-York. In New-York he was allowed 1500l. currency yearly salary, and the lieut. governor capt. Nanfon was allowed 500l. lord Bellomont died in New-York, February 1700-1.

Lord



Lord Cornbury, son to the earl of Clarendon, succeeded; he arrived in New-York 1701: upon the proprietors of the Jerseys resigning the government into the hands of queen Anne, he was likewise 1702 appointed governor of the Jerseys. Earl of Clarendon, formerly lord Cornbury, went home by way of Virginia, and was succeeded by

Lord Lovelace; he arrived November 13, 1708, and died in May 1709.

1710, April, col. Ingoldsby, capt. of one of the independent companies, by a letter from the queen to the council of New-York, was dismissed from being lieut. governor of New-York and Jerseys.

1710, June 14, arrives col. Robert Hunter with 2700 Palatines to settle in the province of New-York; these Palatines were allowed only 10 acres of land to one family, therefore they generally removed to Pennsylvania, where they had better encouragement. 1707, col. Hunter had been appointed lieut. governor of Virginia, but was taken by the French in his voyage thither. From New-York he went for England 1719.† Upon K. George II. accession, he was continued governor of New-York and the Jerseys. Upon account of his health, he obtained the government of Jamaica, he arrived in Jamaica, February 1727-8; by this advice of his physicians he certainly obtain'd a reprieve of his life for some years.

Col. Hunter was succeeded in the government of New-York by William Burnet, Esq; a worthy son of the celebrated bishop Burnet; || he arrived in autumn 1721.

Upon the accession of K. George II. col. Montgomery, a favourite, was appointed governor of New-York, and Mr. Burnet was removed to the government of Massachusetts-Bay commonly called New-England, where he died Sept. 7, 1729. Governor Montgomery arrived in New-York, April 28, 1728, and died there July 1, 1731.

† His wife, lady H. y, died August 1716.

|| See vol. I. p. 480.



In January 1731-2, col. Cosby was appointed governor of New-York and the Jerseys: after a few years he died in New-York.

August 1736, George Clarke, Esq; lieut. governor of New-York succeeded in the administration, and continued some years.

George Clinton, Esq; \* uncle to the earl of Lincoln, was appointed governor of New-York in May 1741, he did not arrive in his government until September 21, 1743; he continues governor at this present writing, July 1751.

### Concerning the legislature and laws of New-York.

It is a fundamental in the British constitution both at home and abroad, in all the plantations, to make no laws, nor to raise any money without the consent of the people.

The legislature of the colony of New-York consists of three negatives.

1. The governor or commander in chief for the time being.

2. The council; their complement is twelve in number, appointed by the king; when by death or other circumstances they fall short of a certain number, the governor may pro tempore fill them up to that number.

3. The 27 representatives of the people elected by themselves; they are all county representatives, excepting the representatives of four towns, and of three great manors, viz. For the county of

Richmond	2	New-York county and city	4
King's	2	Albany city	2
Queen's	2	West-Chester borough	1
Suffolk	2	Schenectady town	1
West-Chester	2	Mannor of Ranslaer	1
Orange	2	Livingston	1
Ulster	2	Courtland	1
Albany	2		

\* The hon. George Clinton Esq; is at present admiral of the white.



In each of our colonies there are some fundamental constitutions which may be reckoned as invariable. 1. In the charter governments, their charters are their direction. 2. In the proprietary governments of Maryland, Jerseys,† and Pennsylvania, there are the proprietors original concessions to the people, not to be varied, but under certain restrictions; for instance, in Pennsylvania, no article in the law of Mr. Penn's concessions can be altered without the consent of six in seven of the assembly men or representatives. 3. In the royal or crown governments, the governor's commission with the instructions, are the magna charta of the colony during that commission; moreover, some of the assemblies in king's government at their first congress or formation, make fundamental laws for themselves; I shall, for instance, adduce that of New-York. Amongst our colonies we have very considerable variations in their constitutions. In Pennsylvania there are only two negatives in the legislature, the council having no negative. In Virginia no bill can originate with the council. In some colonies the governor and council are the supreme court of judicature; in others they are no court of judicature.

The New-York printed law-book begins April 1691 with a magna charta or fundamental constitution, viz. That the kings of England only, are invested with the right to rule this colony; and that none can exercise any authority over this province, but by his immediate authority under his broad seal of the realm of England. That the supreme legislative power and authority (under the king) shall be in the governor, council, and representatives of the people in general assembly; the exercise and administration of the government shall be in the governor and council, with the consent of at least five of the council; to govern according to the laws of the

† Jerseys ever since 1702 is become a king's government, but they still observe the concessions of the proprietors called their law of concessions.



province, or in defect of them, by the laws of England. Upon the death or absence of a governor, the first in nomination of the council to preside. That every year there be held an assembly, and every freeholder of 40s. per ann, and freeman of a corporation, shall have a vote in chusing representatives; here the representatives are enumerated, and as many more as his majesty shall think fit to establish. That the representatives during their sessions, may adjourn themselves and purge their own house; no member going, coming, and during the sessions, to be arrested or sued, except for felony and treason. Their laws to continue in force till disallowed by his majesty, or till they expire. That every man shall be judged by his peers, and all tryals shall be by the verdict of 12 men of the neighbourhood; that in all capital and other criminal cases there be a grand inquest to present the offender, and afterwards 12 men to try the offender. That in all cases bail by sufficient sureties be allowed, unless in case of treason, and of such felonies as are restrained from bail by the laws of England. That no tax or imposition be laid but by the general assembly. That no freeman, tavern-keepers excepted, be compelled to entertain any soldier or mariner, unless in times of actual war with the province.—That all lands in this province be accounted as freehold and inheritance in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of East-Greenwich in England. That all wills attested by three or more witnesses, and registered with the office of the county in a set time, be a sufficient conveyance for lands, &c. That any christian religion not disturbing the peace of the province, be freely allowed of, the Roman catholick excepted. † The enacting stile is, “By the governor, council, and general assembly of the province of New-York.”

A summary cannot enumerate many of their municipal

† In Pensylvania and Maryland, by the royal patents, by the proprietors concessions, and by the subsequent provincial laws, Roman catholicks are not excepted.



laws. The justices of each county shall yearly summon all the freeholders in January to chuse two church wardens and 10 vestry men to assess, and the minister to be called, chosen and appointed by the wardens and vestry. Elections for representatives to be in the sheriff's court of the county or city, qualification for a voter 40s. at least freehold per annum improved land, no person to be chosen but who resides in the place. An. 1700 there was no act to prevent all vexatious suits or actions against those who at the happy revolution in England, did here begin such another revolution; they appointed capt. Jacob Leyfler their commander in chief till his majesty K. William's pleasure should be known; and did seize the persons and goods of several disaffected people. In each county or town, at the sessions of the peace, the justices of the peace, or at least five of them, whereof two of the quorum, shall appoint the rate for their county, as also a treasurer and collector. All men from 16 to 60 æt. to be listed in some company of militia; each foot-man to have a cartouch box and six charges, the horse 12 charges; at their habitation to keep one pound powder, three pound bullets each foot; and two pound powder, and six pound bullets each horse.

In the province of New-York, to obtain a good title to vacant lands, first there must be produced an Indian deed, which must be approved of by the governor and council; by warrant it is surveyed by the provincial surveyor, and patented by the governor and council: the fees are very high.

The quit-rents for lands lately taken up are 2 s. proclamation money per 100 acres. Two thirds of the government pay small or no quit-rents, especially for old grants, the larger grants on Hudson's river called manors; their quit-rents are only a pepper-corn, buck-skin, or the like, when demanded.

The valuations of the several counties may be taken from



from the quotas allowed each of them, in proportion to their respective taxes, when paper money was emitted upon loan; for instance 1738, they emitted 40,000l. currency upon loan, whereof.

To New-York city and county	10,000l.
Albany city and county	5,000
Queen's county	6,000
King's county	2,400
Suffolk county	3,000
Richmond county	1,600
Ulster county	4,000
Orange county	2,000
Dutchess county	2,000
West-Chester	4,000
	<hr/>
	40,000l.

As to their paper currencies they are referred with other things of that nature to the appendix. At present I shall only observe, that towards the charge of an intended expedition against Canada 1709, they emitted 13,000l. publick bills of credit at 8s. currency per oz. silver, bearing interest; in the after emissions, no interest was allowed, the contrivers of this fraudulent paper money currency, perceived that a reasonable interest would prevent its depreciation, and obstruct the advantages which they proposed from its depreciation. || They plausibly and fallaciously alledged, that the allowing of interest, occasioned their being hoarded up as common bonds bearing interest, and did not serve as a

|| This was the case in the enormous multiplied emissions of paper credit or money, as it was called, in a neighbouring province; as the governor happened himself to be of the debtor side of the question, and for valuable considerations, as it is said, instead of borrowing the money already emitted, from the merchants at a reasonable interest, which they generously offered, and which would have prevented further depreciating emissions; he chose rather, though with the consequence of involving the country in confusion and ruin, in favour of the land bank (an assumed name) and other fraudulent debtors, to depreciate the debts by vast multiplied emissions bearing no interest.

common



common currency. In answer to this, the anti-depreciators may observe, 1. That any considerate good man will allow, that money not payable or cancellable till after some years, if only upon note bearing no interest, is not so valuable as the same sum of money upon bond bearing interest, payable after the same number of years; that is, these bills upon note only, in the nature of things must admit a depreciation or discount, and still a greater discount if these notes stretch too much their credit: this is the genuine mercantile nature of our depreciating plantation paper currency. 2. In the beginning they were not emitted as a tender in law, or common currency; but as government bonds or debentures bearing interest as are the transferable stocks of publick debts in Great-Britain, which by reason of the interest allowed, do increase to a valuable premium upon a transfer, and cannot depreciate as the plantation publick notes of credit have done.

As the plantations are at a vast distance from parliamentary enquiry, some of our colonies have from time to time been loaded with amusing feint expeditions, the original and continuing causes of the plantation fraudulent paper credit called paper currency; the fraudulent debtors finding their advantage in depreciations, contrived fundry methods of further paper credit emissions: thus in Massachusetts-Bay in the course of some years in the administration of governor Sh —, one shilling was depreciated to the value of one penny sterl. New-York did restrain itself from running much into a multiplied depreciating paper currency, so that their exchange with London never did exceed 190l. New-York currency for 100l. sterl. N. B. When I any where mention exchange, I mean private punctual bills of exchange; government bills admit of a dilatory payment, and are bought cheaper; for instance, upon the Cuba or Spanish West-India expedition, government bills were sold in New-York and East-Jersey at 140 to 150; in West-Jersey and Pensylvania at 130 to 135; when



when at the same time private punctual bills were sold at 190 in the first, and at 180 in the other places.

The militia of the province of New-York, are nearly upon the same regulation with the militia of New-England; besides there are four regular independent companies of fusiliers, 100 private men to a company; their pay, cloathing, and accoutrements from Great-Britain, amount yearly to upwards of 7800l. sterl. they are under the immediate direction of the commander in chief for the time, and are a considerable perquisite: they are principally stationed at the city of New-York, Albany, and Oswego; New-York was so called from the duke of York's English title, and Albany (formerly Orange Fort, by the Dutch) by his Scots title; the battery at New-York is called Fort George.

Besides the 5 or 6 nations of Iroquois or Mohawk Indians, there are several small parcels of Indians, upon the upper parts of Hudson's river, called River Indians or Mohegins; this was the Indian name of the great river, now called Hudson's river.

At sundry times in the city of New-York there have been negro conspiracies, more than in the other colonies; this I cannot account for; April 1712, a negro conspiracy kills many white men, and sets the town on fire.

Courts of judicature are much the same as in New-England. † The judges of the superior or supreme court are appointed by the king in council, and sometimes pro tempore by the governor; they are called first, second, &c. judges: the first judge is called chief justice, and seems to have a considerable authority or influence above the other judges. The present chief justice is James Delancy Esq; of a regular liberal education,

† This summary if not check'd, is like to become too bulky, therefore I shall avoid repetition of things which bear a semblance to things already said.



and good estate; he was appointed by governor Cosby, 1733, in place of Lewis Morris, Esq; who succeeded an eminent lawyer Roger Mompesson, Esq; chief justice of New-York and the Jerseys, who surrendered that of the Jerseys 1709.

Here is a court of chancery, a court not known in New-England, the governor is chancellor. In many of our colonies it renders the courts below of less authority; as it is very chargeable, and may be arbitrary, the chancellor ought to be a distinct person from the governor (as are the intendants of the French colonies) and upon misdemeanor, liable to the governor's inspection by suspension, or the like.

The general assembly is no court of judicature, but they examine into the erroneous proceedings of the courts of judicature, and grant re-hearings.

Concerning New-York produce, manufactures, trade, and navigation.

Wheat and flour are the most considerable articles of their produce and manufactures; see their exports of provisions, in the clauses of custom-house entries and clearances.

Skins and furs are a good article, but not so large as formerly.

The article of iron in pigs and bars is a growing affair.

Schuyler's copper ore is from a mine in Jerseys, but exported from New-York, therefore it is mentioned in this section. In the beginning of its discovery it seemed to be very rich: it appears that it was formerly wrought by the Dutch, because in new working of it, were found hammers, wedges, &c. it sold in Bristol the ore at 40 l. sterl. per tun. The cartage to Hudson's river is short, and their first agreement with the miner, was to allow him one third of the ore for raising and laying it above ground; it was done up in quarter barrels, whereof six made a tun. The richness of this copper



mine made so much noise in the world, that a few years since, to engross this ore for the benefit of Great-Britain, it was by act of parliament enumerated; but lately it has not been wrought and exported, as appears by the quarterly accounts of the custom-house of New-York; I cannot account for this.

By a late act of parliament, salt may be imported directly from any parts of Europe to New-York.

In queen Anne's reign there were three government packet boats, which alternately sailed monthly between England and New-York, to tarry fourteen days at New-York, for the plantations or colonies benefit of trade, and for the government dispatches; these have been laid aside many years.

Governor Burnet (his head was well turned) obtained an act of assembly 1727, afterwards confirmed by the king in council, prohibiting all trade with Canada, that the French might not be supplied with goods (in one year 900 pieces of strouds have been carried from Albany to Montreal) suitable for promoting a French civil as well as trading interest with the Indians, and that the Indians may be induced to go a trading to Oswego, † a late well projected and well executed English mart for Indian trade; governor Burnet always and effectually minded the business of his destination. The Indian trade is now in the hands of many; before governor Burnet's time it was engrossed by a few, and the Indians are become more dependent upon the English than formerly. From Albany to Oswego, is a much easier conveyance, than from Montreal, 200 miles up a rapid stony river to fort Frontenac on lake Ontario, called also Oswego.

In the province of New-York there is one collection or custom-house district, kept in the port of New-

† The carriage or communication between Albany and Oswego is so commodious, that at a time in relieving the garrison of Oswego, 40 people came in one birch canoe, 45 feet in length, 7 feet in breadth, from Oswego to Schenectady 183 miles, carrying places included.



York; the twelve months accounts from September 29, 1749, to September 29, 1750, stands thus:

Entered inwards.		Cleared outwards.	
Ships	23	Ships	36
Snows	22	Snows	28
Brigantines	45	Brigantines	58
Sloops	131	Sloops	150
Schooners	11	Schooners	14
<hr/>		<hr/>	
232		286	

Here are included all vessels both on foreign voyages, and on coasting voyages of the neighbouring colonies; whereas in the collections of New-England the foreign voyages are only to be understood; for instance, Boston custom-house from Christmas 1747 to Christmas 1748, foreign vessels cleared out 540, entered in 430; the fishing and coasting vessels of the adjoining colonies of Massachusetts-Bay, New-Hampshire, Connecticut, and Rhode-Island, amounted to about as many, and are not included.

N. B. No copper ore was exported in these twelve months.

Entered in from Great-Britain and Ireland 16 vessels; cleared out for Great-Britain and Ireland 21 vessels; cleared out for Holland 5 vessels.

Cleared out 6731 tun provisions, chiefly flour; besides grain estimated or shipped by number of bushels, and not by tuns.

Imported about 800 pipes Madeira wines, whereof re-exported 226 pipes. The Madeira wines shipped to New-York are reckoned better than what are shipped to any other of our colonies, therefore some are re-shipped to the other colonies.

Cleared out, tar 2008 barrels, pitch 156, turpentine 20, which were imported to New-York from the Carolinas. The colony of New-York does not produce naval stores sufficient for their own use.



## Mountains, rivers, and some miscellanies.

The most considerable high lands are the Catkill mountains west of Hudson's river, and about 90 miles N. from New-York. What I mentioned vol. I. p. 454, 455, by way of annotation, concerning the runs of water from the Catkill mountains, en passant; now in its proper place requires to be corrected, and ought to be understood as follows. On the east and south east sides of Catkill mountains, several streams run, and fall into Hudson's river below Albany; on their N. W. side proceeds Schorie river, and falls into Mohawks river, a branch of Hudson's river, at fort Hunter about 30 miles above Albany; and this Schorie river in its course comes within three or four miles of the main branch of Delaware river; from the S. W. side flows a considerable branch of Delaware river. Conajoharie river falls into the Mohawks river about 10 miles above fort Hunter, and comes very near to a branch of Sasquahanna river; this branch of Sasquahanna is so large, that at 18 miles from the Mohawks river, the Indians go down in canoes to all the Indian settlements upon Sasquahanna river. From this situation of these rivers, no runs of water from the Catkill mountains can fall into lake Ontario, into river Ohio, or into the Sasquahanna river.

Excepting Long Island and Staten-Island, the main land sea line, from Byram river to New-York island, is very short.

The only considerable river in this province is Hudson's river; from the elbow where is the great carrying place to Wood-Creek towards Canada, to Sandyhook at its mouth, are near 200 miles; the tide way reaches upwards of 150 miles to Cohoes at the mouth of Mohawks river, about six or seven miles above Albany church, its course is about S. 12 d. W; the tides, that is, the floods and ebbs, are about 12 hours later at Albany than at New-York; a little above the high lands at about 50 miles above the city of New-York, the water of the river be-  
comes



comes fresh; at about 100 miles comes on the W. side Esopus or Soaper's river; the S. line of the province of Massachusetts-Bay continued 20 miles, strikes Hudson's river a little below the mouth of Esopus river; this Esopus river is noted for the manufactures of iron pigs and bars, flour, malt liquor, &c. a little further on the E. side of the great river, is the camp or Palatine town in the manner of Livingston about 40 miles below Albany; at 125 miles on the E. side falls in Kinderhock river after receiving Claverhock river; the great Ranslaers mannor, or Ranslaer Wyk, reaches along the great river, and 20 miles each side of the river from Kinderhock mannor to Mohawks river; in this mannor is the city of Albany, and many peculiar tracts of land; at 150 miles as the river runs is the city of Albany; at 157 miles on the W. side is Cohoes, or the mouth of Mohawks river; at 162 miles is Housuck river's mouth, where live a small tribe of Indians called Scatacocks; this Housuck river is on the E. side of the great river, and comes from the north west parts of Massachusetts, and the S. W. parts of New-Hampshire; the north line of Massachusetts-Bay province continued 20 miles, falls in with Hudson's river a little below Cohoes; at 200 miles from New-York is the elbow or flexure of this great river at the great falls. From these great falls the route to Montreal in Canada is 10 to 15 miles land carriage to Wood-Creek, then along the Verdrongen drowned or overflowed lands to Crown-point a French fort and pass near lake Champlain, then along this lake to Chamblais river, and a little above Chamblais, || another French fort and pass upon Chamblais river, cross la Prairie to Montreal. There is another route up Hud-

|| As we formerly hinted, from fort Chamblais down the river of that name are 17 leagues to cape Sorel upon the great river of Canada; this fort Sorel is 15 leagues below Montreal, and 35 leagues above Quebec the capital of Canada, the ordinary residence of the French governor general of Canada. Quebec, from the accurate observations of des Hayes, is 70 d. W. from London. Boston, the metropolis of British America, by the good observations of Mr. Robie, is 71 d. 30 m. W. from London.



son's river above the elbow falls, to a carrying place to lake Sacrament, and thence to the south end of lake Champlain.

The city of New-York from governor Burnet's observations, lies in 40 d. 50 m. N. lat. 4 h. 58 m. W. long. from London. Here the variation 1723 was 7 d. 20 m. W. decreasing.

Upon the accession of a new governor, the general assembly of New-York generally settle the salaries and other ordinary articles in support of the government, for five or more years.

For their sectaries in religion, see the Rhode-Island sectary, vol. II. p. 156.

As I find that the designed appendix or supplement may prove out of proportion too large, with respect to the principal history, I shall in each subsequent section annex by way of miscellanies some matters which might have been referred to the appendix. These miscellanies are of the nature of digressions, and like change of diet, may relieve a palled stomach or appetite in reading.

Good iron is distinguished by its ringing amongst other bars. The best iron bars break fibrous and bearded; if they break glassy and shining, the iron is brittle, and not good.

The inconveniencies of small governments or provinces, such as is that of New-Hampshire in New-England, is that perhaps they are below the notice of the ministry and boards in Great-Britain; their governors and other officers are of little consideration, have little or nothing to lose, and therefore act impune.

The plantation legislatures are so far circumscribed, that they can make no laws inconsistent with the laws of Great-Britain.

If the French be allowed to become masters of the river of St. Laurence, of the great inland lakes, and of the great river Mississippi; they are in consequence masters of all the inland trade of North-America; an incredible prejudice to the British nation.



The back of Long-Island was the first place of the English whale fishery, small whales affect flats; and at this time whalers make voyages upon the flats of Virginia and Carolinas.

It is said that the common laws of England extend to the plantations; that the statute laws made since the plantations had a being, do not include them unless they are particularly mentioned in the act of parliament.

In all our colony assemblies of representatives, there ought to be a limited small quorum of members to meet, adjourn, and to send for absent members, and a much larger quorum to proceed upon business: this regulation may also take place with relation to the judges of the several executive courts of law.

To obviate any prejudices which a reader may entertain against this historical summary, composed with much labour, merely for a publick good; the writer thinks it convenient at times to explain himself in general. 1. He has endeavoured a laconick stile, which by many is reckoned harsh, and not fluent or sonorous; the good judges, the mathematicians and merchants, use it as the strongest, the most concise and expressive. 2. The writer is of no party, and subjected to no dependence; he is neither whig nor tory, a temporary courtier nor anti-courtier: a tory is for rendering that branch of the present legislature called king or monarch, sole and independent, with a passive obedience and non-resistance; a republican is for lowering or annihilating the prerogatives of a king, and for an unlimited extension of the privileges of the people in their representatives; but a genuine whig is for maintaining the ballance of power among the several orders or negatives of the legislature; I profess myself of this politia, as it is no faction; all the others are factious. 3. Religion, as it was in all times, and in all countries, designed for the benefit of society; it naturally is subordinate to the civil government; and a resident, whether native or adventitious, ought occasionally to conform to the established manner



manner of the sectaries tolerated by the laws of the country, though not rashly to renounce that form of worship which was parental or educational, which generally tends to libertinism and licentiousness in religion. 4. As in my course of the colonies I continue to increase my distances, it is not to be expected that I can be so particular and copious, but shall endeavour strictly to investigate the truth, though the further from my place of residence my view becomes more contracted and less distinct.

In the British plantations or colonies all grants of lands made by the governor and council, are declared to be good in law, against his majesty and successors.

As the king and his ministry in Great-Britain, though they do not chuse the parliament, yet have a very great influence in the choice; so it is with respect to the governors and assembly men in our colonies.

The representatives from the several counties and townships are not their peculiar or separate agents, but their quota in their provincial representation; hence it is that they are not under the cognizance of their county or town, but under that of the general assembly.

The North-America trade consists in fish, naval stores, other timber and lumber, skins, furs, tobacco, and rice; I do not mention copper ore though enumerated, because at present it is not wrought or exported.

The publick taxes in our provinces, are the province and county rates; and the township or parochial rates for the ministers of the gospel, called pastors, priests, rectors, and other denominations, as also for the school, poor, highways, and fundry other small articles.

By act of parliament, 1731, there may be imported from the British plantations into Ireland in British shipping, all sorts of plantation goods excepting those goods commonly called enumerated commodities, viz. sugar, tobacco, cotton wool, indigo, ginger, speckle wood or Jamaica wood, fustick or other dying woods, rice,



rice, molosses, beaver-skins and other furs, copper ore, pitch, tar, turpentine, masts, yards, and bowsprits.

The sugar act (as it is called) of parliament 1733, and since continued, is concerning foreign plantation produce or manufacture, imported into the British plantations, viz. rum, duty 9d. sterl. per gallon, molosses or syrups 6d. sugars and paneeles 5s. per ct. wt.

In North-America, hunting, fishing and fowling, with sundry berries and earth-nuts are the principal food or subsistence of the Indians; the more civilized, cultivate Indian corn and kidney beans, called Indian beans. The bread grain in Europe, is generally wheat, rye, oats, and barley for baking and malting.

The \* wool in our northern plantations is of as good a staple, but coarser than the English wool; the further south in our colonies, the wool becomes coarser, even to a *lana caprina*, as in our sugar islands; therefore the plantations are not capable of rivalling England in fine woollens.

In our northern colonies after the middle of Sept. scarce any species of spontaneous plants make a seasonable appearance; consequently botanick simpling is then over.

In our new wilderness colonies, the timber and other forest wood of the first clearing is generally doted, because ancient or old; the following growths are good and found.

In the price of grain and other provisions there is a sort

\* There are certain ports only, allowed in Great-Britain and Ireland, for the exportation and importation of wool and woollens. No cloths, excepting of the manufacture of Great-Britain, can be imported into any of his majesty's dominions.

The woollens from Great-Britain exported annually are computed at about three millions sterling; but being free of duty, they for some selfish ends are not entered exactly, therefore the value cannot be accurately ascertained.

The woollens of Great-Britain are above one third of the universal export. At a medium, wool manufactured is double the value of the wool itself, and deducting all charges, one third of the neat profit goes to the landlord.



of natural standard, whereby the husbandman may have a living profit, and the labourers in manufacture, &c. may not have provisions so cheap, that the earnings of a few days work will afford some days of idleness; in this respect our produce and manufactures have some kind of a natural dependence.







## SECTION XIII.

Concerning the PROVINCE of

## New-Jersey or Nova-Cæsarea.

WE have in the section of New-York \* given some general account of the first settlement of New-Netherlands or Nova-Belgia, which comprehended the present New-York, New-Jersey, and the three lower counties of Pennsylvania upon Delaware river.

Upon a design formed by the court of England to reduce New-Netherlands, † K. Charles II. made a previous grant of the property and government of the same to his brother the duke of York, March 12, 1663-4; it was not reduced by settled articles until September 1664, and confirmed to England by the treaty of Breda, 1667.

The duke of York by commission April 2, 1664, appointed Richard Nichols, Esq; deputy governor of all New-Netherlands, but did not enter upon his government till Aug. 27, 1664, which was posterior to the duke of York's assignment, June 24, 1664, of the property and government of New-Jersey to lord Berkley and Sir Geo. Carteret.

The duke of York, June 24, 1664, made a joint grant of that part of New-Netherlands (now called New-Jersey) ||

\* P. 220, &c.

† Stuyvesand was at that time Dutch governor of New-Netherlands. His commission from the States General was dated July 26, 1646.

|| This grant was called New-Jersey, from the name of the island of Jersey in the channel of England, the country of Sir George Carteret one of the first assignees. It is sometimes called Nova-Cæsarea.



to lord Berkley of Stratton, and Sir George Carteret; they appointed Philip Carteret, Esq; their lieut. governor; he entered upon his government in Aug. 1665, where he remained only six months, and returned to England, and back again to his government of the Jerseys. This grant of the duke of York, was from the Noorde Rivier, now called Hudson's river, to the Zuyde Rivier, now called Delaware river; and up Hudson's river to 41 d. N. lat. and up Delaware river to 41 d. 20 m; and from these two stations headed by a strait line across.

By the intrigues of France, England was persuaded to proclaim war against the Dutch, March 17, 1671-2, and a Dutch expedition reconquered New-Netherlands from the English July 30, 1673, col. Lovelace was at that time governor; by the treaty of London, February 19, 1673-4, New-Netherlands was restored by the Dutch to the crown of England, and Sir Edmond Andros appointed governor.

As New-Netherlands had been conquered, that is, alienated from England, since the crown of England's former grant to the duke of York; to obviate any difficulties in the validity of that grant, king Charles II. made a new grant of property and government to his brother the duke of York, June 29, 1674, which was published Nov. 6 following. No act of government in the Jerseys is to be found upon record from July 19, 1673, to November 1674.

Duke of York by lease and release, July 28 and 29, 1674, conveyed to Sir George Carteret the eastern division of New-Jerseys, divided from the western division of the Jerseys by a strait line from the S. E. point of Little-Egg harbour in Barnegate creek, being about middle between Sandy-Hook and Cape-May, to a kill or creek a little below Rencokus-Kill on Delaware river, and thence (about 35 miles) strait course along Delaware river up to 41 d. 40 m. N. lat. the north divisional point or station of the divisional line between New-York and the Jerseys. N. B. The first effort of the rioters for



for setting up Indian purchases against the title of the crown was 1672, to evade paying quit-rents which commenced March 25, 1670; they threw off the government of the proprietors, and the people chose a governor for themselves; governor Carteret and his secretary went for England to complain, but the Dutch conquest happening soon after, governor Carteret did not return till November 1674, with new concessions, being the third parcel of concessions, and from that time all remained quiet, and the rules of property were well observed until Sir Edmond Andros broke through all these rules; he usurped the government of all New-Jersey 1680, and carried governor Carteret prisoner from Elizabeth-town to New-York; upon complaints to the duke of York, he with resentment recalled Sir Edmond Andros, and the property and government of the Jersey proprietors was re-established 1683, and continued till some months before the revolution 1688, when K. James broke through the rules of property, and also seized the government of New-Jersey and of the neighbouring provinces, and put them under the command of Sir Edmond Andros; upon the revolution the proprietors re-assumed the right of government. †

Upon the revolution the proprietors appointed John Totham, Esq; their lieutenant governor, and afterwards col. Dudley, \* but the people scrupled to obey them, and the proprietors appointed col. Andrew Hamilton, who continued governor some years; but by some designing men the people received a notion that col. Hamilton, as a Scots man, could not be governor of an English colony; they dismissed him, and constituted Jeremiah Basse governor 1697, but as Basse had never been approved of by the king, the proprietors in a short

† For sake of connection I continue this thread, and leave some intervening matters to be afterwards related.

\* Col. Dudley was afterwards deputy governor of the Isle of Wight, a member of parliament of England, and governor of the provinces of Massachusetts-Bay and New-Hampshire in New-England.



time dismissed him, and reinstated col. Hamilton, but he never was confirmed by the crown, and col. Hamilton was superseded by Mr. Basse a second time, and Basse was finally superseded by Andrew Bowne, Esq; the last governor for the proprietors.

The people of the Jerseys continued for some years so mutinous, that the proprietors for their own ease, by their agents, Sir Thomas Lane for West-Jersey, and Mr. William Dockwra for East-Jersey, in the name of the proprietors, found it expedient by a proper instrument, April 17, 1702, in concert, to surrender the government to the crown, reserving to themselves all their other rights, and they jointly with the crown formed some fundamental articles by way of a magna charta. Lord Cornbury, governor of New-York, was by queen Anne constituted the first crown governor of the united Jerseys.

Lord Berkley, some years after his grant from duke of York 1664, assigned his right to William Penn, Esq; Gawen Laurie of London, merchant, Nicholas Lucas, and Edward Byllyng; shortly after this, these assignees agreed upon a partition with Sir George Carteret, and Sir George obtained of duke of York, July 1674, a confirmation of this partition grant, as is above related—July 1, 1676, Sir George Carteret gave to the assignees of lord Berkley a quit-claim of the West-Jerseys, as these assignees gave to Sir George a like quit-claim of the East-Jerseys; this partition was confirmed by an act of the general assembly of the Jerseys, 1719.

Sir George Carteret made over the East-Jerseys to certain trustees December 5, 1678, to be sold by them after his death. After Sir George's death, the trustees assigned the East-Jerseys to 12 proprietors, February 2, 1681-2.

William Penn,	Thomas Wilcox
Robert West,	Ambrose Riggs,
Thomas Rudyard,	John Hayward,
Samuel Groom,	Hugh Hartshorn,
Thomas Hart,	Clemens Plumsted,
Richard Mew,	Thomas Cooper.



By an instrument amongst themselves, they declared that the purchase was equal, and no advantage should be taken of survivorship. These first proprietors by 12 separate deeds, separately conveyed one half of their interest to 12 other persons separately,

Robert Barclay,  
Edward Byllyng,  
Robert Turner,  
James Brien,  
Arent Soumans,  
William Gibson,

Gawen Laurie,  
Thomas Barker,  
Thomas Warner,  
James Earl of Perth,  
Robert Gordon,  
John Drummond,

in fee simple. The duke of York, March 14, 1682, by patent or grant confirmed the East-Jersies to those 24 proprietors in property and government; and July 17 following the famous Robert Barclay † the quaker, was agreed upon, and under him pro tempore Mr. Laurie with a council. Mr. Barclay continued governor until 1685. He was succeeded by lord Neal Campbell of the Argyl family; about this time came over the quaker so called, George Keith. \*

From the duke of York's first grant of all the Jersies to lord Berkley of Stratton, and to Sir George Carteret knight and baronet, vice chamberlain of his majesty's household, and one of his majesty's most honourable privy council, jointly; Philip Carteret, Esq; was governor of their joint concern, that is, for all the Jersies until 1672, when the people, especially of Elizabeth-town, began to mutiny upon account of the demand of quit-rents, which according to the concessions took place March 25, 1670. These mutineers assumed the go-

† In king Charles II. reign there was a kind of persecution of the nonconformists in religion, and Robert Barclay head of all the quakers in Great-Britain, with his family removed to the Jersies; from this persecution the Jersies is settled chiefly with quakers, anabaptists, and presbyterians.

\* George Keith was a noted quaker, he came over to the Jersies, taught school, and was land surveyor general; he returned to England, and for his conveniency, accepted of a church of England benefice, and wrote against the quakers.



vernment, and constituted James Carteret, a dissolute son of Sir George Carteret, their governor; and governor Philip Carteret was obliged to go to the court of England with complaints against the mutineers; col. Lovelace at this time was governor of New-York; the Dutch conquest intervening, he did not return until 1674, when upon a peace the Dutch resigned to the crown of England the country of New-Netherlands, and the duke of York had made a divisional or separate grant of East-Jersies to Sir George Carteret; governor Carteret brought over some additional concessions, which were called the third concessions; as he had bought some shares in the Elizabeth-town Indian purchase, the Elizabeth-town men gave him no uneasiness, he resided in Elizabeth-town till death; he made it the seat of government. Robert Barclay the noted quaker writer, was the first governor for the 24 proprietors.

Upon the Dutch peace 1674, Sir Edmond Andros was appointed governor of the Jersies, but by virtue of the duke of York's second or divisional grant, Sir George Carteret appointed Philip Carteret, Esq; his lieut. governor for the East-Jersey, in which station he continued to the time of his death, November 1682; he received some insults from Sir Edmond Andros. From 1674, Sir Edmond Andros was governor of the West-Jersies for the duke of York, who had twisted the government out of the hands of lord Berkley's assignees, and upon proper representations the duke of York quitted the government of West-Jersies to the assignees of lord Berkley, and they appointed Edward Byllyng, one of the assignees or proprietors, governor 1680, having obtained a new grant of the West-Jersey; at the same time the duke made a new grant or confirmation of East-Jersey to the grandson of Sir George Carteret. In the West-Jersies to Mr. Byllyng, 1690, succeeded || doctor Daniel Cox of the

|| The affairs of this colony have always been in a confused state, which occasions an unavoidable confusion in the history thereof.

college



college of physicians in London, he having purchased the greatest part of the property of West-Jersey, was governor thereof; but as his professional business did not allow him to leave London, he appointed a deputy governor, and at length sold his interest to Sir Thomas Lane and others for 9000 l. sterl. a great price at that time.

The original 24 shares of East-Jersey by sales of small parts of the shares and succession of children, became very much subdivided; for instance, some proprietors had only one fortieth part, of a forty-eighth part, of a twenty-fourth share; the West-Jersey was in the same condition; this occasioned much confusion in management amongst these general proprietors, particularly in appointing of governors; therefore the proprietors in good prudence resigned the government to the crown, reserving all their other rights as we formerly mentioned; the proprietary government continued until August 14, 1703, when lord Cornbury published his commission from the crown as governor of all the Jerseys; thus the East and West-Jerseys, which had been separate governments from 1674 to 1703, became united in one government or jurisdiction, and continued under the same governor with the province of New-York, until 1736, when the government of New-York devolved upon lieutenant governor Clarke; as he had no command in the Jerseys, the government of the Jerseys devolved upon the president of the council, and ever since the command in chief has been in a distinct person from that of New-York.

Upon the proprietors surrendering of the government to the crown, they obtained of the crown a set of perpetual instructions to all subsequent governors by way of concessions, or magna charta, for the proprietors and people, particularly in favour of the proprietors. 1. Not to consent to any tax upon unprofitable or vacant lands. 2. None but the general proprietors to purchase any lands of the Indians. 3. To take care that all lands purchased, be improved by the possessors.



After the Dutch peace there was (upon ceasing of head-land bounties) 1685, a council of proprietors appointed for the East-Jerfies; they ordered a dividend of 10,000 acres to be taken up at pleasure, to each of the 24 proprietorships of the East-Jerfies; there was a second division of 5000 acres to each of the 24 proprietorships, Feb. 21, 1698; and a division of 2500 acres, Dec. 2, 1702. To enforce the affair of a council of proprietors, there passed an act of general assembly, March 25, 1725, that a certain number of the general proprietors, or their proxies, having the value of eight whole shares in themselves, shall be a council of the proprietors of the eastern division, to divide lands, examine claims, &c. and to have two stated yearly meetings at Perth-Amboy about the times of the sittings of the supreme court of judicature. 1737, the council of proprietors advertised, that after 1739 there should be a further dividend of 2000 acres per ann. to each of the 24 proprietorships, until all vacant lands shall be divided.

In the first concessions, February 10, 1664-5, the proprietors Berkley and Carteret promise to all adventurers and settlers who should plant there, sundry privileges, particularly of head-lands for each head of settlers: this promise was only designed to be of four years continuance, but from time to time was extended to January 13, 1685-6, and then ceased; the general proprietors then began to make dividends amongst themselves as above. The head-lands were to settlers in any place exceeding ten miles from the sea, eighty acres per head, and to those who settle nearer, sixty acres.

In the beginning, the general lots were laid out, none less than 2100 acres, and none more than 21,000 acres; whereof one seventh to be reserved to the general proprietors, the remainder to persons who should come and plant the same.

In taking up of lands either by purchase, and agreement with the general proprietaries as at present, or as formerly



formerly by way of head-lands, the governor and majority of the council gave a warrant to the surveyor general or his deputies, to survey and lay out the same; next the surveyor is to certify the survey, upon which the governor and council make a grant in the form following, “The lords proprietors of Nova-Cæsarea, or New-Jersey, do hereby grant to A. B. of — in the province aforesaid, a plantation containing — acres English measure, to him or her, to his or her heirs or assigns for ever; yielding and paying yearly unto the said lord proprietors, their heirs or assigns, every 25th day of March, according to the English account, one half-penny, lawful money of England, for every one of said acres; to be holden as of the manor of East-Greenwich in free and common soccage, the first payment of quit-rents to begin the 25th — Given under the seal of the province, the — day of — in the year of our Lord — signed by the governor and a majority of the council. N. B. One half part of the mines of gold and silver are reserved; and if in three years, the conditions stipulated are not fulfilled, the grant to be void.”

We may observe, that there are three sorts of proprietors in the Jerseys. 1. The general proprietors. 2. Purchasers under the general proprietors. 3. Claimers under patents for head-lands from the general proprietors on quit-rent.

#### A DIGRESSION concerning Indian deeds, and proprietors quit-rents in the plantations.

In our plantations the case of persons holding lands by Indian deeds only, without the approbation of the crown, or of the respective legislatures who may be deemed to have the exclusive prerogatives of granting the right of pre-emption to subjects; as also the affair of paying quit-rents to the crown, or to general proprietors grantees of the crown, as a matter of considerable



concern, seems to require a digression article : as the colony of New-Jersey is the most noted for these disputes, \* we shall here give the incidents of claims by Indian deeds only, in Elizabeth township.

In both Jerseys several possessions and claims of land are founded upon Indian deeds only ; the Indian Elizabeth-town grant is the most noted, and has been the most vexatious, formerly containing upwards of 400,000 acres of the most valuable lands in New-Jersey, bounded by Raritan river, Amboy-Sound, Arthur Cul-Bay, and Passaick river ; Daniel Pierce, and associates, purchased one half of these lands for 80 l. sterl. and laid out the townships of Woodbridge and Piscataway, for which they soon after obtained sufficient patents from the rightful proprietors under the crown, at one half-penny per ann. quit-rent, and peaceably enjoy the same to this day.

The first Indian grant of these lands was to Augustin Herman, a Dutchman, in 1651 ; upon the Dutch surrender to the crown of England, he relinquished these lands, and therefore they escheated to that crown as derelicts, and consequently could not be conveyed again by the Indians to any person or community.

Notwithstanding of this, six persons with their associates, September 26, 1664, petitioned governor Nichols for liberty to purchase of the Indians, and settle certain

\* Where the peace and tranquility of a country or colony cannot be maintained by the civil power, which it seems to have happened at sundry times in the Jerseys, a military force is absolutely requisite. Some young regiment, instead of being in course disbanded in Great-Britain or Ireland, may be sent to the seditious colony, they will soon quell the rioters, and when the spirit of mutiny is drove out, the regiment may be disbanded in the colony ; they will contribute towards peopling the colony ; and moreover, as being used to a regular and proper submission to authority, by their example, they will teach the same to the people of the colony. Thus the regiment of Carignan some years since was sent over from France to Canada, and disbanded there ; thus in the time of the government of lord Colpepper, a regiment was sent from England to Virginia, to quell the riots under Bacon, and afterwards dissolved there.



tracts of land upon Arthur Cul-Bay, which he granted September 30, 1664; accordingly these associates made a purchase from the Indians, October 28 following, in the name of John Bailey, Daniel Denton, Luke Watson, of Long-Island, husbandmen, and their associates, of a tract of land bounded as above: the consideration was, paying to the Indians 20 fathoms of trading cloth, two made coats, 2 guns, 2 hatchets, 10 bars of lead, 20 handfuls of gun-powder; and after one year's expiration, the remainder of the purchase was 400 fathoms of white wampum (value 20 l. sterl.) or 200 fathoms of black wampum: in consequence of this, governor Nichols granted to these associates a patent for said lands, with a liberty to purchase further of the Indians so far as Snake-Hill, dated December 2, 1664.

That the reader may have some conception of the dispute concerning the property and quit-rents of these lands, between the proprietors who hold of the crown, and of the people who hold by supposed Indian purchases, which has occasioned much disturbance in this government; we shall make the following observations.

1. Nichols, lieutenant governor of New-Jersey for the duke of York, being informed of the duke's assignment to lord Berkley and Sir George Carteret, suspecting that he would soon be superseded by a lieutenant governor of their own appointment, and perhaps for other considerations, September 30, 1664, gave licence to certain persons (as is above related) to purchase lands of the Indians, which they did October 25; and 3d of December following, Nichols gave them a patent for the same, subjected to certain quit-rents. This patent, though posterior to the aforesaid assignment, was conform to his instructions, and before any proper notice received of that assignment, † and therefore in equity alledged to be good, especially

T 3

† The dispute concerning the equivalent lands called the Oblong, made over by the colony of Connecticut to the province of New York, between associates who had a grant of them from the king in council,



especially considering, 2. That Philip Carteret, Esq; lieutenant governor for the assignees, did soon after his entering upon the government of the Jerseys, (he entered August 1665,) as it is said, under hand and seal gave licence to a company of sundry persons to purchase of the Indians within his government what quantity or lands they should think convenient; and accordingly, as the Elizabeth men say, their ancestors with advice and consent of said governor, made sundry purchases of the Indians. 3. Governor Carteret for his own use purchased some of these Indian grant rights, particularly that of Bailey, May 21, 1666; only four families were settled at Elizabeth-town (afterwards so called) before governor Carteret's arrival; Carteret died governor of the East-Jersey, Nov. 1682; during his government the provincial general assemblies, the council, the superior or supreme courts of judicature, and general offices of the government were kept at Elizabeth-town, which was so called by the name of Elizabeth, wife of Sir George Carteret; it was the first English settlement, and the most ancient town of the province.

Moreover, the proprietors who hold by Indian grants, say, as a precedent, although the courts at law in the Jerseys, May 14, 1695, gave judgment of ejectment in favour of James Fullerton, who held under the general proprietors, against Jeffrey Jones, who held by the Indian grants; Jones upon his appeal to the king in council, the judgment was reversed and set aside February 25, 1696: the general proprietors say, that the judgment was reversed only because of some errors in the proceedings. A petition or complaint of Elizabeth-town Indian grant proprietors, was read before the king in council, July 19, 1744, representing the hardships they sustained from the general proprietors. 1. That gene-

cil, and associates who had, conform to instructions, a grant of them from the governor and council of New-York, is of this nature, but hitherto not determined. See vol. II. p. 232.



rally the council and judges are interested in the general proprietors side of the question, and are therefore become judges in their own cause. 2. By act of assembly they have procured part of the county of Somerset, who are mostly of the general proprietors side, to be annexed to the county of Essex, where the lands of the Indian grant proprietors generally lay, for the sake of having juries in their interest. 3. For a six-penny damage, we are sometimes brought in for two or three hundred pounds proclamation money costs; and we are daily threatened with great pretended damages and heavy costs: therefore they pray, that the king would take them under his immediate protection, and either determine the affair in your majesty's most honourable privy council, or appoint disinterested commissioners out of some of the neighbouring colonies, and by a jury from thence also to be taken, to hear and finally decide in said case; or that your majesty would be graciously pleased to appoint commissioners, to hear, enquire into, and determine said controversy; or grant such relief as to your majesty may seem meet. This was referred to the committee of council for plantation affairs. August 21, 1744, this committee refer the petition to the lords commissioners for trade and plantations, to report to the committee, what they conceive proper for his majesty to do therein. The board of trade and plantations report to the said committee of privy council, &c. &c. &c. The character of a summary obliges us to stop; and only further to observe, that this affair hitherto is not issued.

In answer, the general proprietors represent to the board of trade and plantations, 1. That they humbly conceive, the complaint is not sent from the whole body, or from any considerable number of inhabitants there, but from a few factious and mutinous people impatient of any government. 2. The rioters pretend a sole right in the Indians, but no right in the king and his grantees, with a design to deprive the proprietors of their



right to the soil and quit-rent, and with a design to strip his majesty of his royal right to that and the other plantations, and to render them independent of the crown.

Complaints dated April 13, 1745, were filed in chancery of the Jerseys, against the Elizabeth proprietors called Clinker right men, consisting of 124 folio pages; and was followed by a long bill from the council of proprietors of the Eastern division of the New-Jersey met in Perth-Amboy March 25, 1746, in behalf of themselves, and the rest of the general proprietors of the Eastern division of New-Jersey, whom they represent. In these instruments they seem to alledge, 1. That as the Indians had granted these lands to Herman 1651, they could not grant them to Bailey, &c. as is above said. 2. Considering the long possession of the Elizabeth men, and the great charge and labour in clearing these possessions, governor Nichols's patents upon Indian deeds are in equity deemed good; this does not excuse the possessors from paying quit-rents and other acknowledgment conform to the grants; and that in fact March 11, 1674-5, the Elizabeth men offered to pay to the lord proprietor 20 l. sterl. per ann. quit-rent for eight miles square, this offer was refused by the governor and council insisting upon the half penny sterl. per acre per ann. 3. The riotous proceedings of the Elizabeth men and others claiming by Indian deeds, viz. goals broke open, people forceably turned out of the possession of their lands, this they call clubbing them out, and the officers of the government publickly insulted and beat; some of the rioters have come fifty miles and upwards to join in a riot.

The late riots in the Jerseys are between the proprietors who hold by a town right, and those who hold by patents from the general proprietors.

The general proprietors say, that the only good title in the province is under the crown; and all pretences from Indian purchases only are void.



The boundaries of New-Jersey, rivers, and some distances of noted places.

It is bounded easterly by the province of New-York from 41 d. N. lat. on Hudson's river to Sandyhook, about 40 miles; from Sandyhook E. southerly upon the ocean 40 leagues to Cape-May, at the entrance of Delaware Bay; from Cape-May it is bounded westerly on Pennsylvania along the various turnings of Delaware river to 41 d. 40 m. north lat. which if in a streight line, would be about 200 miles; the N. easterly line of New-Jersey with New-York was determined by the duke of York in his grant of New-Jersey to Berkley and Carteret, to be from a point in the main branch of Delaware river in lat. 41 d. 40 m. to a point in Hudson's river in lat. 41 d. the point on Delaware river is fully agreed upon and ascertained by both governments, the other on Hudson's river is not so fully agreed upon; the line from point to point may be about 80 miles long, E. 41 d. S.

Anno 1676, by agreement between the four assignees of lord Berkley on the one side, and Sir George Carteret on the other side, (perhaps this is the reason of the name quinquipartite line) New-Jersey was divided into two provinces, called the East and West-Jersey, and confirmed by the duke of York 1680, and 1682; and by act of assembly 1719; this line as run by Mr. Laurence, November 1744, was in length 150 miles 20 chains, N. 9 d. 19 m. W. from Little-Egg harbour in the ocean, to 41 d. 40 m. N. lat.; the S. point of this line was settled 1676, the north point of the line was settled 1719, but the line itself was never run till 1744, and that only by the proprietors of the East-Jersey ex parte; in this line some errors have been discovered and require to be rectified; as there is a considerable difference in the variations of the compass, at the north and south terminations of this divisional line, this divisional



sional line cannot be streight; the first falls in Delaware river in Trent town are opposite to the 47th mile of this divisional line.

In order to discover the main branch mentioned in the grants, and the largeness of some other branches of Delaware and Seshquahanna rivers, there was lately a survey line run nearly due west from Minisfinck island on Delaware river about 12 miles above the divisional line crossing the N. E. branch of Delaware river, to Seshquahanna river were 85 miles, and where it fell in with Seshquahanna, that river was about 30 chains (4 rod to a chain) wide, and near this there was a branch which fell into the principal river of Seshquahanna about 300 feet wide, and in the fork was an Indian village called Solochka; the west branch of Delaware river was only 25 feet wide, the N. E. branch where the station point of the division line between New-York and Jersey is fixed at 41 d. 40 m. lat. is above 500 feet wide, the fork so called, of Delaware river is about 70 miles upon a streight line below this station point; at this station point anno 1744 the variation of the compass was W. 6 d. 35 m. anno 1719 it was observed to be about 8d. as is before mentioned; the station point at Egg-Harbour 1744 was 5 d. 25 m. Mr. Serjeant Hook some time since made a purchase of 3750 acres upon Delaware river in the West-Jersey, and gave one tenth of it as a glebe to the church.

The principal rivers in the province of New Jersey are the Noorde Rivier or Hudson's river, which we have already delineated in the section of New-York, and Zuide Rivier or Delaware river, which we shall describe in the section of Pennsylvania; only we shall observe, that in the Jersey side of this river are several short creeks, these of Cohansy, and of Salem 20 miles higher, make one district of custom-house; at Bridlington 20 miles above Philadelphia is another custom district: these two custom-house districts, their quarterly entries and clearances



clearances of vessels, are generally nil, and scarce deserve the name of preventive creeks. The main branch of Delaware river comes from Cat-kill mountains, a few miles west of the fountains of Schoharie river a branch of Mohawks river. Raritan river falls into Sandyhook bay at Amboy point, the tide flows 12 miles up to Brunswick; at the mouth of this river is the only considerable sea port and custom-house of New-Jersey; here is the city of Perth-Amboy, it is the capital of the province of New-Jersey, and here are kept the provincial records; here is a good deep water harbour and promising country; but notwithstanding, it has only the appearance of a mean village; the name is a compound of Perth the honorary title of the late Drummond earl of Perth, and Amboy its Indian name.

The sea line of New-Jersey is Arthur Cul-Bay and Amboy-Sound between Staten-Island and the main about 20 miles S. these receive the rivulets of Hackinsack Passaic, Bounds-creek, and Raway, from Amboy point to Sandyhook (Sandyhook is in the East-Jersey) 12 miles E. from Sandyhook to Cape-May 120 miles S. westerly, a flat double sandy shore, having some inlets practicable only by small craft.

There are several chains or ridges of hills in this province, but of no consideration.

Perth-Amboy is the provincial town of East-Jersey, Bridlington in the province town of West-Jersey, distance 50 Miles, where the general assembly of all the Jerseys sits alternately, and where the distinct provincial judicatories or supreme courts sit respectively. Bridlington, commonly called Burlington, is a pleasant village. Elizabeth-town is the most ancient corporation and considerable town of the province. Brunswick in East Jersey is nearly the center of East and West-Jerseys; here is lately established a college \* for the instruction of youth, by

\* Formerly by mistake, I wrote, that this college was by royal charter.



a charter from governor Belcher, October 22, 1746, with power to confer all degrees as in the universities of England: the present trustees are generally presbyterians, a majority of seven or more trustees to have the management; each scholar to pay 4 l. per ann. at 8 s. per oz. silver; Mr Jonathan Dickenfon was their first president, Mr. Burr is their present president; in this college October 5, 1749, commenced 7 batchelors of arts.

The road as in present use, from New-York city to Philadelphia, is, from New-York to Elizabeth-town 17 miles, thence to Brunswick 22 miles, thence to Trent town ferry 30 miles, thence to Bristol opposite to Bridlington 15 miles, thence to Philadelphia 20 miles, being in all from the city of New-York to Philadelphia 104 miles.

From Cape-May to Salem are about 60 miles, thence to Bridlington 50 miles, thence to Trent town falls 15 miles. These are the first falls of Delaware river, and the tide flows so high, below these falls when the tide is down and no land floodings in the river, the river is fordable.

In the province of the Jerseys are five corporations with courts; whereof three are in East-Jersey, the city of Perth-Amboy, the city of New Brunswick, and the borough of Elizabeth-town; and two in the West-Jersey, the city of Bridlington, alias Burlington, and the borough of Trent town; of these only two, Perth-Amboy and Burlington, send representatives to the general assembly.

There is not much to be said concerning their wars with the Indians and Canada French; the Five nations of Iroquois which we call Mohawks, have always been in our interest; they, especially the large tribe of Senecas, cover the provinces of New-Jersey, Pensylvania, Maryland, and Virginia. Ever since the first settling of this province, the publick has never been put to one penny charge for keeping the Indians in peace. The sham

Canada



Canada expeditions of 1709, and 1711, led this province and all the other British provinces to the northward of it, into a pernicious paper currency, called publick bills of credit; their first paper currency was emitted 1709 of 3000 l. to be cancelled by taxes the same year, and 1711 they emitted 5000 l. to be cancelled by taxes 1712 and 1713, and afterwards many emissions for charges of government † and loans amongst themselves, but never did run such depreciating lengths, as has been done in New-England. See the article of plantation currencies in the appendix.

At present the West-Jersey money or currency is in value equal to that of the adjoining province of Pennsylvania; the East-Jersey currency is the same with the adjacent province of New-York; their respective dealings, being almost solely with the respective adjoining provinces. Pennsylvania paper currency was at first emitted at the value of proclamation money; which is 6s. currency equal in value to a heavy Spanish piece of eight; but at present a mild piece or Spanish dollar passes for 7s. 6d. currency, a heavy pistole 27s. a guinea 34s. and moidores 44s. New-York paper currency was at first emitted at 8s. per oz. silver: at present a dollar or mild piece of eight being  $7\frac{7}{8}$ ths of one oz. silver, is 8s. currency, pistoles 28s. if not under 4d. 6 grains wt. guineas 35s. moidores 45s.

Their various sectaries, not in religion, but in religious modes of worship, may be found in a general article of the section of Rhode-Island; we shall only observe that this colony was first settled by presbyterians, anabaptists, and quakers, who to this time still prevail; notwithstanding of the great charge of missionaries from the society for propagating the gospel,

† The forces raised there towards the late Cuba or Spanish West-India expedition, and afterwards of 5 companies of 100 men each, towards a feint expedition against Canada 1746, was a considerable charge to them in levying and victualling.



who by mistake seem to embarrass the christian religion in general, more than to cultivate it. Why should religious, pious, and sober christians, industrious, frugal, and orderly common-wealths men, be thus disturbed and perplexed, in their legally tolerated way, differing from the missionary established church, not in doctrine, but in some ancestral innocent modes of worship: while at the same time the heathen Indians, the principal object of their missions, as may well be imagined, neither civilized nor christianized, are wholly neglected by them?

Inhabitants of the Jerseys, men, women, and children, are reckoned at about 50,000, whereof 10,000 may be reckoned a training militia.

The valuation of the several counties, that is, their proportions in every thousand pound tax, a few years since, stood thus,

## EAST-JERSEIES.

Somerset	39 l.
Monmouth	169 10
Middlesex	115
Essex	136
Bergen	82

---

541 10

## WEST-JERSEIES.

Cape-May	31 l.
Salem	144
Gloucester	86
Burlington	123 10
Hunterdon	74

---

458 10

The two new out counties of Morris, and Trent, seem hitherto not reduced to any regulations.

## Succession of governors in the province of New-Jersey.

The affair of governors is above intermixed with the history of the various changes of the property and jurisdiction; we shall now recapitulate what relates to government and governors in a connected and concise manner.

The duke of York had a grant of the property and government of New-Netherlands from his brother Charles II. March 12, 1663-4. Duke of York by commission,  
April



April 2, 1664, appointed Richard Nichols, Esq; his lieutenant-governor or deputy of the whole New-Netherlands, but did not enter upon his government until August 27, 1664.

Upon the duke of York's assignment, June 24, 1664, of that part called the Jerseys to lord Berkley and Sir George Carteret, they appointed Philip Carteret their governor; after six months residence he went to England, and soon returned to his government; but 1672, a turbulent people, to evade paying quit-rents, alledge that they did not hold of the proprietors Berkley and Carteret, but by Indian grants; they relinquished governor Carteret, and chose a governor of their own; governor Carteret went home with complaints, and did not return till November 1674, a Dutch jurisdiction upon a reconquest intervening from July 1673, to November 1674; Berkley and Carteret had a divisional separate grant from the duke of York 1674, and Sir George Carteret sent over Philip Carteret, governor of East-Jerseys; duke of York kept the jurisdiction of West-Jersey in his own hands by deputies. Nichols and Andros were governors of New-York and West-Jersey for the duke of York.

Because of some differences between governor Andros of New-York and governor Carteret of East-Jersey, Andros usurped the government of East-Jersey 1680, and sent from New-York to Elizabeth-town some soldiers, they used governor Carteret rudely, they broke open his house, carried him from his naked bed on board of the sloop to New-York, where he was kept prisoner the greatest part of the year: governor Andros favoured the Indian grant proprietors, with a design to foment divisions and confusion, divide et impera: upon complaints sent home to the duke of York, Andros was dismissed from that government with a shew of resentment, and the duke of York gave new deeds to the proprietors of the East and West-Jerseys, with express grants of these powers, which Sir Edmond Andros pretended were wanting, the better to justify his former conduct;



conduct; by virtue of these new grants dated 1680, the proprietors were next year re-established in the New-Jerseys; Philip Carteret died governor of East-Jersey, November 1682; to prevent irregular purchases of the Indians, the assembly of East-Jersey, 1683, passed an act “forbidding the taking of any Indian deeds but in the name of the lords proprietors, upon the pain of being prosecuted as seditious persons, and as breakers of the king’s peace, and of the publick peace and safety of the province;” the same act, but something more severe, was passed in West-Jersey.

In the West-Jersey, upon the duke of York’s quitting the government to the assignees of lord Berkley, 1680, one of the assignees or proprietors was by them appointed governor, and to him, 1690, succeeded Dr. Daniel Cox, who had purchased the greatest part of the West-Jersey.

In the East-Jersey upon the duke of York’s new deed to the proprietors, Robert Barclay, a noted quaker writer, was made governor; sometimes he officiated by a deputy, 1684 Gawen Laurie was his deputy, and continued till 1685; soon after this, king James assumed the government, but upon the revolution, the proprietors were restored to their former rights, and appointed John Totham, Esq; for their governor, who was succeeded by col. Dudley; but the people scrupled to obey them, and the proprietors appointed col. Hamilton for governor.

After some time the people alledged, that as a Scotsman he could not be governor of an English colony, and a party of the proprietors appointed Mr. Basse governor; soon after, another party of the proprietors did again appoint col. Hamilton, August 14, 1699, and not long after, some of the proprietors appointed Mr. Basse again; these appointments were not confirmed by the king, Mr. Bowne superseded them; these times in the



East-Jerfies were called the revolutions, † and was governor when the proprietors of both Jerfies, because of diffensions amongst themselves in appointing governors, and from the confusions occasioned by the Indian grants men, found it advisable to resign the government, but no other of their rights, to the crown, 1702.

Thus both Jerfies were united in one jurisdiction, and had for their governor the same person who was governor of the province of New-York; see the section of New-York, vol. II. p. 249, viz. lord Cornbury, col. Hunter, \* William Burnet, Esq; col. Montgomery, and col. Cosby.

Upon Cosby's death, lieut. governor Clarke, 1736, succeeded in the command of New-York, but not in that of the Jerfies, which in course fell into the hands of the president of the council of the Jerfies; ever since, the governors of New-York and of the Jerfies have been in distinct persons.

Lewis Morris, Esq; formerly chief justice of the province of New-York, was the first distinct governor of the Jerfies; he died May 14, 1746; to him succeeded

Jonathan Belcher, Esq; formerly governor of the provinces of Massachusetts-Bay and New-Hampshire, see vol. I. p. 481, was nominated by the king for governor of the Jerfies, and arrived there soon after: he continues governor at this present writing, August 1751. His

† During the revolutions in the alternate administrations of Hamilton and Basse from 1698 to the resignation of the government to the crown, there were in the province continued confusions, mutual breaking of goals, rescuing of prisoners, beating and abusing of civil officers; sometimes the chief command was in the council; the resignation of those governments to the crown by Sir Thomas Lane knight and alderman of London, agent for West-Jersey, and of William Dockwray, the famous projector of the useful, and to the publick revenue of Great-Britain beneficial, penny post office, agent for East-Jersey.

\* Governor Hunter was allowed by the general assembly of the Jerfies, during his administration, 500l. per ann. currency, and 100l. for contingencies.



first meeting with the provincial assembly was August 22, 1746.

The legislature, and some municipal laws of New-Jersey.

Their legislature consists of three negatives; the enacting stile is, "Be it enacted by his excellency the governor, council, and general assembly."

The three negatives are, 1. The governor, stiled governor in chief, vice admiral, and cancellor of the province of New-Jersey.

2. The council nominated by the king, their complement is twelve, as it generally is in all our colonies. The governor and council are a court of error and chancery.

3. The house of representatives in this province, they are particularly called the assembly; though in propriety the governor, council, and house of representatives of the people, met in a legislative capacity, are the general assembly of a province or colony.\* This house of representatives or assembly consists of 24 members, whereof 20 are representatives of counties, the other 4 from the cities, so called, of Perth-Amboy and Burlington, viz.

IN EAST-JERSEY.

From the county of

Bergen 2

Essex 2

Middlesex 2

Somerset 2

Monmouth 2

From the city of

Perth-Amb. 2

—

12

IN WEST-JERSEY.

From the county of

Hunterdon 2

Burlington 2

Gloucester 2

Salem 2

Cape-May 2

From the city of

Burlington 2

—

12

\* I cannot account for such improprieties in our colonies; thus in Virginia, the house of representatives, is very improperly called the house of burgesses, because Virginia is represented by counties. In the province of North-Carolina adjoining to Virginia, they are guilty of the same impropriety.



The new counties of Morris county, and Trent county, hitherto do not send representatives.

All the acts of the assembly of New-Jersey must have the royal assent.

The house of representatives is no court of judicature, but have the privilege of enquiring into the male administration of the courts of justice.

The magna charta or fundamental constitution of the province of New-Jersey, consists of three subsequent sets of concessions from the proprietors, and of the perpetual instructions for all successive crown governors as agreed upon 1702 at the proprietors resignation of the government to the crown. These are reckoned of a higher nature, than the acts of their assemblies, and are termed by the assembly, the laws of concessions. The first concessions were 1664, from lord Berkley and Sir George Carteret, joint proprietors of New-Jersey by assignment from the duke of York. The second concessions 1672 were from the said proprietors jointly; the third concessions were only for the East-Jersey by Sir George Carteret 1674, upon the duke of York's granting him a divisional grant; these were only additional and explanatory of the first concessions.

The bounty lands to the first settlers called head-lands, being so many acres per head of settlers at one half penny sterl. per ann. per acre quit-rent. The quit-rents of the Jerseys began March 25, 1670; the whole arrears of quit-rents from the beginning to 1747, did not exceed 15000*l*. The bounty by the first concessions was only for heads imported in the first four years, but by subsequent concessions, it was continued to January 13, 1685. In other patents to purchasers the quit-rents were various as per agreement, v. g. in Newark there are some patents at six pence sterl. per ann. per 100 acres.

The fundamental law of concessions is, that all vacant lands are to be purchased only by the governor and council in the name of the proprietors; and all



claims to lands otherways than by warrant of survey; by the survey of a stated surveyor, and patent from the governor and council are deemed void. There have been only two remarkable times of purchase from the Indians 1664 under governor Nichols, prior to the acts of concessions; and 1672 under governor Carteret, but subsequent and contrary to the first concessions. Several tracts of land have from time to time been purchased of the Indians by the general proprietors. By act of assembly 1683, no person to contract for, or accept of deeds of lands from the Indians, but in the name of the proprietors.

In the revolution times, as they were called, in New-Jersey from 1698 to 1703, all rules of property were slighted, many riots and much disorder ensued, and by remonstrances to king William all established rules of property were endeavoured to be everted, and Indian purchases established, but in vain. Upon the resignation of the government to the crown, and by an act of assembly 1703, declaring all pretences by Indian purchases only, to be penal, (penalty 40s. per acre) criminal, and void; and by an act 1713, a penalty is imposed of 20s. for every tree cut by any person upon lands which are not his own property; order was restored to the great improvement of New-Jersey, and which was enjoyed till 1745, when Indian purchases were set up again. Several actions of ejectment being brought by the council of general proprietors against the tenants, so called, in possession of the Elizabeth rights, as holding only by a groundless right of title by Indian deeds; anno 1746 the Elizabeth men petition the general assembly, that a way may be made for their relief in the province, or that they may have liberty of application to the head and fountain of justice. Upon this ensued a suit in their provincial chancery, as before related.

Some articles in the concessions were, that the general assembly shall raise and pay the governor's salary and  
all



all charges of government ; and that the quit-rents shall be paid to the proprietors free of all charges, no quit-rents to be applied for that purpose.

To prevent interfering claims and fraudulent sales, there are only two deputy surveyors in a county, under a general surveyor of the province, and all surveys are to be recorded as approved of by the surveyor general.

Titles of land are to be tried only in the supreme court of judicature.

### Courts of judicature.

The several courts of judicature are nearly of the same constitution with the courts in the colonies already related. There is a supreme court (in New-England they are called superior courts) for the East-Jersey division held at the city of Amboy two terms yearly, the third Tuesday in March, and second Tuesday in August, each of these with only eight days continuance. The supreme court for the West-Jersey division is held at Burlington first Tuesday in November, and second Tuesday in May, under the same regulations.

There are in each county once a year, a court for tryal of causes brought to issue in the supreme court; those for West-Jersey are in the spring, those for East-Jersey are in the end of autumn.

In each county there are courts of quarter sessions, and county courts for holding pleas ; in New-England they are called inferior courts for common pleas.

Produce, manufactures, trade, and navigation of New-Jersey.

New-Jersey is a good corn country: it raises more wheat than any one of our colonies ; but their wheat and flour is mostly shipped off from New-York and Pennsylvania ; they raise some hemp and flax.



They have not wrought their copper ore mine for some time.

They manufacture some iron ore into pigs and bars.

In the province of New-Jersey there are three custom-house districts, whereof two are in West-Jersey on Delaware river; Salem (this includes Cohanzey) about 9 miles below Newcastle, and Burlington about 20 miles above Philadelphia; these, as we have already observed, are of no consideration, scarce deserving the name of preventive creeks; the third is in East-Jersey at Perth-Amboy. The 12 months accounts of entries and clearances at the port of Perth-Amboy, from June 24, 1750, to June 24, 1751, stand thus,

Entered inwards.		Cleared outwards.	
------------------	--	-------------------	--

Ships	2	Ships	2
Snows	2	Snows	3
Brigantines	7	Brigantines	8
Sloops	18	Sloops	13
Schooners	10	Schooners	10
Shallops	2	Shallops	2
—	—	—	—
41		38	

both foreign and coasting voyages included. I shall only mention some of the most considerable articles of their exports and imports in that time.

Exported.		Imported.	
-----------	--	-----------	--

Flour	6424 bar.	Rum	39,670 gal.
Bread	168,500 wt.	Molosses	31,600 gal.
Beef and pork	314 barrels	Sugar	2,089 ct. wt.
Grain	17,941 bush.	Pitch, tar, and turpent.	} 437 bar.
Hemp	14,000 wt.		
Some firkins butter, some hams, beer, flax-feed, bar-iron, some lumber.		Wines	123 pipes
		Salt	12,759 bush.

Some miscellanies on various subjects.

The copper ore of the Jerseys is very good, but the mine has not been wrought for some years, the difficulty



culty in draining requires a fire engine. The copper mines in Simsbury hills in New-England, about 90 miles N. E. from the copper mine in New-Jersey, have been neglected for some years, because they not only dip too quick, and therefore are not easily drained, but also the ore is of a hard nature not easily fluxed, it is too much intermixed with spar, the veins or loads very uncertain and unequal, and frequently only shoads or fragments.

In British North-America, hitherto no discovery has been made of tin ores, nor of lapis calaminaris, very little lead ore, and that not good.

All over North-America is much iron ore, both rock and bog ore. Three tun of bog or swamp ore gives about one tun cast iron ware, which can be afforded cheaper than that which is imported from England or Holland. The bars of bog ore have too much scoriæ or dross, and are much inferior to the bars refined from the pigs of rock ore.

In the American rivers there are many cataracts, precipices, pitches, or falls; generally from the river passing over a ledge or ridge of rocks; that of Niagara, formerly mentioned, between lake Ontario and lake Erie, is the most noted. There are some cataracts or great falls, not from a precipice of rocks, but from a very narrow pass in a tide river; that near the mouth of St. John's river on the N. W. side of the bay of Fundy in Nova-Scotia is the most noted; in this case, from the narrowness of the pass, the water not confined below falls off faster than the water confined above, the water above is not only what the tide of flood brought in, but also the river water damed up.

The higher up a tide river, the duration of flood is less, and that of ebb is more; for instance, in the great river of Canada, or river of St. Laurence, anno 1748, a flag of truce was sent for exchange of prisoners from Boston in New-England to Quebec in Canada; in this great river by order of the general governor of Canada they were stopt at Lisle des Basques, (5  
U 4 leagues



leagues below Tadoufack, and 35 leagues below Quebec) where was good anchorage † in 10 fathom water, the tide flowed 5 hours and ebbed 7 hours.

Amongst the many hardships which the first settlers of new raw colonies and plantations suffer, one of the most considerable is, their sitting down in wilderness, forest, or wood lands; where by the exhalations from the trees, there is a continual damp, which does not continually disperse, but hovers about, and may be said in some respect to stagnate and putrify, and consequently produce in these human bodies many kinds of putrid disorders, such as putrid lingering fevers, putrid dysenteries, all sorts of scorbutick complaints, and the like distemperatures. The damp or vapour from wood lands, is much more considerable than from the same lands when cleared of trees and shrubs. It is notorious in these countries, that many streams of water which in the beginning came from wood lands, and carried grist mills and saw mills; when these lands were cleared of wood, their streams vanished and became dry, the mills ceased, and in some parts the cattle could not be conveniently watered. In the philosophical transactions of the royal society in London, we find many observations and experiments made relating to this subject; for instance, two vessels containing each a certain equal quantity of water, in one of these vessels were set some living plants, after a certain space of time, the vessel containing water with plants did evaporate much more of the water, than the vessel of water only.

† The French by their representations of the difficult and dangerous navigation of this river, endeavour to intimidate all other nations from attempting the river; but now we find that it is safely practicable.





## SECTION XIV.

Concerning the PROVINCE of  
PENNSYLVANIA,  
And its TERRITORIES.

WE have already deduced these settlements from their first European discoveries, and from their transition by the name of New-Netherlands under the Dutch, to the duke of York's property by patents from the crown of England.

This province and territories are by three distinct grants. 1. The province of Pensylvania by patent from K. Charles II. dated March 4, 1680-1. 2. The duke of York, 1683, August 24, sold to William Penn the elder, his heirs and assigns, the town of Newcastle alias Delaware, and a district of 12 miles round Newcastle. 3. Duke of York by another deed of sale August 24, 1683, made over to said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, that tract of land from twelve miles south of Newcastle, to the Whore-Kills, otherwise called Cape-Henlopen, divided into the two counties of Kent and Suffex; which with Newcastle district, are commonly known by the name of the three lower counties upon Delaware river.

As the three lower counties or territories are by distinct deeds or grants from that of the royal grant of the province of Pensylvania, when it was by the proprietary left to their option to be united with the jurisdiction of the province of Pensylvania, or to continue a separate jurisdiction; they chose to be a separate jurisdiction, and not



not to be as it were annihilated by a prevailing jurisdiction : thus they continue at present two distinct legislatures, governments, or jurisdictions, under the direction of one and the same governor ; but their municipal laws and regulations are nearly the same.

K. CHARLES II<sup>d</sup>'s patent of the province of PENNSYLVANIA is dated March 4, 1680-1, of which an abstract is, "To our trusty and well beloved subject William Penn, Esq; son and heir of Sir William Penn deceased, to reduce the savage nations by gentle and just manners to the love of civil society and the christian religion (with regard to the memory and merits of his late father in divers services, particularly in the sea-fight against the Dutch 1665, under the duke of York) to transport an ample colony towards enlarging the English empire and its trade, is granted all that tract of land in America, bounded eastward on Delaware river from 12 miles northward of Newcastle to the 43 d. of northern lat. and to extend 5 d. in longitude from said river ; to be bounded northerly by the beginning of the 43 d. of N. lat. and on the south by a circle drawn at 12 miles distance from Newcastle northward and westward unto the beginning of the 40 d. of northern lat. and then by a strait line westward to the limits of longitude above-mentioned ; saving to us and our successors the allegiance and sovereignty, to be holden as of our castle of Windsor in the county of Berks, paying quit-rent two buck-skins to be delivered to us yearly in our castle of Windsor on the first of January, and the fifth of all gold and silver ore, clear of all charges. Erected into a province and seignorie, to be called Pennsylvania. Said William Penn, &c. and his lieutenants, with the assent of a majority of the freemen or their delegates assembled, to raise money for publick uses, to establish judges, justices, and other magistrates, probate of wills and granting of administrations included ; to pardon or remit all crimes and offences committed within said province,



province, treason and wilful murder excepted, which however they may reprieve until the king's pleasure is known; the judges by them constituted to hold pleas as well criminal as civil, personal, real and mixt: their laws to be consonant to reason, and not repugnant to the laws of England, reserving to us, &c. a power to hear and determine upon appeals. In all matters the laws of England to take place, where no positive law of the province appears. A duplicate of all laws made in said province shall in five years be transmitted to the privy council; and if within six months, being there received, they be deemed inconsistent with the prerogative or laws of England, they shall be void. A licence for our subjects to transport themselves and families unto the said country. A liberty to divide the country into towns, hundreds, and counties, to incorporate towns into boroughs and cities, to constitute fairs and markets. A liberty of trade with all our other dominions, paying the customary duties. A power to constitute sea ports and keys, but to admit of such officers as shall from time to time be appointed by the commissioners of our customs. The proprietors may receive such impositions upon goods as the assembly shall enact. The proprietors to appoint an agent or attorney to reside near the court in London to answer for the default of the proprietors, and where damages are ascertained by any of our courts, if these damages are not made good within the space of one year, the crown may resume the government until such damages and penalties are satisfied, but without any detriment to the particular owners or adventurers in the province. To maintain no correspondence with our enemies. A power to pursue enemies and robbers even to death. May transfer property. To erect manors, that may hold courts baron. That the crown shall make no taxation or imposition in said province without consent of the proprietary, or assembly, or by act of parliament in England. Any inhabitants, to the number of twenty, may by writing



ing apply to the bishop of London for a preacher or preachers."

An abstract of Mr. Penn's charter of liberties and privileges to the people, 25th day of the second month, vulgarly called April, 1682. "The government shall be in a provincial general assembly composed of the governor and representatives of the freemen, to make laws, raise taxes, constitute courts and officers, &c. The freemen of the province shall meet on the twentieth day of the twelfth month 1682, to elect 72 persons for a council, whereof 24 shall fall off yearly, and another 24 be elected in their room, that many persons may have experience in government; in matters of consequence two thirds to be a quorum, and the consent of two thirds of such quorum is requisite; in affairs of lesser moment 24 members shall be a quorum, and a majority of these shall determine: the governor or his deputy to preside and have a treble vote. This council is to prepare and deliberate upon bills to be passed into laws by the general assembly, to erect courts of justice with their officers, to judge criminals, to have the executive power; shall model towns, ports, markets, publick buildings, and highways; to inspect the management of the provincial treasury, to order all publick schools: this council to be divided into four distinct committees for distinct branches of business. The freemen shall yearly chuse representatives not exceeding 200, to meet 22d day of the second month (1683 for the first time) and to continue eight days, may appoint committees to confer with committees of the council concerning amendments of bills, and the ninth day shall give their affirmative or negative to the bills presented; two thirds to be a quorum in passing of laws and choice of officers; the enacting stile to be, "By the governor, with the assent and approbation of the freemen in provincial council and general assembly." The first year the general assembly may consist of all the freemen



freemen of the province, and afterwards of 200 to be chosen annually, which as the country increases may be enlarged, so as never to exceed 500, at the discretion of the legislature. The provincial council shall on the 13th day of the first month yearly, present to the governor or his deputy a double number for provincial officers; and the freemen in the county courts shall present a double number to serve for sheriffs, justices of the peace, and coroners for the year next ensuing; out of each presentment, the third day following, the governor or his deputy shall commissionate one; but Mr. Penn to appoint the first officers to continue *ad vitam aut culpam*. The general assembly may be called upon by the governor and provincial council to meet at any time. When the governor shall be under the age of 21, and no guardians appointed by the father, the provincial council shall appoint guardians not exceeding three, with the power of a governor. No article in this charter to be altered without the consent of the governor and six parts of seven of the freemen in provincial council and general assembly."

Besides these, there were some other fundamental laws agreed upon in England. Every resident who pays scot and lot to the government, shall be deemed a freeman capable of electing and of being elected. The provincial council and general assembly to be sole judges in the elections of their respective members. 24 men for a grand jury of inquest, and 12 for a petty jury, to be returned by the sheriff. All persons wrongfully imprisoned or prosecuted at law, shall have double damages against the informer or prosecutor. Seven years possession shall give an unquestionable right, excepting in cases of lunatics, infants, married women, and persons beyond the seas. A publick register established. The charter granted by William Penn to the inhabitants is confirmed. All who acknowledge one almighty GOD, shall not be molested in their religious persuasions in matters



ters of faith and worship, and shall not be compelled to maintain or frequent any religious ministry. Every first day of the week shall be a day of rest. None of those articles shall be altered without consent of the governor or his deputy, and six parts in seven of the freemen met in provincial council and general assembly. This was signed and sealed by the governor and freemen or adventurers in London 5th day of the third month called May, 1682.

There were certain conditions agreed upon by the proprietor, and the adventurers and purchasers, July 11, 1681; for instance, convenient roads and highways be laid out before the dividend of acres to the purchasers; land shall be laid out to the purchasers and adventurers by lot. Every thousand acres shall settle one family. All dealings with the Indians shall be in publick market.

All differences between the planters and native Indians shall be ended by six planters and six natives. Laws relating to immorality shall be the same as in England. In clearing of land, one acre of trees shall be left for every five acres, to preserve oak and mulberries for shipping and silk.

None to leave the province, without publication thereof in the market-place three weeks before.

By a new charter from the proprietary second day of the second month 1683, there are some alterations made in his first charter, principally as to the numbers of the provincial council and assembly; that is, the provincial council shall consist of 18 persons, whereof 3 from each of the six counties; the assembly to consist of 36, that is, six from each county; as the country increases, the provincial council may be increased to any number not exceeding 72; and the assembly may be increased to any number not exceeding 200; the other articles are much the same as in the first charter: the enacting stile to be, “By the governor, with the appro-  
bation



bation of the freemen in provincial council and assembly met;" and the general assembly shall be called, "The meeting, sessions and proceedings of the general assembly of the province of Pennsylvania, and the territories thereunto belonging." Nothing in this charter to be altered, but by consent of the governor and six 7ths of the provincial council and assembly.

This charter of 1683, as inconvenient, was surrendered to Mr. Penn in the third month of 1700 by six 7ths of the freemen of the province and territories, and a new charter granted; as this is now their standing charter, we shall be more particular. The preamble runs thus, "WHEREAS K. Charles II. granted to William Penn the property and government of the province of Pennsylvania, March 4, 1680; and the duke of York granted to said Penn the property and government of a tract of land now called the territories of Pennsylvania, August 24, 1683: and whereas the said William Penn for the encouragement of the settlers, did, anno 1683, grant and confirm to the freemen by an instrument entitled, The frame of the government, &c. which charter or frame being found, in some parts of it, not so suitable to the present circumstances of the inhabitants, was delivered up as above; and at the request of the assembly another was granted by the proprietary Mr. Penn, in pursuance of the rights and powers granted him by the crown, confirming to all the inhabitants their former liberties and privileges, so far as in him lieth. 1. No persons who believe in one almighty GOD, and live peaceably under the civil government, shall be molested in their religious persuasions, nor compelled to frequent or maintain any religious worship contrary to their mind. That all persons who profess to believe in JESUS CHRIST, are capable of serving the government in any capacity; they solemnly promising, when required, allegiance to the crown, and fidelity to the proprietor and governor. 2. That annually upon the first day of October for ever, there



there shall an assembly be chosen, to sit the fourteenth day of the same month, viz. four persons out of each county, or a greater number, as the governor and assembly may from time to time agree, with all the powers and privileges of an assembly as is usual in any of the king's plantations in America; two thirds of the whole number that ought to meet shall be a quorum; to sit upon their own adjournments. 3. The freemen at their meeting for electing representatives to chuse sheriffs and coroners; the justices in the respective counties to nominate clerks of the peace. 4. The laws of the government shall be in this stile, "By the governor, with the consent and approbation of the freemen in general assembly met." 5. No person to be licensed by the governor to keep an ordinary or tavern but such as are recommended by the justices of the county. 6. No alteration to be made in this charter without the consent of the governor and six parts of seven of the assembly met. Signed William Penn at Philadelphia in Pensylvania, October 28, 1701, and the twenty-first year of my government." Notwithstanding any thing formerly alledging, the province and territories to join together in legislation, Mr. Penn hereby declares, that if at any time hereafter within three years, their respective assemblies shall not agree to join in legislation, and shall signify the same to me; in such case the inhabitants of each of the three counties of the province shall not have less than eight representatives, and the town of Philadelphia when incorporated, shall have two representatives. The inhabitants of each county in the territories shall have as many persons to represent them in a distinct assembly for the territories, as be by them requested. Province and territories shall enjoy the same charter, liberties and privileges. This charter of privileges was thankfully received the same day by the assembly, and signed by their order; and signed by a number of the proprietary and governor's council.



The report is probable, that Mr. Penn, besides his royal grant of the province of Pennsylvania, had moreover a grant of the same from the duke of York, to obviate any pretence, that the province was comprehended in a former royal grant of New-Netherlands to the duke of York.

Mr. Penn's first charter concessions, or form of government to the settlers, seems Utopian and whimsical; constituting a legislature of three negatives, viz. the governor, and two distinct houses of representatives chosen by the freemen; one called the provincial council of 72 members, the other was called the provincial assembly of 200 members; the council had an exorbitant power of exclusive deliberating upon and preparing of all bills for the provincial assembly; the executive part of the government was entirely with them. The provincial assembly, in the bills to be enacted, had no deliberative privilege, only a yes or no; these numbers of provincial council and provincial assembly seem to be extravagantly large for an infant colony; perhaps he was of opinion with some good politicians, that there can be no general model of civil government; the humours or inclinations, and numbers of various societies must be consulted and variously settled: a small society naturally requires the deliberation and general consent of their freemen for taxation and legislature; when the society becomes too numerous for such universal meetings, a representation or deputation from several districts is a more convenient and easy administration. His last and present standing charter to the inhabitants of the province and territories of Pennsylvania, Oct. 28, 1701, runs into the other extreme; the council have no negative in the legislature, and only serve as the proprietary's council of advice to the proprietary's governor: 1746, by act of parliament the negative of the board of aldermen in London, for certain reasons was abrogated. A council chosen by the people, to negative resolves of representatives also appointed by the people, seems



seems to be a wheel within a wheel, and incongruous: but a council appointed by the court of Great-Britain as a negative, seems to be good policy, by way of controul upon the excesses of the governor on the one hand, and of the people by their representatives on the other hand.

The province of Pensylvania some years since was mortgaged to Mr. Gee, and others, for 6600 l. sterl. In the year 1713, Mr. Penn by agreement made over all his rights in Pensylvania to the crown, in consideration of 12,000 l. sterl. but before the instrument of surrender was executed, he died apoplectick, and Pensylvania still remains with the family of Penns.

Upon the first settlement of Pensylvania, Mr. Penn stipulated with the aboriginal natives the Indians, that that they should sell no lands to any person but to himself or his agents; this was confirmed by subsequent province laws: on the other side, Mr. Penn's agents were not to occupy or make grants of any lands, but what were fairly purchased of the Indians; for instance, a few years ago, the delegates of the Six nations of Iroquois, for a certain consideration in goods, released their claims to all lands both sides of the river Sesquahanna, so far south as the province of Pensylvania reaches, and so far north as the Blue or Kittatinny mountains, and received pay in part. Beginning of July, 1742, the Six nations had a congress with governor Thomas and eight of his council at Philadelphia, to receive the other moiety as per agreement; we shall take this opportunity of presenting this as a specimen of an assortment of goods in demand with the Indians.

24 guns	60 ruffle shirts	8 doz. gimblets
600 lb. powder	25 hats	2 doz. tob. tongs
600 lb. lead	1000 flints	25 pair shoes
25 pieces strouds	50 hoes	25 pair stockings
90 pieces duffils	50 hatchets	25 pair buckles
30 blankets	5 lb. vermilion	
62 yar. ha. thick	10 doz. knives	



The story of William Penn's obtaining the grant of Pennsylvania is in this manner. Admiral Penn and general Venable were sent 1655 by Oliver Cromwell with a considerable sea and land force to reduce Hispaniola in the Spanish West-Indies, which they did not effect, but reduced the Spanish island now called Jamaica, which remains in possession of the crown of Great-Britain to this day. Admiral Penn upon the restoration became a royalist, was knighted, and commanded the English fleet under the duke of York against the Dutch, commanded by admiral Opdam 1665. Admiral Penn's son, William Penn, perhaps in some whim, put himself at the head of the quakers, and upon his petition to the king, in consideration of his father's services, and arrears due from the crown, he obtained a royal patent for the province of Pennsylvania, and a grant from the duke of York, of the three lower counties on the west side of Delaware bay and river, being part of New-Netherlands by royal grant to duke of York, his heirs and assigns. This William Penn was much in favour with king James II, as being head of a considerable body of sectaries called quakers; by reason of this particular countenance, Mr. Penn was suspected to be a papist, and a jesuit in the disguise of a quaker. At the revolution, upon suspicion, king William deprived Mr. Penn of the privilege of appointing a governor for Pennsylvania, and col. Fletcher was appointed by the crown, but upon Mr. Penn's vindication of himself, he was restored to his right of government, and continued to appoint lieutenant governors or deputies as formerly.

The boundaries of the province and territories of Pennsylvania, rivers, and distances of some noted places.

The northern boundary of the province is the 42 d. parallel of latitude, from Delaware river (about twenty miles above the station point on Delaware river, where the north easterly divisional line between the provinces of



New-York and New-Jersey begins) west, to the extent of 5 d. in longitude, being about 250 English statute miles ; thence in a line parallel with the river of Delaware at 5 d. longitude W. from the said river, to a parallel of latitude 15 miles south of the most southern part of Philadelphia, being about 153 miles strait course ; along this parallel 15 miles south of Philadelphia to the river Delaware——miles : thence up along Delaware river to 42 d. N. lat. which in a strait line may be about 153 miles.

The territories of Pensylvania called the three lower counties upon Delaware river are bounded eastwardly by Delaware river, from the north part of Newcastle territorial circle, to cape Henlopen at the entrance of Delaware-Bay, about 80 miles strait, but much more as the shore or country road runs : southwardly and westwardly they are bounded as per agreement between lord Baltimore of Maryland, and the Penns of Pensylvania, 1732, and confirmed in the chancery of England, 1750, in these words, “ That a due east and west line be run from cape Henlopen to the middle of the peninsula, and the said strait line to run from the westward point thereof, northwards up the said peninsula (and above the said peninsula, if it required) till it touched, or made a tangent, to the western part of the periphery of the said twelve miles circle, and the said due south and north line to run from such tangent, till it meets with the upper or more northern east and west line, and the said upper east and west line to begin from the northern point or end of the said south and north line, and to run due westward, (N. B. † this is a delineation of the south line of the province of Pensylvania) at present crosses Sesquahanna river, and twenty-five

† In the survey 1739, of the E. and W. divisional line (about 15 miles south of the southernmost part of the city of Philadelphia) between Pensylvania and Maryland, the surveyors allowed a variation of 5 d. 30 m. W. and found there was about one degree variation for every twenty late years.



English statute miles at least on the western side of said river, and to be 15 English statute miles south of the latitude of the most southern part of the said city of Philadelphia, were, and shall, and should at all times for ever hereafter be allowed and esteemed to be the true and exact limits and bounds, between the said province of Maryland, and the said three lower counties of Newcastle, Kent, and Suffex, and between the said provinces of Maryland and Pensylvania."†

As the controversy of a long standing, concerning boundaries, between lord Baltimore of Maryland, and the Penns of Pensylvania, has made much noise; we shall insert a short abstract of the same, for the amusement of the curious.

Lord Baltimore's royal grant of Maryland was about 50 years prior to Mr. Penn's grant of Pensylvania, but in Baltimore's grant there was an exception of lands then belonging to the Dutch, which are at present the three lower counties upon Delaware river; when Mr. Penn took possession he found one Dutch and three Swedes congregations.

The grand dispute was concerning the construction of the expression 40 d. of latitude; Maryland grant 1632, says, to the 40 d. of lat. which Maryland side of the question construe to be to 40 d. compleat; Pensyl-

† They mutually quit claim, viz. Charles lord Baltimore quits claims to John Penn, Thomas Penn, and Richard Penn, and their heir and assigns, all his pretensions to the province of Pensylvania, and the three lower counties of Newcastle, Kent and Suffex, to be so bounded as aforesaid free of all incumbrances by Cecilius baron of Baltimore, great grand-father, Charles grand-father, Benedict father to said Charles, and by him the said Charles, his heirs and assigns. And on the other side, John Penn, Thomas Penn, and Richard Penn, for themselves and their heirs, quit claim unto Charles lord Baltimore and his heirs, all their pretensions to the province of Maryland, to be so bounded as aforesaid, free of all incumbrances, by William Penn the grandfather, William Pen the father, Springet Penn, William Penn the son, John Penn, Thomas Penn and Richard Penn, their heirs or assigns.



vania grant 1682, says, to begin at the beginning of the 40th d. which the Pennsylvania side construe to be just after 39 d. is compleated; \* thus there was a dispute of the extent of one degree in latitude, or 69 English miles.

Considering Maryland grant was prior, and that the Maryland people had made considerable improvements by possessions, within that degree of latitude; the affair was compromised seemingly in favour of Maryland by a written agreement May 10, 1732, as is above related: and that in two calendar months from that date, each party shall appoint commissioners not more than seven, whereof three or more of each side may act or mark out the boundaries aforesaid, to begin at furthest some time in October 1732, and to be compleated on or before 25th December 1733, and when so done, a plan thereof shall be signed, sealed and delivered by the commissioners and their principals, and shall be entered in all the publick offices in the several provinces and counties; and to recommend to the respective legislatures to pass an act for perambulating these boundaries at least once in three years.

The party defaulting, to pay to the other party on demand six thousand pounds sterling; accordingly the commissioners respectively appeared, but upon some differences in opinion, the boundaries were not made in the time limited; the failure was in lord Baltimore's side, who alledged that he had been deceived in fixing cape Henlopen 20 miles south westerly of the western cape of Delaware-Bay, whereas cape Henlopen is the western cape itself; the Penns affirm, that the western cape is cape Cornelius, and cape Henlopen is about four hours southwardly of it, according to the Dutch maps and descriptions published about the time when lord Baltimore obtained his grant.

\* Thus in other affairs; for instance, in political computation, after 1700, it is called the eighteenth century.

Because



Because of nonperformance, the Penns 1735 exhibited a bill in the chancery of Great-Britain against lord Baltimore, praying that the said articles may be decreed to subsist and be carried into execution, and that any doubts arisen may be cleared by said decree.

After tedious delays, at length May 15, 1750, lord chancellor decreed costs of suit against Baltimore, and that the articles of May 10, 1732, be carried into execution; and that before the end of three calendar months from May 15, they should execute two several proper instruments for appointing commissioners, not more than seven of a side; any three or more of a side may run and mark the boundaries, to begin some time in November next, and to be compleated on or before the last day of April 1752, to be signed, &c. recorded, &c. and enacted, &c. as per agreement of 1732 above related. Lord chancellor decreed concerning the late disputes, 1. That the center of the circle be fixed in the middle of the town of Newcastle. 2. That the said circle ought to be of a radius of twelve English miles. 3. That cape Henlopen ought to be deemed at the place laid down in the maps annexed to the articles of 1732.

The commissioners appointed by each party met at Newcastle, Nov. 15, 1750; they agreed on a center in Newcastle, from whence the twelve miles radii are to proceed; but a dispute arose concerning the mensuration of these twelve miles. Lord Baltimore's commissioners alledged, that these miles ought to be measured superficially; the Penns commissioners alledged, that considering the various inequalities of the ground, such radii could not extend equally, consequently from them no true arch of a circle could be formed, and insisted upon geometrical and astronomical mensurations. Thus the proceedings of the commissioners stopt, and they wrote to their respective principals for further instructions relating to that point, and adjourned to April 25, 1751.

The considerable rivers in Pennsylvania are Delaware



(Schyl-Kill river falls into Delaware at Philadelphia) and the Sefquahanna. Delaware-Bay begins at Lewis's near cape Henlopen; || from thence with the various turnings of the bay and river or publick road to Newcastle are about 93 miles; from Newcastle to Philadelphia are 35 miles; from Philadelphia to Trent-town falls are 35 miles, these are the first falls in this river, and the tide reaches up so high; these falls are practicable, and the river navigable with boats that carry 9 or 10 tuns of iron 40 miles higher to Durham iron works; this river proceeds from the west side of the Cat-kill mountains of the province of New-York. From Trent-town falls, this river is practicable upwards of 150 miles for Indian canoe navigation, several small falls or carrying places intervening. Mr. W — d, a late noted vagrant enthusiastick preacher, purchased a considerable quantity of lands in the fork of Delaware river, about 50 miles above Trent-town falls, for the education and civilizing of negroes, as he pretended; but as he could not answer the purchase money, he was obliged to relinquish it. All his schemes were ill projected and ill founded: his grand church or meeting-house in Philadelphia, by him declared to be free to all christian itinerants, as he was a man of no penetration, he was not capable of finishing it, and it was transferred to a society for propagating of literature, a much more laudable institution than that of propagating enthusiasm, idleness and sanctified amours. His orphan house in Georgia in South-Carolina, in a barren infalubrious country, his first project, pretence for itinerant begging, is almost come to nothing.

The other considerable river is part of Sefquahanna; see vol. II. p. 282. Its main branch comes from some ponds a little south of Mohawks river in the province of New-York; from the head of this branch to the

|| At cape Henlopen 1748, the variation of the compass was 4 d. W. decreasing.

falls



falls below Wioming \* there is no obstruction, and good Indian canoe navigation; and thence to Paxton are 5 or 6 falls which may be shot pretty safely with a fresh: this river has many good branches for Indian skin trade, some of these branches communicate with the countries beyond the mountains. Seshquahanna river is wide but shallow. Delaware, Seshquahanna and Potomack are fordable by the Indian traders in the summer season.

The Indian traders set out beginning of May, and continue 3 or 4 months out; they buy the skins not of the Indians, but of settlers who deal with the Indians, called by the Dutch name of handelaars or traders; they purchase only with gold and silver, and carry their skins in waggon to Philadelphia; the road is about 20 miles below the foot of the blue mountains. They travel from Philadelphia to Lancaster 60 miles (Lancaster is 10 miles east of Seshquahanna river) thence 40 miles to Paxton or Harris's ferry, thence 40 miles to Shippensburg in the province of Pennsylvania, thence 45 miles to Potomack river (the width of Maryland is here about 20 miles) which divides Maryland from Virginia. A few miles west of Potomack river in Virginia for some years have been used with good effect, by bathing and drinking, some tepid medicinal waters, they have no mineral taste, and do not offuscate the glass like Bristol hot well water.

In Pennsylvania there is no real sea line excepting the west side of Delaware bay. The navigation of Philadelphia is almost every winter stopt up by ice for two or three months. The coast of New-York, Jersey, and Pennsylvania is free from ship-worms or teredines. Land winds blow almost three quarters of the year.

The Blue or Kittatinny mountains begin in Pennsylvania, are about 900 miles in length and 70 to 100 miles

\* About 50 miles below Wioming is the Indian tribe of Shamokin in the fork of Seshquahanna, and about 50 miles below Shamokin is Paxton or Harris's ferry.



across, not in scattered peaks, but in uniform ridges; the further ridges are much the largest and highest.

### Concerning Indian affairs.

I shall here mention some additional observations concerning the Indians in general, and some of their late treaties with the British governments, particularly that of Lancaster and Pensylvania, anno 1744, as consisting of the greatest variety of articles negotiated with three distinct British provinces or colonies.

When tribes or nations of Indians go to war against one another, they seldom make it up (the Indians are the most implacable of mankind) but by the destruction of the one or the other side, or by a slavish submission. The Iroquois or Six nations of Mohawks, as we call them, have for many years been at war (these wars are only clandestine incursions with massacres and depredations) with the Catawbias and Cherakees; the Cherakees and Six nations as being too distant to annoy one another much, have come to some accomodation, but the state of war with the Catawbias continues.

The Pensylvanians never lost one man by any French or Indian war, but in personal broils and encounters persons have lost their lives on both sides.

The Mohawks by the English give name to all the Six nations, though the smallest of the tribes. The Tuscaroras are an adventitious tribe, being emigrants or profugi in the North-Carolina wars 1712 and 1716, they were allowed to settle by the ancient five confederate nations amongst them.

For some time past, a kind of party division hath subsisted among the Six nations: the Mohawks, Onondagues and Senecas formed one party; the Oneides, Tuscaroras and Cayugas the other party.

The Six nations say that the Delaware and Seshquahanna Indians were conquered by them, and therefore have no right to dispose of lands.

The Indian delegates at the congress of Lancaster

well



well observed to the commissioners from Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania; that what the Indians received of them were goods soon perishable, but what they received of the Indians were lands which endured for ever.

The Indians are supplied by the English with provisions coming and going in all treaties. \* They have their guns, hatchets, and kettles mended gratis.

In all congresses the Indians approve of each article by a Yo hah, the English use a huzza.

The Indians use peculiar appellations for the governors of the several provinces or colonies; for instance, the governors of Virginia are called assarogoa; those of Pennsylvania, onas; those of Canada, onando; and lately they have fixed the name of tocarry hogan (signifying excellent) for the governors of Maryland.

We may here observe the great variety in the humours of distant nations; we shall here instance that of their speech or words: in the East-Indies and China, their words are generally monosyllables; in the West-Indies their words are generally polysyllables of an uncouth length; thus the Six nations at the Lancaster congress say, all the world knows, that they had conquered (consequently their lands at our disposal) several nations on the back or west side of the great mountains of Virginia, viz. the Conoy-uch-fuch-roona, Coch-now-was-roonon, Tohoa-irough-roonon, and Conutskin-ough-roonaw.

The Six nations by natural inclination are disposed to warlike enterprizes, and are never at peace with all their neighbours. In a speech at a congress with the English,

\* In the appendix to a late history of the Five Indian nations, we have a pleasant or ludicrous story of this nature; in the Lancaster congress with the Indians, 1744, the commissioners of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, having told the Indian delegates of the Six nations, that the king of Great-Britain had lately beat the French both by sea and land; the Indian delegates observed, that in consequence, the English must have taken a great deal of rum from the French, therefore you can the better spare some of that liquor, to make us rejoice with you in these victories.

they



they said, that if christians go to war against one another, they in time make peace together; but it is not so with the Indians.

The Indians when they pass by a friendly fort march in a single line, and salute the fort by a running fire.

Nanandagues is a second settlement of deserters from the Six nations; they live near Montreal.

The British northern colonies are the frontiers and defence of all other British colonies, against the warlike robust northern Indians; thus it has in all times been in Europe and Asia, the hardy robust Goths, (Getæ of Asia) Vandals, &c. from the northern climates, over-run the effeminate, indolent, relaxed southerly people if not check'd; the Indians of the higher latitudes in North-America, and in Chili in South-America, make a much better stand against the European intrusions, than the Indians of Mexico and Peru, who live between or near the tropicks.

It is conjectured that six hundred fighting men may be afforded by the Indian settlements on Sefquahanna river and its branches.

In all our northern colonies, there are or have been reserved lands for several bodies or villages of intermixed Indians,

Although the northern Indian tribes as to numbers are contemptible, when compared with the European nations, they ought to be kept in a political awe to prevent their skulking incursions and depredations upon our frontiers when pushed on by a rival European power; this cannot be done by ridiculous feints; for instance, when we tell the Indians in some congress, as it happened 1746, that all the united force of our colonies with ships of war and soldiers from Great-Britain, are to muster to reduce Canada; but soon after nothing is done, or so much as attempted: thus we lose our credit with the Indians, and in fact they have impune insulted us ever since, in Nova-Scotia and New-England, at the instigation of the Canada French.

The Indians are a false but crafty people. In our  
late



late war with the French nation and their American colonies, several distant tribes of Indians in expectation of presents, said they would, though really did not design to relinquish the French interest; such were the Shawnees town upon Ohio river, the Massafegues near Les Etroits between lake Erie and lake Huron, consisting of five castles or villages of about 800 men, and the Twightwees on the Oubeck river in a treaty at Lancaster, July 1748.

The most noted congress with the Indian delegates for many years, was that in June 1744, held at Lancaster in Pennsylvania, consisting of commissioners from the three provinces of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, concerning a great variety of articles, such as quit-claiming of large tracts of lands to these governments respectively, and receiving of presents upon their promise to assist the British interest in the war lately commenced against the French.

1. They confirmed to the proprietors of Pennsylvania all the lands each side of Sesquahanna river so far north as the Blue mountains. They settled the affair of some Delaware Indians killing and robbing of Mr. Armstrong, a trader, and his two servants.

2. The Indians complain, that the Maryland and Virginia people had settled some land back of Virginia and Maryland, without consent of the Six nations, or of any purchase made from them, which lands belong to the Six nations by their conquest over the ancient Indian possessors. Hereupon the Indians by an instrument in writing released all their lands in Maryland † to the Maryland commissioners for 300 l. in goods valued in Pennsylvania currency; we shall here give this

† About 100 years since, the Sequahanna or Conastagoe Indians, by treaty granted all the land now possessed by the people of Maryland to them and their heirs from Patuxen river on the west side of Chesapeake-Bay, and from Choptank river on the east side of said bay.



as an instance of the advance generally put by the English upon the English prime costs of goods.

Strouds	from 5 to 7 l.	Vermilion	9 s.
Shirts	6 s.	Flints per m.	18 s.
Half thickets	3 l. 13 s. 4 d.	Jews-Harps per doz.	3 s. 10 d.
Duffil blankets	7 l.	Boxes per doz.	1 s.
Guns	1 l. 6 s.	Bar lead per ct. wt.	40 s.
Barrel gunpowder	26 l.	Shot	40 s.

3. The commissioners of Virginia gave the Indians 200 l. Pennsylvania currency in goods, and 200 l. in gold, as a consideration for their deed, recognizing the king of Great-Britain's right to all the lands that are or shall be by his majesty's appointment in the colony of Virginia; and the Indians desire that they may have a further consideration when the settlements increased much further back, which the commissioners agreed to. The Six Indian nations complain, the treaty above 20 years since made at Albany was not observed, viz. the middle or ridge of the hill on the back of Virginia was fixed as a boundary between the Indians who live upon reserved lands in Virginia, and the Indians of the Six nations. Another article was to settle an Indian road to pass southward on the back of Virginia. Another article was to bury in oblivion, a skirmish which happened in the back parts of Virginia, between some of the Virginia militia there, and a party of the Indian warriors of the Six nations; upon this account the commissioners of Virginia presented the Indians with goods to the value of 100 l. sterl.

4. As the French about this time were declaring war against Great-Britain; to retain the Six nations in the British interest; after a proper speech to the Indians, Pennsylvania made them a present in goods value 300 l. Pennsylvania currency: Virginia gave them goods to the value of 100 l. sterl. and 100 l. in gold, with a desire that they would send some of their children to be educated in Virginia, who might serve as interpreters in times to come; the Indians answered, that they were

not



not inclined to bring their children up to learning; the commissioners of Maryland presented the Indians with 100 l. in gold.

There are frequent congresses of the British provinces with their neighbouring tribes or nations of Indians, especially of the provinces of New-York and Pennsylvania with the Six nations of Iroquois or Mohawks, to retain the Indians in the British interest; these have a good effect, though generally they are only a piece of formality with this conclusion, that the Indians were pleased with their presents and promised fidelity; sometimes affairs of consequence are transacted; thus at Albany in August and September 1746, there was a treaty between governor Clinton and council of the province of New-York, with commissioners from the province of Massachusetts-Bay, on the one part, and the Six united nations of Indians depending upon the province of New-York on the other part; to engage these Indians in the British interest, against our enemies the French, to be assisting in the expedition against Canada, to be furnished with arms, ammunition, cloathing, and provisions, and in their absence their wives and children to be taken care of. 1749, middle of August, there arrived in Philadelphia the deputies of many different nations, in order to transact some affairs with the government. The deputies were of the Mowhawks, Oneides, Onondagues, Cayugas, Tuscaroras, Senecas, Shawanees, Nanticokes, Delawares, Mohagins, and Turlos; the whole number of Indians arrived in Philadelphia, women and children included, were about 260.

Concerning the city and port of Philadelphia, the numbers of the Inhabitants in the province and territories of Pennsylvania.

Mr. Penn's charter erecting Philadelphia (laying between Delaware and Schuyl-kill rivers,) into a corporation



ration and city, is signed in Philadelphia, by William Penn, October 25, 1701, the thirteenth year of the reign of king William the third, and the one and twentieth year of my government, to consist of a mayor, recorder, sheriff, and town clerk, 8 aldermen and 12 common council men, by the name of the mayor and commonalty of the city of Philadelphia; the first set to be appointed by Mr. Penn; and yearly thereafter on the first day of the third week in the eighth month, the corporation to meet, the mayor or recorder present with five or more of the aldermen, and nine or more of the common council, to chuse one of the aldermen to be mayor for that ensuing year, and to fill up vacancies of aldermen and common council; all officers to take the declarations and professions directed in the provincial charter. The mayor, recorder and aldermen, to be justices of the peace and of oyer and terminer; any four or more of them (whereof the mayor and recorder to be two) to hear all cases capital or otherwise criminal, and with the sheriff and town clerk to hold a court of record quarterly for determining of pleas and other matters. The mayor and recorder shall be of the quorum of the justices of the county courts, quarter sessions, oyer and terminer and goal delivery in the said county of Philadelphia; and shall have power to take cognizance of debts there according to the statute of merchants, and of action burnel. The mayor to appoint the clerk of the market. The sheriff to be the water bailiff of the province. The corporation have power to remove any officer of their own for misbehaviour. No meeting shall be deemed a common council unless the mayor, recorder, at least three of the aldermen, and nine of the common council, be present; a power to admit freemen into the corporation, to make by-laws for the government of the city, to impose fines for the use of the corporation; none to be admitted freemen, but such as have been resident in the city for two years, and shall have an estate of inheritance



tance or freehold therein worth fifty pounds in money. To have two market days every week, the fourth and seventh day, two yearly fairs (each to continue three days) May 16, and November 16. Philadelphia shall be a port comprehending all creeks and landings of the province.

The situation of Philadelphia is bad, being at the confluence of two large fresh water rivers, Delaware and Schuyl-kill, which renders their people obnoxious to pleuritick, peripneumonick, dysenterick, and intermitting fevers; communibus annis, in proportion, they bury near double the number of people that are buried in Boston of New-England. It is well plan'd or laid out, in a plain, consisting of 8 long streets of two miles, and 16 cross streets of one mile each, at right angles, with proper spaces for publick buildings. As we observed before, the long streets were laid out with much exactness 1682. N. 18 d. E; and anno 1742, in some law controversies, Mr. Parsons surveyor general of Pennsylvania, found them to be 15 d. E which is a difference of 3 d. in sixty years, decreasing.

Philadelphia is nearly in 40 d. north lat. and about 5 hours or 75 d. west from London. In the spring 1749, the dwelling houses in Philadelphia, in curiosity were numbered by 12 persons, who each undertook a part; publick buildings, ware-houses, and out-houses not included; in the several wards, they were as follows, in all 2076.

South suburbs	150	High-street ward	147
Dutch ward	245	North ward	196
Walnut ward	104	Mulberry ward	488
South ward	117	Upper Delaware ward	109
Chestnut ward	110	Lower Delaware ward	110
Middle ward	238	North suburbs	62

There were eleven places of publick religious worship, viz. 1 church of England, 2 presbyterians, 2 quakers, 1 baptist, 1 Swedish manner, 1 Dutch lutheran, 1 Dutch calvinist, 1 moravian, 1 Roman catholick.



I shall here interperse some account of a laudable academy in Philadelphia, \* with a publick-spirited design of encouraging literature; that is, political and natural knowledge; some good deserving gentlemen, by voluntary subscriptions, promise to pay annually for five years, in proportion to each subscription; which sum in gross may amount to 5000 l. Pennsylvania currency. The subscribers elect out of their numbers 15 trustees to manage the stock, appoint masters with their salaries, make visitations, &c. At present they have three masters and one usher; the first master is called rector, with an usher under him, he teaches latin in all its gradations, even from the rudiments if required, with a salary of 200 l. Pennsylvania currency per ann. besides the perquisites from his scholars, which is 20 s. entrance, and 4 l. per ann. for each boy's schooling: his usher has 60 l. per ann. with some perquisites of schooling fees. There is an English school-master at an allowance of 150 l. per ann. besides perquisites from his scholars at the same rate with the latin school. A mathematical and writing master in the same person, allowed 100 l. per ann. with perquisites from scholars as the other masters have. The boys at this time (May 1751) are 60 to 70, increasing considerably. The English master teaches in some manner grammatically to construe sentences, to point out the verb with its proper antecedents and relations. They have purchased at a cheap rate, a fine commodious building, it is that meeting-house upwards of 100 feet long and 70 feet wide, built in the enthusiastick times of Whitefield. The trustees at the beginning were chiefly presbyterians of the new-light kind, but in a few years one half of them became moravians, and a dispute arose amongst them, which party should establish a minister, but as the presbyterians had it originally, they kept it

\* As this is a kind of common-place, the reader may excuse my deviating from the strict formal stiff rules of some pedantick historians,



it to the last: this division subsisting, and the workmen not above half pay'd, both sides agreed to dispose of it for the use above-mentioned, and the workmen were pay'd off. The subscribers and their trustees hope before the expiration of the five years, to fall on ways and means to render it perpetual; they have applied to the chief proprietor Thomas Penn, Esq; to render it perpetual, begging his assistance and countenance; but it seems Mr. Thomas Penn had in view the establishment of such a seminary, entirely on his own foundation, but not in the city; therefore it's doubted whether he may ingraft his scheme with this, or pursue his first intentions. There is little or no hopes of receiving any encouragement from the publick legislature, the majority of the assembly being quakers, who have a large publick stock of their own for such a purpose, and have finished a good commodious house of their own for a school; the preceptor is a quaker, with 100l. sterl. per ann. besides fees for teaching, he is to teach twelve of the poorer sort gratis. †

That the reader may make some estimate of the proportions of the various sectaries in Philadelphia, I shall here observe that in the last six months of 1750, there were buried in Philadelphia;

Swedes	13	Dutch lutherans	28
Presbyterians	26	Dutch calvinists	39
Baptists	9	Roman catholicks	15
Quakers	104		

Burials for the 12 months of 1750, Christ church parish, church of England 129. Negroes 84.

† As I formerly mentioned, vol. II. p. 283, in New-Jersey there is a college lately erected by governor Belcher, with ample charter privileges, but without any support from the publick, they depend entirely on donations and benefactions, excepting that by means of lottery they raised 1000l. to 1200, to make a beginning; a fixed place has been much controverted. They have a divinity professor, a professor of natural philosophy, and a master of a grammar school, all poorly provided for.



Anno 1751, in Philadelphia were estimated about 11,000 whites, 600 blacks. In the province of Pennsylvania and its territories, no regular estimate can be made of the inhabitants, because there is no poll tax, nor any militia list allowed for alarums, or common trainings, as in the other colonies, to form estimates by.

There is only one custom-house collection in the proper province of Pennsylvania, called the port of Philadelphia; to form some notion of the extent of its trade and navigation, I have inserted the following table by way of a specimen of what may be composed for each custom-house port in British North-America, from the custom-house quarterly accounts sent home.

Delaware river or the port of Philadelphia is generally frozen up, and has no navigation in the months of January and February.

The following is an account of entries and clearances of vessels at Philadelphia, from March 2, 1748-9, to December 25, 1749.

Entered inwards, from		Cleared out, for	
Antigua	12	Antigua	14
Anguilla	5	Augustine	3
Augustine	4	Amboy	2
Amboy	3	Anguilla	3
Barbadoes	29	Barbadoes	22
Boston	39	Boston	41
Bristol	1	Bermuda	7
Bermuda	11	Cadiz	2
Cadiz	5	Cape-Breton	1
Cagliari	2	Coracoa	6
Coracoa	2	Chebueta	3
Cowes	21	Fiall	2
Deal	1	Ireland	19
Glasgow	1	Jamaica	22
Hispaniola	5	Lisbon	2
Havanna	4	London	5
Ireland	17	Lewis-town	1
		Madeira	



[illegible]

As in the province of Pensylvania, there is no poll tax, neither any militia incorporated and regulated ; we can give no estimate of their numbers of whites and slaves, by proportional calculations.



There never was any militia within this colony on a legal establishment; what not long ago appeared and made such a show by their numbers, were only volunteers commissioned by the governor. The quakers have always been about three quarters of the assembly, though in number perhaps not exceeding one quarter of the people; the quakers artfully persuade the Dutch and Germans, that if they chuse others than quakers for their representatives, they would immediately have a militia law imposed on them, which would subject them to greater slavery, than what they suffered in their own country.

This colony by importation of foreigners and other strangers in very great numbers, grows prodigiously; by their laborious and penurious manner of living, in consequence they grow rich where others starve, and by their superior industry and frugality may in time out the British people from the colony. The greatest year of importation of Germans, Irish, a few Welch and Scots, was from December 25, 1728, to December 25, 1729, being about 6200 persons. In the year 1750, Germans imported into this province and territories, were 4317; British and Irish passengers and servants above 1000.

We omitted to observe, that some Palatines who came over to New-York by queen Anne's bounty, 1707, in the province of New-York, they were not allowed a sufficient encouragement of quantities of land; and by encouragement of Sir William Keith governor of Pennsylvania, they removed to Pennsylvania.

The numbers of foreigners, principally Germans, imported into this province or colony, in the course of about 25 years last past, has been so excessive; that if it is not limited by a provincial act, or by the dernier resource, an act of the British parliament, the province and territories of Pennsylvania may soon degenerate into a foreign colony, endangering the quiet of our adjacent colonies.



## The legislature.

In the colony are only two negatives in the legislature. the governor and house of representatives, called the assembly. The council so called, is only the proprietor's council to the proprietor's governor, but not a king's council; they have no concern in the legislature other-ways than by advising the governor in his negative. The acts of legislature run thus; "Be it enacted by the "honourable ——— Esq; lieutenant governor of the pro-  
"vince of Pensylvania, and of the counties of New-  
"castle, Kent and Suffex on Delaware river; by and  
"with the consent of the representatives of the freemen  
"of said province, in general assembly met."

The governor of Pensylvania is only the proprietary Penn's deputy, and is stiled lieutenant governor and his honour; his salary in late years has been per annum 1000l. currency out of the excise duty for the province of Pensylvania, and 200l. per ann. from the territories called the three lower counties. By act of parliament, all lieutenant governors or deputies nominated by lords proprietors, or principal hereditary governors of British colonies in North-America, must have the royal approbation.

The proper province of Pensylvania was at first divided into the three counties of Philadelphia, Bucks and Chester, each sending eight representatives to the assembly; about 20 years since was added the county of Lancaster, sending four representatives; and lately an addition is made of two new counties back inland, by the names of York and Cumberland, they are allowed only two members each; with two representatives from the city of Philadelphia, make thirty-four representatives, which compose the house of assembly. The qualification for an elector or elected, is, a freeman resident in the country for two years, and worth in real or personal estate, or both jointly, the value of fifty pounds their currency, which if required, is to be declared upon oath or affirmation.



The three lower counties on Delaware river called the territories, are a distinct jurisdiction, and their assembly of representatives consists of six members from Newcastle county, six from Kent, and six from Suffex counties, in all eighteen members.

Their general assemblies are annually elective on the first day of the month of October. The representatives are not by towns or parish elections (Philadelphia excepted) as in New-England colonies, but by county elections. Pensylvania proper, called the province, for many years, consisted of only three counties called the upper counties, viz. Buckingham county, chief town Bristol, nearly over-against Burlington of the Jerseys; Philadelphia county, chief town Philadelphia, in about 40 d. N. lat. and Chester county, chief town Chester, about 15 miles (on the river) below Philadelphia; and a few years since was made the inland county of Lancaster, chief town Lancaster, laying both sides of Sesquahanna river; and very lately two more inland counties, York and Cumberland. The territories are called the three lower counties on Delaware river, viz. Newcastle county, chief town Newcastle, about 35 miles below Philadelphia; Kent county, chief town Dover; and Lewis county, chief town Lewis or Hore-kill, near cape Henlopen of Delaware bay.

#### Courts of judicature.

Juries are all returned by the sheriff, excepting in particular cases, but not often, there may be a struck jury by consent of parties, and that must be in the presence of one of the judges, the sheriff, and the parties.

The sheriffs and coroners are annually elected at the same time with the representatives, by a county election; the people elect two for each office, out of which the governor chuses one, who in the same manner may be re-elected for three years running, but after three years, cannot be re-elected, but by the intervention of three years out of office, and then is capable of a new election.

Justices



Justices of the peace, are all of the governor's appointing, and sit in quarter sessions, conformable to the laws and institutions of England.

The judges of the common pleas are the justices of the peace in each respective county; when the quarter sessions are finished, they continue to sit in quality of the judges of common pleas by commission from the governor. Their present times of sitting are,

For the county of Philadelphia, at Philadelphia, the first Monday in March, June, September, and December.

For the city of Philadelphia, the mayor's courts are the first Tuesday in January, April, July, and last Tuesday in October.

For the county of Buckingham, or Bucks, at Newtown (11 miles west from Bristol) on the eleventh day following the courts of Philadelphia county.

For the county of Chester, at Chester, the last Tuesday in May, August, November, and February.

For the county of Lancaster, at Lancaster, first Tuesday in February, May, August, and November.

For the county of Suffex, at Lewis, the first Tuesday in February, May, August, and November.

For the county of Kent, at Dover, the second Tuesday of the last said months.

For the county of Newcastle, at Newcastle, the third Tuesday of said months.

The supreme court consists of a chief justice and two assistant judges commissioned by the governor: they have all the authority of the King's Bench, Common-Pleas, and court of Exchequer in England, in the words of the provincial law; they not only receive appeals, but all causes once commenced in the inferior courts, after the first writ, may be moved thither by a habeas corpus, certiorari, writs of error, &c.

The judges of this supreme court have also a standing and distinct commission, to hold as to them shall seem needful, courts of oyer and terminer, and general goal



goal delivery throughout the province, and are justices of the peace in every county.

The supreme courts in Pennsylvania are held at Philadelphia, tenth day of April, and the twenty-fourth day of September.

There is an officer called the register general, for the probate of wills and granting letters of administration, whose authority extends all over the province, but executed by a deputy in each respective county, except at Philadelphia, where he is obliged to reside himself. He or his deputies in case of any dispute or caveat entered, may call two of the justices of the peace to assist him in giving decisions. The authority of this officer, and of all the others above-mentioned, is founded on acts of assembly, empowering the governor to commission and appoint such as seem to him qualified for that purpose.

The court of vice-admiralty, is, as in the other colonies, by commission from the admiralty in England.

The justiciary court of admiralty, is, as in the other colonies, by commission under the broad seal of England, some of the neighbouring provinces being included in one and the same commission; the judges are the governors, councils, captains of men of war, principal officers of the customs, and some justices of the peace.

The present taxes, or provincial revenue.

This consists of, 1. Excise, which is 30s. per pipe of wine, and 4d. per gallon of rum sold in publick houses; may amount to about 3000l. currency; it would be much more if properly collected. 2. The interest money of their paper currency let out by the loan office on land security, which may be about 5000l. per ann. These two articles have hitherto been sufficient to pay the governor and other officers of the government, to defray the charges of treaties and presents to



to the Indians, and in general for all publick charges whatsoever.

Moreover, there is in each respective county, a county tax towards their courts of justice, high-ways, bridges, &c. and a poor tax. Yearly at the same time with the election of representatives in each county, are elected six assessors, and three others, called a court of delegates; these delegates are to sit and receive appeals from people who think themselves aggrieved in their assessments. The assessors without any further enquiry, by the assistance of the former years books, make what judgment they think proper of every man's estate and faculty, and rate them from 2 d. to 3 d. in the pound; they can not go higher by law. Here, as every where, the assessed are under rated; thus a person in truth worth 10,000 l. is returned upon their list worth 200 l. to 300 l. and to pay 2 d. in the pound; thus this tax falls heaviest upon the lower sort of people.

Produce, manufactures, trade, and navigation.

Their produce is all sorts of British grain of the bread kind, Indian corn, byck wheat; hemp, and flax; flax-seed is a considerable exportation to Scotland and Ireland; some tobacco, and bees-wax.

This may be called a grain or corn country, and adapted to flax and hemp.

They manufacture wheat into flour, and flour into bisket; the largest branch of their export is flour, which bears a better price abroad, than that of New-York. Five bushels wheat yields about one hundred and three quarters merchantable flour; the garnel or second flour pays for cask and all other charges. They manufacture their barley into malt, and malt into beer and ale for export.



The Irish manufacture considerably of \* linen cloth for sale, besides for home consumption ; perhaps in this country, the farmers, that is, the husbandmen, make nine tenths of all their wearing apparel.

At present the flax-seed from Pensylvania, Jersey, New-York, Connecticut, and other parts of New England, answers better at home, in cultivation, than what has been imported for many years from Holland.

Besides the above-mentioned commodities of exportation, the Pensylvania Indian traders purchase deer-skins and a few furs from the Indians of Delaware and Sesquahanna rivers, and from the handelaars, back of Maryland and Virginia ; they export considerably of iron in pigs, bars, and pots : ship building, but their oak is not durable : cordage, lintseed-oil, starch, soap, candles ; some beef, pork, butter, staves, heading and hoops, walnut logs and plank.

The commodities imported for consumption and re-exportation, are dry goods from Great-Britain ; wines from Madeira, and the other wine islands ; salt from

\* Concerning the British consumption of linen cloth, we may observe, 1. That the linen cloth stamp in Scotland for sale, is very much upon the increase, as appears by estimates made in the following periods. N. B. The cloth at a medium is valued at 8 d. to 11 d. sterl. per yard.

Years	Yards	1.
1729,	2,183,978	value 103,312 sterl.
1739,	4,801,537	196,068
1749.	7,360,286	322,045

2. Irish linen imported into England for seven years from Christmas 1741, to Christmas 1748, as per custom-house books, at a medium, is about six millions of yards per ann. 3. Besides all these, the British demand or imports of foreign linen is about 30 millions of yards per ann. Here is a large field of encouragement for our northern American colonies, proper for the production of flax and hemp, to supersede this large importation of German linen : this cannot be effected, but by a great encouragement of our grain and pasture colonies to lower the too great plantation price of labour, and the better manuring of their lands.

Great-



Great-Britain, France, † Spain, Lisbon, Mediterranean, and West-India islands; from the West-Indies or sugar islands and other colonies, sugar, rum, molasses, cotton, indigo, coffee, dying woods, mahogany plank, &c. from the Spanish coast and Carolinas, hides, rice, pitch, tar, turpentine, &c. they import many black or horned cattle far and near, from South-Carolina southward, and from 300 miles westward, and from the Jerseys.

Most of the Dutch husbandmen have stills, and draw a spirit from rye malted, from apples and peaches. There may be from 7000 to 8000 Dutch waggons with four horses each, that from time to time bring their produce and traffick to Philadelphia, from 10 to 100 miles distance.

Their navigation may be distinguished into small craft, that keep within the capes, and only bring produce to market: as the produce of Pennsylvania reaches only 15 miles below Philadelphia, most of this sort of trade is carried on from the three lower counties on the west side of the great river of Delaware, and all the West-Jerseys which lies along the east side of that river: these are not comprehended in the custom-house entries and clearances of the port of Philadelphia.

To illustrate the gradual increase of the trade of the port of Philadelphia, we observe, that anno 1736, the entries were 212, clearances 215 vessels; a little before the late French war, anno 1742, entries were 230, clearances 281. The number of vessels cleared from that port for twelve months preceding March 12, 1750-1, is 358; those that were bound to the northward of Delaware capes, viz. to New-York, Rhode-

† By an act of parliament for the encouragement of the fishery 1727, salt is allowed to be imported in Pennsylvania, from any part of Europe. There is a like act of parliament for the encouragement of the curing of fish in New-York. Though there may be a mistake in alledging the fisheries of New-York and Pennsylvania, because there are no fish cured there; yet in sundry other things it may be beneficial.



Island, Boston with its out ports, Hallifax, and Newfoundland, make about 90 of that number ; to Virginia, Maryland, North and South-Carolina, and Georgia, about 29 ; the remainder sail for Europe and the West-India sugar islands and colonies ; the craft that go to the southward, Virginia, Maryland, &c. are of no great value, but those who go to the northward, especially to Boston and Rhode-Island, are generally of more value than the vessels that go to the West-Indies, some of them carry 500 to 600 barrels of bread and flour.

They build about 20, or upwards, vessels that go to sea from Philadelphia.

The custom-house officers in this colony, have the largest salaries of any in North-America : the collector of the port of Philadelphia is a patent officer ; in the proper province this is the only collection ; in the territories called the three lower counties are two collections, Newcastle and Lewis.

I cannot account for the many custom-house collections upon the river of Delaware, there are two on the Jersey side, and three on the Pennsylvania side ; excepting the custom-house of Philadelphia, the others are nominal and sine cures, and might have been called branches and creeks of Philadelphia ; besides usual officers, there is on the Pennsylvania side, an extraordinary officer who may be called a comptroller general, a riding officer to examine and sign the accounts of the respective collectors.

Before any bills of publick credit were emitted, the currency of Pennsylvania was proclamation money, a heavy piece of eight was 6s. in denomination ; but by the emissions of publick credit bills, † as in all the colonies, who went into a paper currency, their deno-

† The publick bills of credit in the plantations were called a paper currency, because they were transferable ; and in several of the colonies enacted to be a tender in law.



minations did depreciate, and at present a dollar or weighty piece of eight passes for 7s. 6d. denomination; but by the good management of their paper loan office, the intrinsic value of their denominations, has not depreciated further. The interest of this loan money produces about 5000l. currency per ann. which with the 3000l. excise, defrays the charges of government. Their first emission of a paper currency was about 27 years ago.

### Religion sectaries.

The various plantation sectaries have been already mentioned, in a general digression in the section of Rhode-Island; but as the moravians and dumplers are peculiar to this colony, what is further to be observed concerning them, is here inserted.

In vol. II. p. 155, we mentioned that the moravians had lately obtained a British act of parliament indulging them in many things; particularly, that their affirmation, quaker-like, shall be equivalent to an oath, but with some restrictions. There are about 800 to 900 moravians who have already transported themselves to this colony, and many more may be expected, because since the passing the act of parliament in their favour, the several tolerations they had in Germany, Holland, and Denmark, are taken from them; the reasons for so doing, I have not as yet learned; but by edicts, their books, hymns, and publick worship, are ordered to be suppressed.

In vol. II. p. 150, we mentioned a branch of the German anabaptists called dumplers; they are generally ignorant people, but some of their heads are not so; for instance, Peter Miller, a German, writes elegantly in Latin upon religion and mortification: they have a printing press, and are continually printing; they are very curious in writing fine, and delight much in scrolls of writing on religious subjects, stuck up in their halls and cells, the initial letters are beautifully illuminated



minated with blue, red, and gold, such as may be seen in old monkish manuscripts.

I am again fallen into the disagreeable subject (where offence to some or many is unavoidable) of sectaries or parties in religious affairs : what here follows was designed for the appendix ; but as I now find that a long appendix containing many loose, not connected matters, may be tedious to the reader ; I shall in the several sections following, occasionally intersperse many things designed for the appendix.

Some years since, viz. 1722, there was a considerable secession in the S. W. parts of Connecticut, of congregationalist ministers and candidates, to better themselves in livings by church of England missions : from this incident, there has lately been revived a sophistical dispute, whether the established old congregationalist ministers, or the late new converts, church of England missionaries, are to be deemed the separatists. The decision seems to be easy, by relating only matters of fact. By a fundamental, in the articles of union, 1707, of England and Scotland, the church of England in express plain words, is declared to be established in all the English plantations ; but this seems to be only as to church government, and that only amongst the people of the church of England ; the other sectaries can have no ecclesiastical jurisdiction even amongst themselves, as appears by the annexed determination of the lords justices anno 1725 ; but in their various modes of worship (Roman catholicks excepted) all christian professions are tolerated in perpetuity, and in as ample manner, as if they were churches established by law. If any sectary who prevail in the legislature of any colony, impose upon the other sectaries ; they are checked by the king in council, all the colonies being under the immediate inspection of the king in council ; we here adduce the annexed case of the act of the assembly of Connecticut, against quakers, &c.



A true copy of a letter from their excellencies the lords justices, to the hon. W ——— D ———, Esq; lieutenant governor of his majesty's province of the Massachusetts-Bay.

Whitehall, October 7, 1725.

SIR,

“THE lords justices being informed from such  
“good hands, as make the truth of this advice  
“not to be doubted, that at a general convention of mi-  
“nisters, from several parts of his majesty's province of  
“the Massachusetts-Bay, at Boston on the 27th of May  
“last, a memorial and address was framed, directed to  
“you as lieutenant governor and commander in chief,  
“and to the council and house of representatives then  
“sitting, desiring that the general assembly would call  
“the several churches in this province to meet by their  
“pastors and messengers, in a synod; which memorial  
“and address, being accordingly presented by some of  
“the said ministers, in the name and at the desire of the  
“said convention, was considered in council, the third  
“of June following, and there approved, but the house  
“of representatives put off the consideration of it to the  
“next session, in which the council afterwards concurred.  
“Their excellencies were extremely surpris'd, that no  
“account of so extraordinary and important a transaction  
“should have been transmitted by you, pursuant to an  
“article in your instructions, by which you are directed  
“upon all occasions, to send unto his majesty, and to  
“the commissioners for trade and plantations, a particu-  
“lar account of all your proceedings, and the condition  
“of affairs within your government. As this matter  
“doth highly concern his majesty's royal prerogative, their  
“excellencies referred the consideration of it to Mr. at-  
“torney and solicitor general, who after mature delibe-  
“ration, and making all proper enquiries, reported, “that  
“from



“ from the charter and laws of your colony, they cannot  
 “ collect that there is any regular establishment of a na-  
 “ tional or provincial church there, so as to warrant the  
 “ holding of convocations or synods of the clergy; but  
 “ if such synods might be holden, yet they take it to be  
 “ clear in point of law, that his majesty’s supremacy in  
 “ ecclesiastical affairs, being a branch of his prerogative,  
 “ does take place in the plantations, and that synods can-  
 “ not be held, nor is it lawful for the clergy to assemble  
 “ as in synods, without authority from his majesty: they  
 “ conceive the above-mentioned application of the said  
 “ ministers, not to you alone, as representing the king’s  
 “ person, but to you, and the council, and the house of  
 “ representatives, to be a contempt of his majesty’s pre-  
 “ rogative, as it is a publick acknowledgment, that the  
 “ power of granting what they desire resides in the legis-  
 “ lative body of the province, which by law is vested  
 “ only in his majesty. And the lieutenant governor,  
 “ council, and assembly intermeddling therein, was an  
 “ invasion of his majesty’s royal authority, which it was  
 “ your duty as lieutenant governor, to have withstood  
 “ and rejected; and that the consent of the lieutenant  
 “ governor, the council, and house of representatives,  
 “ will not be sufficient authority for the holding of such  
 “ a synod.”

“ Their excellencies, upon consideration of this opi-  
 “ nion of the attorney and solicitor general, which they  
 “ have been pleased to approve, have commanded me to  
 “ acquaint you with, and to express to you their surprise,  
 “ that no account of so remarkable a transaction, which  
 “ so nearly concerns the king’s prerogative, and the wel-  
 “ fare of his majesty’s province under your govern-  
 “ ment, has been received from you, and to signify  
 “ to you their directions, that you do put an effectual  
 “ stop to any such proceedings; but if the consent desired  
 “ by the ministers above-mentioned, for the holding of  
 “ the synod, should have been obtained, and this pre-  
 “ tended synod should be actually sitting, when you re-  
 “ ceive



“ receive these their excellencies directions, they do in  
 “ that case, require and direct you, to cause such their  
 “ meeting to cease, acquainting them that their assembly  
 “ is against law, and a contempt of his majesty’s prero-  
 “ gative, and that they are forbid to meet any more;  
 “ but if notwithstanding such signification, they shall  
 “ continue to hold such an assembly, you are then to  
 “ take care that the principal actors therein be prosecuted  
 “ for a misdemeanour. But you are to avoid doing any  
 “ formal act to dissolve them, lest it be construed to  
 “ imply that they had a right to assemble. This, Sir, is  
 “ what I have in command from their excellencies to  
 “ signify to you.

“ And I must observe to you, that the precedent quo-  
 “ ted in the above-mentioned memorial of such a synod,  
 “ being held forty-five years ago, falls in with the year  
 “ 1680, and that the former charter, upon which the  
 “ government of your province depended, was repealed  
 “ by scire facias in the year 1684, and the new charter  
 “ was granted in the year 1691; from whence it appears,  
 “ that if such synod was holden as is alledged, it happened  
 “ a short time before the repealing of the old charter,  
 “ but none has been since the granting the new one.  
 “ I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

CHARLES DELAFAYE.

At the court at Kensington the eleventh day of October  
 1705, present the queen’s most excellent majesty, his  
 royal highness prince George of Denmark, lord arch-  
 bishop of Canterbury, lord keeper, lord treasurer,  
 lord president, earl of Ranelagh, Mr. Boyle, Mr.  
 secretary Hedges, Mr. secretary Harley, lord chief  
 justice Holt, lord chief justice Trevor, duke of Som-  
 erset, duke of Ormond, Mr. Vernon, Mr. Earle.

“ **A** Representation from the lords commissioners  
 “ of trade and plantations, being this day read  
 “ at the board upon an act, passed in her majesty’s  
 “ colony



“ colony of Connecticut, entitled, (only) HERETICKS,  
 “ whereby it is enacted, that “ all who shall entertain any  
 “ quakers, ranters, adamites, and other hereticks, are  
 “ made liable to the penalty of five pounds, and five  
 “ pounds per week for every town that shall so en-  
 “ tertain them; that all quakers shall be committed  
 “ to prison or be sent out of the colony—That who-  
 “ soever shall hold unnecessary discourse with quakers  
 “ shall forfeit twenty shillings; that whosoever shall keep  
 “ any quakers books, the governor, magistrates and  
 “ elders excepted, shall forfeit ten shillings, and that all  
 “ such books shall be suppressed; that no masters of  
 “ any vessel do land any quakers without carrying  
 “ them away again, under the penalty of twenty  
 “ pounds.”

“ And the said lords commissioners humbly offering,  
 “ that the said act be repealed by her majesty, it being  
 “ contrary to the liberty of conscience indulged to dis-  
 “ senters by the laws of England, as also to the charter  
 “ granted to that colony, her majesty with the advice  
 “ of her privy council, is pleased to declare her dis-  
 “ allowance and disapprobation of the said act; and  
 “ pursuant to her majesty’s royal pleasure thereupon,  
 “ the said act, passed in her majesty’s colony of Con-  
 “ necticut in New-England, entitled Hereticks, is hereby  
 “ repealed, and declared null and void, and of none  
 “ effect.

Signed JOHN POVEY.

In the sessions 1751, of the British parliament; was passed an act extending to the American colonies, as well as to the kingdom of Great-Britain, and its other dominions; entitled, an act for regulating the commencement of the year, and for correcting the calendar now in use. The abstract of the act runs thus,

Whereas the legal supputation of the year in that part of Great-Britain called England, beginning the 25th of March, has been attended with many inconveniencies,



as it differs from the usage of neighbouring nations, and the legal computation of that part of Great-Britain called Scotland, and thereby divers mistakes happened in the dates of deeds and other writings; and our Julian calendar having been discovered to be erroneous; that the spring equinox, which at the general council of Nice, anno dom. 325, happened about the 21st of March, now happens the ninth or tenth of the same month, which error is still increasing; and to the end, that the several equinoxes or solstices may for the future fall upon the same nominal days as at the time of the said general council, and is now generally received by almost all other nations of Europe, and to prevent disputes with foreign correspondents of almost all other nations of Europe in their letters and accounts, be it enacted, that in all his majesty's dominions in Europe, Asia, Africa, and America, the old supputation is not to be made use of, after the 31st of December 1751, and the year for the future to commence January 1st, and the days to be numbered in the same order, and the moveable feasts to be ascertained as they now are until September 2, 1752, inclusive; and the day following, (that is, the 3d of Sept. 1752) to be accounted the 14th of Sept. 1752, omitting at that time the eleven intermediate nominal days. All writings after 1st of January 1752, to be dated according to the new stile, and all courts after Sept. 2, 1752, shall be held in the same nominal days they now are; (courts held with fairs or marts excepted) that is, eleven days sooner than the respective day wherein the same are now kept. Every hundredth year, excepting every fourth hundred, whereof anno 1800 shall be the first, to be deemed tho' a leap year or biffextile consisting only of 365 days, but all other biffextile or leap years shall consist of 366 days. — And whereas the method of computing the full moons now used in the calendar of the common prayers of the church of England, to find easter, is become considerably erroneous; therefore the said feast of easter and others de-

Z 3

pending



pending thereon, shall after the 2d of Sept. 1752, conform to the decree of the said general council, and the practice of foreign countries, shall be observed according to the annexed table; and the former table, in all future additions of the book of common prayer, shall be suppressed; but the courts of session and exchequer in Scotland, and all markets, fairs and marts, shall be held upon the same natural days as if this act had not been made, that is, eleven days later, than according to this new computation, notwithstanding that by this new computation, the nominal days are anticipated or brought forward by the space of eleven days, the natural days and times for the opening and closing of commons of pasture and the like, not to be altered by this act, that is, eleven days later than the new supputation.—The natural days and times of payments of rents, annuities, sums of money, delivery of goods, commencement or expiration of leases, and the like, shall not be by this act anticipated or accelerated; and the time of attaining the age of 21 years shall not be altered by this act, or the determination of any apprenticeship or service. \*

Proprietors

\* Julius Cæsar began his year about the hybernal or winter solstice, (the equinoxes and solstices are proper periods in such matters) the Julian or O. S. began 45 years before CHRIST: this stile was reformed by pope Gregory 1582, but was not carried back to the nativity of our Saviour, which in church preciseness ought to have been, but only to the time of the council of Nice, which was held anno dom. 325, by Constantine the great, to examine and condemn the doctrines of Arius. At the time of the council of Nice, the vernal equinox was on the 21st of March, but in strictness and according to the precision of devotionalist observers of days, it should have gone back so far as the nativity or first year of Christ, the vernal equinox was then on the 23d of March: but as the Gregorian stile is at present the general practice of christian European nations, the British legislature in their wonted prudence have acceded thereto, as being a convenient civil, but not a jure divino affair. Instead of being too minutely precise in striking off 13 days, which is the truth of the case in conformity to other European countries, they only struck off 11 days, for the sake of mutual convenience;



Proprietors or principal governors, and their resident deputies or lieutenant governors.

The first proprietor and governor was William Penn, son of admiral Penn, see vol. II. p. 307; he carried over many quakers with him to that country; his patent included that part of new Swedeland, which lies on the west side of Delaware river, some part of the Swede settlements lay on the east side of the river, and is part of west New-Jersey. Mr. Penn continued two years in Pennsylvania, and upon his father's death returned to England, and left the government in the hands of Thomas Lloyd, with a council. Mr. Penn being esteemed a favourite of K. James II. was suspected to be a Roman catholick and jesuit in the assumed mask of a quaker, and upon the revolution K. William was advised to suspend his privilege of appointing a deputy governor for Pennsylvania. And

The crown appointed col. Fletcher, governor of New-York, to be also governor of Pennsylvania; but upon Mr. William Penn's vindication of himself, he was restored to his privilege of government, and appointed

Mr. Blackwell, his deputy or lieut. governor; he was succeeded as lieut. governor by Thomas Lloyd, Esq; upon his death

Mr. Penn appointed his nephew col. Markham his

ency; it is more eligible to err with the generality of Europe, than affectedly to constitute a peculiar British stile, which would be running from one inconvenience into another; the main intention is to produce an uniformity in the computation of time throughout the christian part of the world; the agreeing with the rest of Europe, ought to prevail over any argument deduced from the nicety of calculation.

Peter Deval of the Middle Temple, secretary to the royal society, drew the bill and prepared most of the tables under direction of the earl of Chesterfield, the first former of the design; and the whole was carefully examined and approved of by Martin Folkes; Esq; president of the royal society, and Dr. Bradley, his majesty's astronomer at Greenwich, who computed the tables at the end of the bill.



deputy or lieut. governor; he had the government or direction until the second arrival of Mr. Penn, 1698.

Mr. William Penn principal governor and proprietor arrived a second time in Pennsylvania, 1698. He returned to England 1700, and nominated col. Andrew Hamilton for his deputy; in his administration was much confusion in the province; upon his death

1704, col. John Evans was appointed lieutenant governor.

1713, died in London William Penn, the first proprietor and principal governor, much in debt, occasioned by his whimsical disposition; he had agreed with the crown to resign his property and government for a certain consideration (to extricate himself from debt) but died suddenly before the instrument was executed, and the government and property remains in the family to this time.

The first principal governor and proprietor was called William Penn, the grand-father; he was succeeded by his son William Penn, called the father; and he was succeeded by Springet Penn, William Penn the son; and lastly in the three brothers, John Penn, Thomas Penn, and Richard Penn, co-heirs in the succession; these brothers by a written agreement with lord Baltimore proprietary of Maryland, their adjoining neighbour, 1732, settled boundaries to be afterwards confirmed in form of law; but lord Baltimore receded and occasioned a tedious controversy in chancery, as is above related.

John, the eldest of the three brothers, died October 28, 1746, a bachelor, and by will, October 24, 1746, left his share to his second brother Thomas, with remainders, as is expressed in the will.

William Penn (son to the first proprietor) in law called the father, (the first proprietor, in law instruments, was called the father) died at Liege, 1720.

1708-9, in January arrived capt. Gookin, lieut. governor.



1717, May 30, arrives Sir William Keith, lieut. governor.

1726, Major Gordon superseded Sir William Keith.

Major Gordon died in October 1736, and Mr. Logan was in course president for a short time; but was soon superseded by col. Thomas, a planter of Antigua; Mr. Logan died much lamented Nov. 1751. After nine years government, col. Thomas resigned 1747, and was succeeded by James Hamilton, Esq; the present lieut. governor, son of Andrew Hamilton, a noted lawyer in these parts.

### A medical DIGRESSION

Concerning the personal constitutions of people born in British North-America, of the endemial distempers prevalent there, and of their present medical practice.

As this digression will not be much read by ordinary capacities, where things cannot so well be expressed in vernacular words, I take the liberty of using technical or professional expressions, and some classical phrases, and generally in a concise or aphoristical loose, but practical manner.

Their children or youth are more forward \* or precocious than

\* It is observed that in the West-Indies there are no boys, all being either children or men.

Perhaps the most noted instance of forwardness in a boy, is what Montagne of Gascony in his essays 1550 writes of himself; his father educated him in his childhood in the learned languages of Greek and Latin, in the same routine that from nurses we learn our vernacular or mother tongue: we had a remarkable instance of such routines in Boston; a worthy English gentleman, Richard Dalton, Esq; a great admirer of the Greek classics, because of the tenderness of his eyes, taught his negro boy Cæsar to read to him distinctly any Greek writer, without understanding the meaning or interpretation. Montagne with much vanity and peculiar pedantry, says, that Buchanan was afraid to accost him when only 6 æt. in Latin, and that Buchanan copied his instruction or education of a child from his education. Buchanan was a first rate master of the Latin classics, and preceptor to



than in Great-Britain. 2. The virility of the men, and fecundity of their women, or child-bearing sex, are much the same as in Great-Britain, their mother country. 3. Their longevity falls much shorter.

The

to king James VI. of Scotland; in his travels in France, hearing of the forwardness of this boy, he went to see him. As Montagne is a noted writer, I shall for amusement mention another instance of his Gascon pedantry; that in his younger years he resolved not to enter into any matrimonial partnership or contract, not even with the goddesses of wisdom, but married æt. 33.

As the education of children, is not sufficiently attended to in many of our colonies, I shall here insert the beginning of an experiment of this nature. I delight in promoting of children in town and country; accordingly I have in Boston taken a promising boy entirely at my own charge of subsistence and education, under my sole direction, to form a practical (not notional) scheme of management and education *ob ovo*, or rather *ab utero*, because of some difficulties I was present at the birth; I did not allow him to be rocked in a cradle, suspecting that concussions might weaken his brain, and consequently impair his judgment; he never had *diascordium*, *mithridate*, or other opiate, or strong drink, to compose him to sleep; a pernicious indolent practice of nurses and old women, because thereby convulsions may be induced, or the child rendered stupid for life.

To accommodate his organs of speech while flexible, and in the parrot or prattle period of life, not only to the pronunciation of our English or vernacular words, but also to the pronunciation of other languages; before he was full five years of age, he did distinctly repeat and pronounce the Lord's prayer in the five languages familiar to me, Greek, Latin, English, French and Dutch: he did well express and define many harsh and long foreign words, such as the Indian names of some ponds, rivers, and tribes in our neighbourhood. Chabonamungagog, a large pond joining to Douglafs, Winipisiackit, a great pond or lake in the province of New-Hampshire, Papacontaquash or Millers river, which falls into Connecticut river on the east side a little below North-field, Arowsaguntacook, a tribe of French Abnauque Indians called the mission of St. Francis, on the south side of Canada river, Missilimakanack, a tribe of French Indians, between the great lakes Hurons and Illinois, Tatamaganahaw, a small tribe of Mikmake Indians of Nova-Scotia, in the bay Verte of the gulph of St. Lawrence; some Dutch words, *Achtentachtentigh*, eighty-eight, &c. some Latin words, *Honorificabilitudinitatibus*, Honou-  
rablenesses, &c.

Instead of the abstrusely profound catechisms, which preposterously are taught children, he is initiated in things and words which are easily comprehended, and subjects of common conversation, such as,

Q. What



The remote causes or predispositions to most chronic distempers are, 1. Mala stamina vitæ. 2. Malus locus,

Q. What is your name?

A. I am known by the name of William Douglass.

Q. Where was you born?

A. In the town of Boston, in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, in the British dominions of New-England in North-America.

Q. When was you born?

A. I was born July 25, 1745; but how I was made, and how I came into the world, I have forgotten, and cannot tell.

Q. What is your religion?

A. A catholick christian protestant; to fear God and keep his commandments, to honour and obey the civil government.

Q. What is God?

A. The supreme being, who created and manages the universe, in some manner inconceivable to us created beings.

Q. What is civil government?

A. The laws and customs of the country I live in, as executed by certain appointed magistrates.

Q. Why do you every seventh day go to a place of publick worship?

A. Because (as my grandmother tells me,) one day in seven is by most civil governments found requisite to abstain from labour, for the refreshment of the labouring part of mankind and cattle.

Q. Why do you in ordinary attend the assembly of Mr. Welsted and Gray?

A. Because it is the nearest, and neighbours naturally join in their publick devotions; these two ministers or pastors are exemplary in their lives, and agreeable in their publick discourses.

Q. What sectary of publick worship do you follow?

A. That of my father natural or adopting. My grandmother tells me, that by law and custom I must follow the example and precepts of my father till 21 æt. or till assigned.

We may observe that of all animals, mankind attain to the greatest perfection of knowledge, but after the longest time arrive to the full growth of body and mind; therefore as this boy is too exuberant in the growth of mind, I check or retard him by allowing him more play than schooling, that the impressions may not be too slight or transitory; and allow him to associate with active wild boys, not wicked or vicious, that by his puerile flow of spirit, he may practise activity of body and mind. The Dalrymples, a family in Scotland, noted for acuteness, wisdom, and knowledge; allowed their boys at a certain age to associate with wild, but not wicked boys, and after some time took them up to a regular sober education.

At times I send him to any tolerated place of publick worship, to prevent party, bigotry, and a narrow way of thinking. I ask him



locus, that is, a bad air and soil. 3. Indolence or inactivity. 4. Intemperance. Concerning all these we shall intersperse some aphorisms.

During the time or period of my practice in New-England, we have had no considerable epidemics excepting small pox, measles, and some species of putrid fevers and dysenteries; the varieties in our endemics were from the vicissitudes of seasons and weather. To write a history of epidemick yearly constitutions, in Sydenham's manner, for a continued succession of years, would be writing of a novel: our chronical ails, by the practice of our common physicians, particularly by the routine indolent palliative repetitions of V. S. and opiates, which fix all distempers, and render their patients valedudinary and short-lived. Opiates and inebriating liquors have the same effects, they carry the peccant humours to the nerves, from whence they are scarce to be removed; they are slow poisons, they enfeeble both body and mind, and produce mala stamina vitæ in the progeny.

As New-England lies in the leeward of the westerly extended continent of North-America, the winds (being generally westerly) gliding continuedly along this vast

him his natural remarks upon the different modes of worship, to make him observant; I shall give one instance which I hope the candid reader will not judge ludere cum sacris, I have a great veneration for the church of England. In a common prayer day he went to a church of England, when he came home he said, that he observed the minister come into the church in a black gown, and retire into a closet (the vestry) and come out again with a clean shirt over his gown. His grandmother as usual asked him where the text was; he said that he could not tell, because every body preached promiscuously; men, women, and children spake in publick (meaning the responses) his grandmother told him that the quaker sectary allow their women, (but no children) to speak in publick, though contrary to St. Paul's admonition.

He is taught the hours of the day, the days of the week, the months in the year, the mariner's compass or corners of the wind; the varieties of shipping, schooners, sloops, brigantines, snows, and ships; he reads the sign posts, and news-papers.



tract of land much heated in summer, and much cooled or frozen in winter, occasion the country to be much hotter in summer, and much colder in winter, than in Great-Britain; reciprocations, but not to extremes, are salutary to the constitutions, where the transitions are gradual; thus we may observe in nature; that for the benefit of the earth's produce, there is a reciprocation of summer and winter, day and night, &c. In countries where the seasons are upon the extremes in summer and winter, as in New-England, constitutions do not wear well, analogous to the timber and plank of a ship between wind and water. Longevity appears mostly in island countries, where with a small latitude or variation the temperature of the air continues nearly the same.

I shall here insert a few lines concerning the constitution and medical practice of our northern Indians. See vol. I. p. 174.

The Indians north of Canada river, the Esquimaux and Outawaways, are generally affected with pforas, scurvy, or itch; from the cold intemperance of the climate. As the Indian manner of life is much more simple than that of Europeans, they are not subject to so many various diseases: their modern intemperance in drinking rum and other spirits, kills more than all their other distemperatures.

The Indian food is from their hunting, fowling, and fishing; their bread-kind is from mays or Indian corn, phaseoli or kidney beans of several sorts, tuberosse roots of several kinds, masts or nuts of various sorts, great variety of forest berries.

The varieties of national constitutions and habits are not easily to be accounted for; the American Indians, by keeping principally their feet warm, the Africa negroes by keeping their heads warm, without any regard to the rest of their body, preserve their health and strength.



The American aboriginal Indians naturally are of weak constitutions, they are impubes & imberbes; but by habit from their infancy, can suffer hunger and wood damps, better than Europeans of stronger constitutions: their natural temper is cruel and vindictive.

Their physicians in ordinary are the powowers clergy or conjurers, and some old women. In their medical practice they take no notice of pulse or urine, they do not use blood letting; they chiefly use traditional herbs; blistering with punk or touchwood, and the blisters are converted into issues; sweating in hot houses (an extemporary kind of bagnio) and immediately thereupon immersion in cold water, this practice has killed many of them in eruptive fevers. The American Indians are noted for their traditional knowledge of poisonous herbs and antidotes; but I do not find that our Indian venifici are so expert in the venificium art, as the negroes of Africa, who give poisons, which in various, but certain periods, produce their mortal effects, some suddenly, some after a number of months or years.

They cure several poisons, for instance, the bite of that American viper called rattle-snake or *vipera caudifona*, by proper antidotes, before they produce their usual dismal effects. †

I hope these medical observations may be of some use to our colonies; as they are in my professional business, by some they may be thought pedantick, by others

† May we not hope, that in future times, some epidemical contagious distempers, such as the plague, small-pox, and the like, may be prevented or extinguished in seminio by proper antidotes: time produces surprising discoveries in nature, such as the various phænomena of magnetism and electricity; in the small-pox the late improvement of conveying it by inoculation, is found more favourable than the receiving of it the chance or natural way, as fruit from trees inoculated, surpasses natural fruit; this practice of inoculating for the small-pox, was introduced in a very rash indiscreet manner, and by weak men; we may observe that many of the *juvantia* or *lædientia* in medicine were discovered or rather introduced by rash fools and madmen, instance, Paracelsus's mercurial remedies.

they



they may be called a quackish ostentation ; once for all, I declare, that I have no lucrative views, because mihi tantum suppetit viaticæ quantum viæ.

I here insert some remarks upon the medical practice in our colonies ; as no man's name is expressed, and some gentlemen practitioners of candour, probity, ingenuity, and good practical knowledge are excepted, these reflections may be taken in good part without further apology.

In our plantations, a practitioner, bold, rash, impudent, a lyar, basely born and educated, has much the advantage of an honest, cautious, modest gentleman. In general, the physical practice in our colonies is so perniciously bad, that excepting in surgery, and some very acute cases, it is better to let nature under a proper regimen take her course (*naturæ morborum curatrices*) than to trust to the honesty and sagacity of the practitioner ; our American practitioners are so rash and officious, the saying in the apocrypha, Ecclesiasticus xxxviii. 15. may with much propriety be applied to them. "He that sinneth before his maker, let him fall into the hands of the physician." Frequently there is more danger from the physician, than from the distemper ; a country where the medical practice is very irregular, is a good school to learn the lædencia, a good article in practice ; but sometimes notwithstanding of male practice, nature gets the better of the doctor, and the patient recovers.

Our practitioners deal much in quackery, \* and quackish

\* I shall mention one remarkable instance of colony quackery, advertised in the New-York gazette, December 16, 1751. "In July 1751, was committed to the care of doctor Peter Billing, an experienced physician, and man mid-wife, and formerly in the king's service, the most extraordinary and remarkable case that ever was performed in the world, upon one Mrs. Mary Smith, single woman, sister to capt. Arthur Smith, on James river, in the county of Surry in Virginia, æt. 46 ; she had been upwards of 18 years out of her senses, (most of the time raving mad) eat her own excrements, and was compleatly cured by him in two months, contrary to  
" the



quackish medicines, as requiring no labour of thought or composition, and highly recommended in the London quack bills (in which all the reading of many of our practitioners consists) inadvertently encouraged by patents for the benefit of certain fees to some offices, but to the very great damage of the subject. How dismal is it to observe some apothecaries shops wainscotted or papered with advertisements, recommending quack medicines for the profit of the shop, but destruction of their neighbours? this is vending of poisons for gain.

In the most trifling cases they use a routine of practice: when I first arrived in New-England, I asked G. P. a noted facetious practitioner, what was their general method of practice; he told me their practice was very uniform, bleeding, vomiting, blistering, purging, anodyne, &c. if the illness continued, there was *repetendi*, and finally *murderandi*, nature was never to be consulted, or allowed to have any concern in the affair. What Sydenham well observes, is the case with our practitioners; *æger nimia medici diligentia ad plures migrat*.

Blood-letting and anodynes are the principal tools of our practitioners, these palliate any distemper for a short time; while at the same time they confound the intentions of nature, and fix the malady; they follow Sydenham too much in giving paregoricks, after catharticks, which is playing fast and loose.

“ the opinion of all that knew her, no doctor in the province daring  
 “ to undertake her. N. B. The contagious distemper so frequently  
 “ happening to the bold adventurers in the wars of Venus, when re-  
 “ cent, will be cured by him for three pistoles in hand, though the  
 “ common price is five pound all over North-America. And all  
 “ other cases curable in physick and surgery, proportionable accord-  
 “ ing to the circumstances of people.” He has also other matters to  
 publish, particularly an elegant medicine to prevent the yellow fever,  
 and dry gripes in the West-Indies; this is incomparable, if we ex-  
 cept a quack advertisement published in Jamaica (immediately after  
 the last great earthquake) of pills to prevent persons or their effects  
 suffering by earthquakes.





## SECTION XV.

Concerning the PROVINCE of

## MARYLAND.

Although recapitulations or repetitions are reckoned tedious and not elegant ; I find that our sections or colonies may be more agreeably introduced by some general accounts or transactions with a little variation, than by an abrupt entrance into the colony affairs.

The Cabots of Venetian extract obtained 1495, a patent from king Henry VII. of England, of all lands to be by them discovered west of Europe, as to property ; with a reservation of a certain royal perquisite ; this king understood perquisites ; the father John, and afterwards the son Sebastian, fitted out from Bristol ; in their first voyage upon the discovery of a N. W. passage to China, and the East-Indies, being obstructed by the ice, the sailors mutinied and returned to England, without effecting any thing of consequence.

Anno 1498, Sebastian ranged the continent of North-America from 40 d. to 67 d. N. lat. and at several places took a nominal occupancy from discovery, without making any settlement ; thus notwithstanding of the discoveries, we had no possession for near a century of years.

Sir Walter Raleigh, a noted discovery projector, see vol. I. p. 111, anno 1584, March 25, obtained of queen Elizabeth a patent for discoveries and settlements in America ; upon the return of the vessels of the first adventure, in honour to the virgin queen Elizabeth, the name of Virginia in general was given to the North part of the continent so far as the gulph of St. Laurence north, to Florida south. In process of time the French



made some small settlements in the north parts of North-America, and called them Nova Francia, or Nouvelle France; at this time known by the name of L'Acadia, (Nova Scotia) and Canada. The Swedes, Fins and Dutch introduced by Hudfon, made settlements upon Hudfon's or Rord rivier, and Delaware or Zuyd rivier, and called it Nova-Belgia or New-Netherlands. Thus in the beginning of the last century the eastern coast of North-America was divided into, 1. Nova-Francia, 2. North-Virginia, comprehending the colonies of Nova-Scotia and New-England. 3. Nova-Belgia or New-Netherlands, at present known by the names of New-York, New-Jersies, and Pensylvania. 4. South-Virginia, which does comprehend Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina, South-Carolina, and Georgia.

Upon the new discoveries, many separate grants of districts were made to private proprietors; but afterwards for the regularity and ease of jurisdiction, the crown assumed the jurisdictions, and reduced them to more convenient models of government.

Maryland is properly a sprout from Virginia, therefore the connection of this settlement with the first discoveries must be referred to the section of Virginia; here we shall only observe how and when it did sprout. See vol. I. p. 288, the Newfoundland section.

Towards the end of king James I. reign, Sir George Calvert principal secretary of state, afterwards lord Baltimore, obtained a patent for some fishing harbours in Newfoundland; by reason of the civil troubles in England, these settlements were discontinued; being a zealous Roman catholick, with other dissenting zealots of various sectaries, he left England and retired to Virginia: as the Virginians were generally bigots to the church of England sectary, they did not use him so well as he expected; and as the Virginians had not settled further north than Potomack river, lord Baltimore went home and obtained from king Charles I. a grant of all the lands from the mouth of Potomack river in about 38 d. 10 m. N. to the Swede and Finland settlements, which were reckoned



reckoned to the bottom of Chesapeak bay, in about the latitude of 39 d. 45 m. or 15 English miles south of Philadelphia parallel; the account of the controversies concerning the boundaries between the properties and jurisdictions of Maryland and Pennsylvania, we refer back to the section of Pennsylvania.

The banditti Dutch, Swedes, and Fins, were prior to the English in their settlements upon Delaware river and westward inland. Upon a new royal regulation in Virginia, several families went over from England to settle there, amongst those were lord Baltimore, a rigid Roman catholic; for the advantage of a more free exercise of his religion, he retired thither; but being ill used by the church of England sectary, and finding that the humour of petitioning for large tracts of land was encouraged by the court at home, and that the Virginia settlers had not extended further north than Potomack river, lord Baltimore petitioned for a grant of vacant lands from north of Potomack river to the Swedish and Finlanders settlements between the bottom of Chesapeak bay and Delaware river, and obtained the promise of a grant for the same; but dying soon, his son and heir obtained the patent, dated June 20, 1632; that part of the patent which regards the boundaries, in the English translation from the original Latin instrument runs thus. “ Know ye therefore that  
 “ we, favouring the pious and noble purposes of the said  
 “ baron of Baltimore, of our special grace, certain know-  
 “ ledge, and mere motion, have given, granted, and con-  
 “ firmed, and by this our present charter for us our heirs  
 “ and successors do give, grant and confirm unto Cecilius  
 “ now baron of Baltimore, his heirs and assigns, all that  
 “ part of a peninsula lying in the parts of America, be-  
 “ tween the ocean on the east, and the bay or gulph of  
 “ Chesapeak on the west, and divided from the other part  
 “ thereof by a right line drawn from the promontory or  
 “ cape of land called Watkins-point (situate in the afore-  
 “ said bay or gulph near the river of Wighco) on the west,  
 “ unto the main ocean on the east, and between that bounds



“ on the south as far as to the æstuary of Delaware on the  
 “ north, where it is situate to the 40th d. of northern la-  
 “ titude from the equinoctial where New-England ends,  
 “ and all that tract of land within the bounds underwritten,  
 “ viz. passing by the aforefaid æstuary called Delaware-  
 “ Bay in a right line, by the degree aforefaid, unto the  
 “ true meridian of the first fountain of the river Potomack,  
 “ and from thence tending or passing toward the south to  
 “ the further bank of the said river, and following the  
 “ west and south side thereof unto a certain place called  
 “ Cinquack, situate near the mouth of said river where it  
 “ falls into the aforefaid bay or gulph of Chesapeak, and  
 “ from thence by the shortest line that can be drawn unto  
 “ the aforefaid promontory or place called Watkins-point.  
 “ So that all the tract of land divided by the line afore-  
 “ said drawn between the main ocean and Watkins-point,  
 “ unto the promontory called Cape-Charles, and all its  
 “ appurtenances, do remain intirely excepted to us, our  
 “ heirs and successors for ever. We do also grant and  
 “ confirm unto the said now lord Baltimore, his heirs and  
 “ assigns, all lands and islets within the limits aforefaid,  
 “ and all and singular the islands and islets which are or  
 “ shall be in the ocean within ten leagues from the eastern  
 “ shore of the said country towards the east, &c.” Lord  
 Baltimore called it Maryland, from the name of the queen  
 consort.

For the north bounds of this province, see the Pen-  
 sylvania section, vol II. p. 308, being a parallel of fifteen  
 English miles south of the southermost part of the  
 city of Philadelphia in about lat. 39 d. 45 m. Its east  
 line is the west line of the three lower counties of Pen-  
 sylvania, already delineated, to cape Henlopen, and from  
 cape Henlopen by the ocean to a parallel or east and  
 west line drawn from Watkins-point near Wighco river  
 in Chesapeak bay in about the lat. of 38 d. 10 m:  
 its southern bound is this parallel on the east side of  
 Chesapeak bay, and further on the west side of said bay  
 up Potomack river as the river runs; here are some  
 disputes



disputes with lord Fairfax, proprietor of the north neck of Virginia: its vast line is a small opening between the properties of the Penns and of lord Fairfax as settled by treaty with the Six nations of Indians known by the name of Mohawks, June 29, 1744, at Lancaster in Pensylvania, viz. that the boundaries shall be at two miles above the uppermost falls of Potomack river, and run from thence in a north line to the south bounds of Pensylvania, and the Indians gave a quit-claim to all the lands in Maryland east of that line for the consideration of 300l. currency paid to them by Maryland.

Virginia and Maryland are an open country with many navigable rivers and creeks, without any battery defence, and the inhabitants much dispersed; therefore much exposed to the incursions and depredations of enemy armed vessels; scarce any towns, general harbours and barcadiers; because most planters or traders have navigable barcadiers of their own; after some time there must be general barcadiers at the falls of the several rivers for the benefit of the inland country.

Upon the grant and patent 1632, lord Baltimore had a design to go to Maryland in person, but altered his mind and appointed his brother Leonard Calvert, Esq; to go governor in his stead, and joined Jeremy Hawley, Esq; and Thomas Cornwallis, Esq; in the commission. The first colony consisted of about 200 persons, sent by his lordship in the autumn 1633; they were chiefly gentlemen of good families and Roman catholicks; the principal were,  
Leonard Calvert, governor.

Jeremy Hawley, Esq;

Thomas Cornwallis, Esq;

} Assistants.

George Calvert, brother to  
the governor,

Richard Gerrard, Esq;

Edward Winter, Esq;

Frederick Winter, Esq;

Henry Wiseman, Esq;

Mr. John Sanders,

Mr. John Baxter,

Mr. Edward Cranfield,

Mr. Henry Green,

Mr. Nicholas Fairfax,

Mr. Thomas Dorrel,

Mr. John Medcalfe,

Mr. William Saire,

Capt. John Hill.

A a 3

They



They sailed from Cowes in the isle of Wight, November 22, 1632; after touching at Barbadoes, and St. Christophers, arrived in Virginia, February 24th following, and 3d of March arrived in Potomack river; after ranging the country about Potomack river, they at last settled with the consent of the Indians, at the Indian town called Yamaco at the mouth of the river, to which they gave the name of St. Mary's. It is said that in the first two years this settlement of a colony cost lord Baltimore about 40,000 l. sterl. by bringing over people, provisions, and other stores.

During the civil wars in England, lord Baltimore was deprived of the government or jurisdiction of Maryland. About the restoration 1661, Charles lord Baltimore, son of Cecilius, obtained a confirmation of the grant 1632, and made several voyages thither, but the proprietor being a Roman catholick, the crown retained the jurisdiction, and appointed the governor and all other civil officers: the present proprietor is a protestant, and enjoys both government or jurisdiction and property.

In the trading road by Harris's ferry on Sesquahanna river, the breadth of Maryland from Pennsylvania boundary line to Potomack river does not exceed 8 miles, but higher it is said to widen again. N. B. Paxton on Sesquahanna river, is the trading place in this road.

The lords Baltimore reserve in each county some mannors not granted, as the Penns do in Pennsylvania, and as proprietors of large tracts of land in New-England reserve some part to themselves, when they sell off parcels; these parcels when improved, rise the value of the reserved lands.

Maryland was so called from K. Charles I. queen Henrietta Maria, a daughter of France; it was held of the crown in common soccage as of his majesty's honour of Windsor, paying yearly two Indian arrows to the castle of Windsor when demanded. By an act of assembly for liberty of conscience to all persons who profess christianity, protestant dissenters, as well as Roman



Roman catholicks, were induced to settle there. The prior settlement of Virginia was of great advantage to the settling of the colony of Maryland, in supplying them with sundry necessaries.

In Maryland and Virginia, the publick rates or taxes for province, county, and parish, are called levies: it is a capitation or poll tax, upon all tytheables, that is, upon all males of whites, and upon all negroes, males and females, of 16 æt. and upwards to 60 æt.

In Maryland the tax is generally from 90lb. to 120 wt. of tobacco, according to exigencies, per ann. for each poll, whereof 40 wt. to the rector of the parish; the rest is for the poors rate, assemblymen's wages, &c. The clergymen of Maryland are upon the most profitable lay of all our plantation clergy; they are not confined to a fixed salary (in Virginia the parish ministers are fixed to 16,000 lb. wt. of tobacco per ann. salary) but in this growing country as they are paid in proportion to the number of taxables, the more that the colony increases in people, the larger is their income, until the parishes become so large as to require to be subdivided: there are at present near 40,000 taxables in Maryland.

In Maryland the assembly at times fixes produce at a certain price as a legal tender for the year; for instance, anno 1732, tobacco was fixed at 1 d. per lb. wt. Indian corn at 20 d. per bushel, wheat at 3 s. and 4 d. per bushel, pork 2 d. per lb. wt. Quit-rents and king's duties were excepted, and were payable in proclamation money, 6 s. per heavy piece of eight, now called a Spanish dollar.

The people of Maryland have been happy, in not being exposed to the incursions and rapines of the outland Indians; they are covered by the neighbouring provinces; their opening between the provinces of Virginia and Pensylvania is very small. Anno 1677, the Indians at war with Virginia, by mistake committed



some outrages in Maryland. A few years since, the Indians upon reserved lands, principally in the county of Dorchester, east of Chesapeak bay, upon some disgust seemed to be mutinous, but being sensible of their own inability, that humour soon subsided. Therefore we can have no article of their wars with the French, Spaniards, and Indians.

The history of the vicissitudes in grants and consequential governments or jurisdictions is of permanent use; but the provincial or municipal acts as to divisions of districts and counties, are variable and fluctuating according to the humours of the assembly men. During the civil wars, the Baltimore family were deprived of their jurisdiction in Maryland; after the restoration 1661, they obtained a confirmation of their royal patent, but the proprietor being a Roman catholick, the court of England appointed the governor and other civil officers. Upon the revolution, the crown or court of England retained the jurisdiction of the province of Maryland. The present lord Baltimore is of the protestant denomination, and is vested in the jurisdiction as well as property of Maryland.

Into Maryland and Virginia are imported about 4000 negroe slaves per ann. some planters have 500 slaves; col. Carter of Virginia is said to have had 900, and Mr. Bennet of Maryland 1300 at one time. A peck of Indian corn and some salt is their weekly allowance of provision for each negro; they are reckoned to raise 1000 lb. wt. of tobacco besides some barrels of corn per head, 6000 tobacco plants are reckoned to yield 1000 lb. wt. of tobacco. The planters by act of assembly in Virginia and Maryland, are inhibited from planting more than 6000 plants of tobacco per negro.

It is reckoned, there may be 300 to 400 felons or milcreants imported yearly to Maryland from England; this importation of vile levies is sufficient to corrupt  
any



any plantation settlement or improvement; it is expected that the government at home are contriving a more salutary method of punishing some criminals, than by fowing them in the colonies.

As the colonies or provinces of Virginia and Maryland lie in the same long bay of Chesapeak, we cannot avoid giving a joint account of them upon some occasions, principally with regard to their trade and navigation.

### Rivers and mountains.

The gradual soundings in the ocean before vessels enter Chesapeak bay, render the navigation of Virginia and Maryland very safe; by the many navigable rivers, bays and creeks, which communicate with the great bay, the water carriage is very commodious. This fine bay reaches from cape Henry at its entrance in about 37 d. lat. to the bottom of the bay where it receives the river Sesquahanna in about 39 d. 45 m. lat. Virginia lies upon this bay from cape Henry in lat. 37, to the mouth of Potomack river, which divides Virginia from Maryland in lat. 38. Maryland lies upon the other part of this long bay.

Upon the east side of this great bay are many small bays, creeks, and rivers, but of short course, because the neck of land between this bay and the ocean is narrow; in the Virginia part there are no rivers; in the Maryland part there are several short navigable rivers, which generally and naturally serve as boundaries of counties, viz. Pokomoke, Witomoco, Nanticoke, Chaptank, Wye, Chester, Sasaphras, Elke, and north east rivers.

Upon the west side of this long bay are many long navigable beautiful rivers; in the Virginia part are James river, York river, Rapahanock river, and the south side of Potomack river; by these the western shore of Virginia is divided into four necks of land; the



the property of three of these necks is in the crown; the property of the northern neck is in lord Fairfax, who married the heiress of lord Colpepper, as shall be related more at large in the section of Virginia; in the Maryland part are the north side of Potomack river, Patuxen river, South river, Severn river, Patapsco river, Gunpowder river.

The two capes of Virginia which make the entrance of the bay, are about 20 miles distant, and were called by capt. Smith, Henry and Charles, the names of king James I. two sons; the direct course of the bay is N. by W. and S. by E. From Bahama landings at the bottom of the bay to Newcastle on Delaware river, are 30 miles good travelling.

Sesquahanna river, as we mentioned in the section of Pennsylvania, comes from small ponds a little south of Mohawks river in the province of New-York, crosses the province of Pennsylvania, and falls into the bottom of Chesapeak bay in the northern parts of Maryland.

The other great rivers of Virginia and Maryland all lie W. side of the bay; only James river and Potomack river reach the great Apolacian mountains, called the Blue hills. In Virginia and Maryland the tides are very small.

Maryland and Virginia are flat countries, excepting the Apolacian great mountains to the westward, which begin in the province of Pennsylvania, and run 900 miles S. W. at about 150 or 200 miles distance from the eastern shore of the Atlantic ocean, and terminate in the bay of Apolaxy near Pensacola, in the gulph of Mexico. Col. Spotswood, lieut. governor of Virginia, was the first who passed the Apolacian mountains, or great Blue hills, and the gentlemen his attendants were called knights of the horse-shoe, having discovered a horse-pass. At present there are two passes cross these mountains; the north pass is in Spotsylvania, the south pass is near Brunswick. Some rivers have been discovered on the west side of the Apolacian mountains,



tains, which fall into the river Ohio, which falls into the river Mississippi below the river Illinois.

For some further account of the Apolacian mountains, see the section of Pensylvania, vol. II. p. 313. The Irish who had made settlements in the western parts of Pensylvania, are exceeded by the Germans of late years imported into Pensylvania; these Germans by a superior industry and frugality (notwithstanding of the north of Ireland protestants being noted for industry and frugality) have purchased most of the Irish settlements there, and the Irish move further into Maryland, Virginia, and North-Carolina, along the foot of the Apolacian mountains, where the land is good and very promising, being the wash of these hills and mountains: the Indian traders travel this road, to head many of the rivers; here are several congregations of Irish presbyterians, to be described in the section of Virginia.

The alarum list, and the training militia, are nearly in the same manner, and under the same regulations as in the colonies already mentioned.

As to the numbers of white and black people in the province, we may make some estimate from the polls of taxables as found 1734 upon an exact scrutiny, when every taxable was allowed 30 s. out of a large emission of paper currency; they were at that time about 36,000 persons of white men 16 æt. and upwards, and blacks men and women from 16 æt. to 60 æt. perhaps at present the taxables may be about 40,000.

The proprietor's quit-rents are 2 s. sterl. per ann. for every 100 acres, he in time patented vacant lands at 4 s. per 100 acres; lately he has endeavoured to let vacant lands at 10 s. quit-rent per 100 acres, but it did not take; he manages the patenting of lands, and collecting of the quit-rents, by agents. Not many years since, the assembly, with consent of the lord proprietor, by way of experiment, during the term of the three years, granted their proprietor in lieu of quit-rents, a revenue



a revenue of 3 s. 6 d. sterl. duty per hoghead of tobacco, to be paid by the merchant or shipper; thus the planters or assembly to ease themselves, laid the burthen upon trade; this amounted to about 5000 l. sterl. per ann. but upon the expiration of the three years, this projection was dropped, and the proprietor found it more for his interest to revert to the revenue arising from his quit-rents.

The governor's allowance of salary is as per agreement with the proprietor. The council are paid by the country 180 lb. tobacco per diem, which is much grumbled at, because they are of his appointment, and his creatures. The representatives are paid by the country, or publick revenue, 160 lb. tobacco per diem.

The proprietor has several reserved good mannors in many parts of the province, which he lets to farm. By his patent the proprietor is not obliged to transmit the provincial laws home for approbation.

Anno 1704, the assembly laid a duty of 2 s. per hoghead tobacco, one half to the proprietor, the other half toward the charges of the government.

There is an impost upon negro slaves of 20 s. sterl. and 20 s. currency.

As in other British colonies, they have distinct province, county, and parish rates or taxes. The provincial taxes are polls of taxables at 90 lb. of tobacco per head or upwards, according to exigencies; upon the Cuba or Spanish West-India expedition, it was 120 lb. impost upon servants, slaves, and liquors, excise, &c.

Currencies. The principal currency of Maryland and Virginia is tobacco per lb. or hundred weight, as it is stated from time to time by acts of assembly, or tacit general consent of the people. In Maryland, before 1734, the currency was reckoned at proclamation value, 6 s. per heavy piece of eight; but that year the assembly went into the iniquitous scheme of paper currency, which fraudulently had been practised in many of our colonies;



colonies ; they emitted 90,000 l. in bills of publick credit, whereof 30 s. to every taxable, being 36,000 taxables, is 54,000 l. the remaining 36,000, was to build a governor's house, and to be let upon loan : the fund for calling in these bills of publick credit was a duty upon liquors, &c. to be paid in sterling, and lodged in the bank of England ; all these bills to be cancelled in the space of thirty years. These bills were not (by the act of assembly) receivable in the proprietor's quit-rents, and fundry publick fees, because an ensuing depreciation was obvious to people of foresight ; and accordingly from thirty-three and three quarters difference of exchange with London, it gradually did rise to one hundred and fifty difference. Anno 1740, the Pensylvania 8 s. was equal to 12 s. Maryland ; but as the fund for cancelling these bills of credit was regularly transmitted to the bank of England, they gradually recovered their value, and anno 1748, 200 Maryland was equal to 100 sterl.

The first period for calling in and cancelling one third of these bills was in September 1748 ; and by act of assembly there was allowed from September 29, 1748, to March 29, 1749, to bring in all the bills to be burnt ; accordingly of the 90,000 l. 83,962 l. 16 s. were brought in (the remaining 6000 l. was supposed to be annihilated by being torn, lost, &c.) and burnt, the possessors were paid one third in bills of exchange upon the bank of England, and two thirds in new bills ; after 16 years more, the possessors of the two thirds will receive 15 s. sterl. for every 20 s. currency.

### Courts, legislative and executive.

The first settlement was at St. Mary's, near the mouth of Potomack river ; the legislative court or general assembly, and the provincial supreme court of judicature, were kept there many years ; but anno 1699, for the better conveniency of the whole province, they were removed to Annapolis at the mouth of the river Severn, as being nearly the center of the province.



At first the province was divided into ten counties, being five each side of the great bay.

St. Mary's,	}	west side.	Somerfet,	}	east side.
Charles,			Dorchester,		
Calvert,			Talbot,		
Anne Arundel,			Kent,		
Baltimore,			Cecil,		

Anno 1695, Prince George, an additional county, was constituted on the west side of the bay, and all the counties were divided into thirty parishes.

At present 1752, the province of Maryland is divided into fourteen counties, that is, seven counties each side of the great bay.

St. Mary's,	}	west side.	Worcester,	}	east side.
Calvert,			Somerfet,		
Prince George,			Dorchester,		
Charles,			Talbot,		
Anne Arundel,			Q. Anne's,		
Baltimore,			Kent,		
Frederick,			Cecil,		

Formerly in Maryland, the assembly or legislative lower house (the council is called the upper house of assembly) was triennial; at present they are called, adjourned, prorogued, and dissolved at the governor's pleasure; the representatives are called the lower house of assembly.

In the government of Maryland, there are four negatives in the legislature, viz. the lower house or house of representatives where all bills for acts do originate, the governor's council, the governor, and lord proprietor.

Of the four negatives in the legislature, the proprietor may be said to have three, viz. the proprietor's own negative, that of his governor or deputy, and that of the council nominated by himself.

The complement of the council is twelve, appointed by the governor general, principal, or proprietor; but paid by the province, 180 lb. tobacco per diem.



The lower house of assembly, or house of representatives, consists of four from each of the present 14 counties, and two from the metropolis or provincial town of Annapolis, paid 160 lb. tobacco per diem.

With regard to the executive courts, we may begin with the parish vestries, who not only manage the affairs of the parish church, but also manage the prudential matters of the district, as the select men, so called in New-England, manage their township affairs; they are also assessors of rates or taxes. In each parish they are 12 in number for life, and upon a demise, the survivors supply the vacancies after the manner of *Urædschap*, of the towns in Holland.

The county courts in Maryland are held in the months of March, June, August, and November; at present they are as follows,

1st tuesday of said mon. in	{ Talbot co. Baltimore St. Mary's Worcester	2d tuesday of said mon. in	{ Dorchester co. Cecil Anne Arundel Charles
3d tuesday of said mon. in	{ Kent cou. Calvert Somerset	4th tuestd. of said mon. in	{ Queen Anne's Pr. George's Frederick

In the months of April and September, there is a circuit court of assizes for trying titles of land, and of criminal cases: one distinct court each side of the bay consisting of a chief judge, an assistant judge, and proper juries, who sit in the respective county court houses.

From the county courts, there is appeal to the provincial court of Annapolis, which is held 3d Tuesday of May, and 3d Tuesday of October, in personal debts of 50 l. or upwards.

In the city of Annapolis are held quarterly mayors courts, viz. last Tuesday in January, April, July, and October.

From the provincial courts, held at Annapolis, there is allowed an appeal, in cases of 300 l. sterl. value  
or



or upwards, to the king in council; the appeal is first brought under the deliberation (this is a regulation for all the colonies) of a committee of council called the lords of appeals, and from thence reported to the king in council for a final determination.

The commissary, a place of about 1000 l. per ann. is not a superintendant of the clergy; he is a judge concerning the probate of wills, granting of administrations, and the like.

The lieut. governor is chancellor, he grants licences for marrying, which are given out or sold at 25 s. by a minister or parson in each county, whereof 20 s. to the governor, and 5 s. to this parson; he has fees for the great seal of the province, and sundry other perquisites; the salary allowed him by the proprietor is per agreement and seldom known; the country generally gives three half-pence per hoghead tobacco exported.

The court of vice admiralty is of the same nature as in the colonies already described; as is also

The justiciary court of admiralty for trying cases of piracy, robbery, and other felonies committed on the high seas, appointed by a commission from queen Anne, pursuant to an act of parliament, 11 & 12 Gul. called an act for the more effectual suppression of piracy.

#### The proprietors and deputy governors.

We have already hinted, vol. II. p. 355, that Sir George Calvert, afterwards lord Baltimore, obtained from king Charles I. a promise of a grant of these lands now called Maryland; and afterwards his son Cecilius lord Baltimore had a royal patent for the same, 1632.

During the civil wars in England, and the usurpation of Oliver Cromwell, the concerns of the Baltimore family in Maryland lay dormant, the family being bigotted Roman catholicks. Soon after king Charles II. restoration, 1661, Charles lord Baltimore, son of Cecilius, obtained a royal confirmation of the 1632 grant; he went to Maryland, and continued there some time.



Notwithstanding of the Baltimore family being rigid Roman catholick zealots, K. James II. superseded their jurisdiction there; the scheme of the English court at that time was, to reduce all proprietary and charter governments to the jurisdiction of the crown.

After the revolution of K. William III the Baltimore family had better usage, and at present they are become good protestant subjects; for the succession of the lords Baltimore, see vol. II. p. 309. Charles lord Baltimore, member of the British parliament for the county of Surrey, died in April 1751, and was succeeded by his son Frederick lord Baltimore.

Upon the revolution, Sir Edmond Andros was appointed governor of Maryland, and was superseded by col. Nicholson: Andros died in Lond. 1714, in a great age.

Col. Nat. Blackiston, succeeded col. Nicholson. \*

Col. Blackiston was succeeded by col. William Seymour 1704: Seymour put into Barbadoes by stress of weather, and had an eight months voyage.

Col. Corbet succeeded as lieut. governor in place of col. Seymour.

Col. Hunt arrives lieut. governor 1714, and upon K. George's accession he was continued governor.

\* Col. Nicholson was a knight errant governor; by his cursing, swearing, and hypocritical devotional exercises, he was at times made use of by the court in dirty affairs; particularly when any new encroachments upon the privileges of a people were designed with harsh usage; for instance 1686, he was appointed lieut. governor of the dominions of New-England under Sir Edmond Andros: 1710, upon the much faulted revolution in the ministry of queen Anne, he was sent to the northern colonies of British North-America, with an unprecedented commission as inspector general of all affairs, ecclesiastick, civil, and military; and in that capacity did much intimidate some governors and their councils: governor Hunter of New-York, a gentleman of spirit, told me, that if col. Nicholson had proceeded to New-York, and acted in the same manner as he did in the province of Massachusetts-Bay; he would at all risks have sent him home, to be tried by the judicatories there, as a disturber of the peace of the colony under pretext of an anticonstitutional unprecedented commission.



I shall only mention the succession of governors of note.

Benedict Leonard Calvert, Esq; homeward bound, died at sea 1732, and was succeeded by Samuel Ogle, Esq;

1746-7 in March arrives Samuel Ogle, Esq; appointed lieut. governor of Maryland in place of Thomas Bladen, Esq; Mr. Ogle continues lieutenant governor at this writing, 1752.

### Produce and manufactures.

These are nearly the same in the provinces of Maryland and Virginia, this article may serve for both.

Tobacco \* is an aboriginal American plant or herb, and is said to have been first found among the Florida  
Indians,

\* As the use of this plant or herb by an unaccountable whim is become the general amusement of Europe and of the European settlements on the eastern side of North-America, by smoking, snuffing, and chewing; and as no authors hitherto have given us an exact description or icon of this plant; I do here describe it from the life, by my own observations as it grows.

There are many curious Virginia gentlemen planters, who as botanists cultivate varieties of tobacco; but as this is not a botanical essay, I must drop them, and shall only describe that species which is cultivated and manufactured for exportation in trade.

*Nicotiana major latifolia*. C. B. P. M. H. 2, 492. *Nicotiana major*, five *tabaccum majus*. J. B. 3, 629. *Hyoscyamus Peruvianus*. Dod. p. 450, tobacco: the icons of John Bauhine and of Morison are not exact. It is an annual plant; when it is at its full growth, it is about the height of an ordinary man; the stalk is streight, hairy, and clammy, like that of the *hyoscyamus niger vel vulgaris*. C. B. P. common black henbane; the whole habit is of an obsolete yellowish green; leaves alternate, some of the lower leaves are a cubit long and nine inches wide entire, but waved; the lateral costæ of the leaf arch into one another near the margin; the leaves have no pedicles (the major *angustifolia* has long pedicles) and by an auriculated base embrace the stalk; towards the top, the stalk branches from the sinus's of the leaves, and higher from the sinus of a slender foli-culum proceed fascicles of flowers: the flower is slender and tubulous, one and half inch long, yellowish, with an obsolete diluted purple  
brim,



Indians, who smoak to satisfy their hunger; some write, that it came from the island Tobago, one of the West-India islands of nearly the same name; but most probably it came from Peru, because in North-America it is not spontaneous; the aboriginal Indians of North-America do not cultivate it, they purchase it of the English planters and smoak it with pleasure. Its classical or tribe name is Nicotiana, so called from John Nicot, a Frenchman, ambassador to the court of Portugal, he sent some of its seed, which he had from a Dutchman, to the court of France.

It has been said by some writers, that Sir Francis Drake first brought it to England from the island Tobago of the West-Indies. The name is Indian; we have no certain account of tobacco, till Sir Walter Raleigh's † arrival in England from Virginia, 1585; it was called Indian henbane: it was used by the aboriginal American Indians, both in North and South-America, before the Europeans arrived there.

brim, not divided but expanded into 4 or 5 angles; the calix is tubulous of 4 or 5 narrow segments; the pistillum becomes the seed vessel conoidal, 5 or 6 lines diameter at bottom, and near an inch long, bicopular with a middle spungy double placenta, and contains many small round brownish seeds; the seed is ripe end of September. In New-England it is planted in cows pens, it is hotter and does not smoak so agreeably as that of Virginia.

In trade there are only two species of tobacco, viz. Aranokoe from Maryland, and the northern parts of Virginia, and sweet-scented from the south parts of Virginia, whereof the best kind is from James and York rivers; the first is the strongest, and is in demand in the northern markets of Europe; the other is milder and more pleasant; the difference seems to be only from the soil; sweet-scented which grows in sandy lands is best for smoaking when new, or only two to three years old; that from stiff land if kept five or six years, much exceeds the former.

† Sir Walter Raleigh upon his return from Virginia to London 1585, having practised tobacco smoaking, in a gay humour in his closet, ordered his servant to bring him some small beer; in the mean time having lighted his tobacco pipe, and collected a mouthful of smoak, let it fly in the servant's face to surprize him; the servant imagining that his master's face was on fire, threw the small beer in his face, and innocently returned the jest.



Imported com. annis to Great-Britain from Virginia about 35,000 hogheads of 800 lb. to 950 lb. wt. per hoghead; from Maryland about 30,000 hogheads of 700 lb. and upwards. It is an enumerated commodity, and cannot be exported from British America to any ports than Great-Britain, and its plantations. The neat duty upon tobacco imported into Great-Britain is about 200,000 l. sterl. per ann. and 14,000 l. seizures. Anno 1733, when Sir Robett Walpole, first commissioner of the treasury, was projecting a reduction of fundry customs or imposts upon goods to an excise, he proposed in parliament, that the duty upon tobacco, which at that time was 6d 1 third per lb. should be only 4d 3 farthings per lb. whereof 4d excise and three farthings duty, this scheme did not succeed. \*

By a convention or agreement between the courts of Great-Britain and France, during the late war with France, the farmers of tobacco in France did contract with merchants in Great-Britain, (Mr. Fitz-Gerald was the general French agent in Britain,) for some British tobacco ships with passports, and to return to Great-Britain in ballast; the shipping ports in Great-Britain were London, Bristol, Liverpool, Whitehaven, and Glasgow: the delivery ports in France were Diepe, Havre-de-Grace, Morlaix, Bourdeaux, Bayonne, and Marseilles.

Virginia and Maryland sometimes produce more tobacco than they can vent to advantage, by glutting the markets † too much, and occasions a mutinous disposition among the planters, as happened in Bacon's rebellion in Virginia; and at times to keep up the price

\* Sir Robert Walpole was very intense upon bringing most duties partly into excise, and partly into customs, the better to multiply revenue officers, creatures of the ministry, towards carrying parliament elections, &c.

† This is sometimes the case with the Dutch East-India spices, and the West-India sugars.



of tobacco they burn a certain quantity for each taxable, as was done in Maryland upon the first emission of paper money.

The tobacco is generally cultivated by negroes in sets, seven or eight negroes with an overseer is a set; each working negro is reckoned one share, the overseer has one and a half or two shares. The charge of a negro is a coarse woollen jacket and breeches, with one pair of shoes in winter; victualling is one peck of Indian corn and some salt per week. To prevent tobacco from becoming a drug, no taxable is to cultivate above six thousand plants of tobacco, besides grain.

The plantation duty is 1d. sterl. per lb. upon tobacco exported to the other colonies, and is about 200l. towards the revenue of the college of Williamsburg in Virginia.

Tobacco is not only their chief produce for trade, but may also be called their medium or currency, it is received in taxes and debts; the inspector's notes for tobacco received by him, may be transferred, and upon sight of these notes the inspector immediately delivers to the bearer so much tobacco.

Formerly the tobacco affair was managed by receivers at culling houses near the shipping places, where the planter delivered his tobacco to the merchant; at present in every river there is a certain number of country stores where the planters tobacco is lodged, every hoghead is branded with the marks of the planter, store, and river.

The common culture of tobacco is in this manner. The seed is sowed in beds of fine mould, and transplanted beginning of May; the plants are set at 3 or 4 feet intervals or distances; they are hilled and kept continually weeded; when as many leaves are shot out as the soil can nourish to advantage, the plant is stopt and it grows no higher; it is worm'd from time to time; the suckers which put forth between the leaves are



taken off from time to time till the plant arrives to perfection, which is in August, when the leaves begin to turn brownish and spot; in a dry time the plant is cut down and hanged up to dry, after being sweated in heaps for one night; when it may be handled without crumbling (tobacco is not handled but in moist weather,) the leaves are stript off from the stalk, tied up in little bundles and packt up in hogheads for transportation. No suckers nor ground leaves are allowed to be merchantable.

An industrious man may manage 6000 plants of tobacco, and 4 acres of Indian corn.

The small quantity of tobacco which some people raise in Pennsylvania and North-Carolina is generally shipt off from Maryland and Virginia.

Tobacco is injurious to the nerves, it is somewhat \* anodyne, and intoxicates persons not used to it.

Pork. Vast numbers of swine or hogs run wild or ramble in the woods of Maryland, Virginia, and North-Carolina; they are generally small; salted and barrelled they make a considerable branch of the export of these colonies; they feed mostly upon nuts of all kinds, called mast, they eat oily and rank.

Mast † or forest nuts of many kinds are very plenty every second or third year, and the following year not so plenty; thus it is with apples and cyder in New-England; the plenty and consequently the price of pork from Maryland, Virginia, and North-Carolina, depends upon the goodness of their mastling years; anno 1733,

\* The Europeans use wine, and other fermented liquors, as also spirits distilled from them; the Turks, Persians, and other oriental nations, use opium, bang, betel, &c. all which occasion a sort of indolence or relaxation of mind: thus mankind by a natural tacit consent allow, that the intense application of mind, the cares and inquietudes of life, require some such expedients of alleviation.

† This word or term seems to proceed from the latin word *maficare*.



a good mast year, one man a planter and merchant in Virginia, salted up three thousand barrels of pork. Next to the pork fed with Indian corn as in New-England, acorns make the firmest pork; beech nuts make sweet pork, but flabby, soft and oily. In West-phalia, the hogs in the woods feed mostly upon chestnuts.

**Grain.** Wheat in Maryland and Virginia is subject to the weevil, a small insect of the scarabeous kind, which sometimes takes to it in the ear when a growing. The Maryland and Virginia wheat weighs some 56 lb. to 60 lb. wt. per bushel, and casts white; that from Pennsylvania does not weigh so much; the wheat formerly imported from Nova-Scotia was light and cast dark like rye; at present the prairies, as they are called, or the dik'd in wheat lands are wore out. May the present political diverting publick amusement of improving Nova-Scotia, become intentionally real, towards a fishery, a place of arms for our navies, a nursery of husbandmen, and a northern frontier for the protection of our British colonies!

Good land in Maryland and Virginia may yield per acre 15 bushels wheat, or 30 bushels Indian corn, which casts whiter than that of New-England.

Calavances are exported to several of the other colonies. *Phaseolus erectus minor semine sphaerico albido et rubro, hilo nigro.* C. B. P. white and red calavances, or Virginia pease; they yield better than the common pease of Europe, and are good profitable food for the poorer sort of white people, and for negro slaves.

Mays or Indian corn has been already described.

They raise in the uplands, quantities of hemp and flax. Anno 1751, in October, from the back settlements of Maryland, there came into Baltimore town near the bottom of Chesapeak bay, sixty waggons loaden with flax seed. In some counties of Maryland are erected charity working schools.



Towards the mountains there are some furnaces for running of iron ore into pigs and hollow cast ware, and forges to refine pig iron into bars.

Timber and other wooden lumber. Their oak is of a strait grain, and easily rives into staves; in building of vessels it is not durable, they build only small craft; some years since they built a very large ship called the British merchant, burthen one thousand hogheads; with many repairs she kept in the Virginia trade 36 years.

Their black walnut is in demand for cabinets, tables, and other joiners work.

Maryland and Virginia produce large beautiful apples, but very mealy; their peaches are plenty and good; from these they distil a spirit, which they call cyder brandy and peach brandy.

The Maryland affairs, concerning their custom houses, and naval officers, the number of entries and clearances of vessels, the quality and quantity of their exports and imports, and the tribe of officers thereto belonging, are not hitherto fully come to my knowledge: I do not chuse to insert any thing that is not in some regard perfect, therefore at present, I shall only copy a few lines from the latest present state of Great-Britain. I observe their salaries are small.

North Potomack	A collector and to keep a boat
Patuxent	A collector and to keep a boat
Annapolis	A surveyor
Potomack	A collector and to keep a boat
Both sides of the bay	A riding surveyor
Williamstade	A surveyor
Bohama and Sassefras	A riding surveyor
Wicomoc and Munia	A surveyor
Delaware bay	A surveyor



MISCELLANIES.

As many things designed for a general appendix, must be loose, incoherent, and not fluent; for the ease of common readers, we shall annex some parts of it to each of the subsequent sections by the name of miscellanies, being of things omitted, or that were not come to my knowledge at the times of writing, or not reduceable to particular sections. As I have all along given it the character of common-place, the summary in propriety may admit of this latitude.

In the Rhode-Island section was omitted an authentick court paper, dated Windsor, Sept. 13, 1686, concerning the surrender of Rhode-Island charter, “His majesty  
“has graciously received the address of the colony of  
“Rhode-Island and Providence plantations in New-Eng-  
“land; humbly representing that upon the signification  
“of a writ of quo warranto against their charter, they  
“had resolved in a general assembly not to stand suit  
“with his majesty, but wholly to submit to his royal  
“pleasure themselves and their charter: wherefore his  
“majesty has thought fit to accept the surrender.”  
N. B. As the Rhode-Island charter was not vacated by any process in the courts of law, and the voluntary surrender not properly recorded; upon the revolution of K. WILLIAM they reassumed their charter, and their actings in pursuance of that charter are deemed good by the court of Great-Britain.

In the miscellany article of the section of Pensylvania, vol. II. p. 337, was inserted a letter from the lord justices of Great-Britain to Mr. D. ——— commander in chief of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, concerning an illegally projected synod or consistory of the congregational † ministers in that colony; in this letter

† Besides other inconveniencies, there seems to be an impropriety or inconsistency in congregationalist or independent religion societies



letter Mr. D — seems to be faulted as conniving at such anti-constitutional proceedings ; as this gentleman was noted for his fidelity to the crown, and probity towards the people under his direction, when in the administration of that colony ; I cannot avoid publishing his vindication of himself in a letter to the board of trade and plantations.

“ My Lords,

“ By a ship lately arrived, I received from their excellencies, the lords justices, an instruction for my future proceedings with respect to a synod proposed to be held by the ministers of this his majesty’s province, which shall be punctually obeyed as there shall be occasion ; their lordships were also pleased to censure the proceedings already had in that affair. Wherefore I think myself obliged to acquaint your lordships, that I did not pass a consent for a synod, but only to a vote of the council and assembly, reserving the consideration thereof to the next sessions, as you will see by the copies of the votes of that sessions transmitted to you soon after the rising of the court ; and I was then of opinion it would not come on the carpet again, as it never did, notwithstanding the present sessions had been sitting for some weeks before their lordships orders concerning the same was received ; nevertheless I should have taken myself obliged to have asked your lordships directions therein, if I had apprehended it to be of a new and extraordinary nature ; but I must observe, that a vote in the same words was passed on the like occasion by his majesty’s council here in the year 1715, and never as I have heard of, censured by your lordships ; and here I humbly take leave to say in behalf of

ties petitioning for a synod, or superior collective authority : it seems to intimate that the subordinate classical way of subordination in church government with the presbyterians, is natural in its tendency.



“ the ministers of this province, that I know them to be  
 “ a body of men most loyal and inviolably attached to  
 “ his majesty, and to his illustrious house, and there-  
 “ fore I did not apprehend any inconvenience could arise  
 “ from their assembling, especially since they make no  
 “ pretences that I know of to do any acts of authority,  
 “ in such meetings, though they call them by the name  
 “ of synod.”

From the accounts we have from time to time received from Pennsylvania, of the moravian sectary there, and of a late act of the British parliament in their favour; it was imagined that they were inoffensive in their devotional way; but their late character from Germany, seems to caution against their proceedings.

A continuation from the moravian affairs, vol. II. p. 154, 335. The moravian indiscreet zealots \* have been continually endeavouring to part members from all the three established professions, (papists, lutherans, and calvinists) in the holy Roman empire, especially of tender minds. The Bohemia and moravian brethren, by scandalous songs, sermons, and writings, obtruded as gospel truths, under the count of Zinzendorf, a new sort of religion; not to be tolerated in the laws of the holy Roman empire; they used Herenhutish songs, method, and books of institution, count of Iffenburgh and Badingen.

In Maryland and Virginia there is a general toleration to legally qualified ministers, to officiate in places legally licensed.

Hanover is 60 miles from Williamsburg. A minister qualified, and a meeting licensed, may claim the

\* The vermin in all religions, have been enthusiasts, indiscreet zealots or bigots, and political managers to serve the court ministry in their projections.



liberties of toleration, taking the usual government oaths, getting the meeting-houses recorded, and subscribing the articles of the church of England, except the 34, 35, 36, and this clause in the 20th article, "The church hath power to decree rites and ceremonies, and authority in controversies of faith." These presbyterians voluntarily put themselves under the immediate care of the presbytery of Newcastle, and synod of New-York; which they may cast off at pleasure.

Mr. Davies a presbyterian minister came into this colony 1748, and obtained licenses for seven meeting-houses, an extravagant plurality; among these he divided his time, viz. three in Hanover county, one in Henrico county southward, one in Carolina county northward, one in Louisa county westward, and one in Gooch land to the S. W. of Hanover; these assemblies are generally called new lights, and may consist of about 300 communicants. Mr. Davies wrote anno 1751; there were not ten dissenters within a hundred miles of Hanover when he arrived there.

There is an immense quantity of land unsettled westward between Hanover county, and the rivers which fall into the Mississippi river. The three frontier counties in Virginia, of Frederick, Augusta, and Lunenburg, are prodigiously large, and generally settled by Irish presbyterians, as is also Amelia and Albemarle counties. In Virginia to the westward, they are continually making new counties, as they do new townships in New-England.

The county courts grant meeting-house licenses, but may be negatived by the superior or supreme court. Sometimes the county courts deny the granting of licenses, and sometimes county licenses when granted, are negatived by the council, alledging that it does not belong to a county court to proceed in such affairs, and that a dissenting minister can have no legal tolerated right to more meeting-houses than one.



The \* frontier counties of Maryland and Virginia are generally inhabited (as I hinted before) by north of Ireland Scots presbyterians, who landed in Pennsylvania, but sold their improvements there to the more industrious German settlers: their pulpit discourses are (generally new-lights so called) against the modish system of arminianism, moral duties, and speculative truths: some of them are under the care of the imaginary synod of Philadelphia, some belong to the synod of New-York; but under the immediate care of the presbytery of Newcastle; in this presbytery there are 12 members, and two or three candidates upon probation.

Roman † catholicks abound in Maryland.

\* Mr. D——ies, a dissenting presbyterian minister of Hanover county in Virginia, in a piece which he printed 1751, concerning the state of religion among the protestant dissenters in Virginia, gives some informations concerning these affairs, but with a new-light or enthusiastick turn. He writes, that there has been a considerable revival, or rather settlement of religion, in Baltimore county of Maryland, which lies along Sesquahanna river and borders on Pennsylvania; as also in Kent county, and queen Anne's county between Chesapeak bay and Delaware river. He says there have been in Maryland and Virginia a great number of Scots merchants, (he means merchants clerks, super-cargoes, and subsuper-cargoes) who were educated in the presbyterian way; but generally prove a scandal to their religion and country, by their loose principles, and immoral behaviour, and become indifferent in religious professions, and affect politeness in turning deists, or fashionable conformists. N. B. Young persons of any nation, after being fettered with peculiar religion modes, when turned loose, they become wanton, and indulge themselves in irregularities.

† It is not easily to be accounted for, that the British government are not more sedulous, in purging off by lenitives, not by drasticks, the pernicious leaven of popery (their doctrine of no faith to be kept with hereticks or dissenters from them, destroys all society) which prevails in Montserrat, Maryland, and Ireland. The list of protestants and papists in Ireland, as computed (in all cases, I use the last computations that are in my knowledge) anno 1732 and 1733.

	Protestant families.	Popish families.
In Ulster	62,620	38,459
Leinster	25,238	92,424
Munster	13,337	106,407
Connaught	4,299	44,133
	<hr/>	<hr/>
	105,004	281,423



† An indolent way of reading their publick prayers and sermons prevails in our colonies.

The medical digression continued.

The science or art of medicine will ever remain weak in theory, and must be supplied by experience, and some specifics (I do not mean quack nostrums) whose salutary operations or effects in some diseases have been discovered not by investigation but by chance, such as the Peruvian bark, mercury, opium.

Experience and sedulous observation are too much neglected by the indolent practitioners of our colonies; they chuse to practise from authorities, whereas authorities must always give way to experience; the nature of medical affairs allow of no other demonstration than that of good observation; Sydenham on the small-pox is reckoned his master-piece. \*

In

† The churches where the minister reads the prayers and sermons may be called reading houses, and the minister may be called the reader, but at present only the assistant minister is called the reader and lecturer: in Scotland, and in the foreign churches of all denominations, reading of sermons and discourses is not practised.

\* From my practice relating to the small-pox, which prevailed in Boston 1721, and 1730, for the benefit of the publick, especially of my neighbours or townsmen; I beg the reader's indulgence in allowing me to observe, that in the management of the spreading small-pox, it may be adviseable for persons much advanced in years, and consequently their juices rancid, and persons infirm and of a bad habit of body, to avoid the infection by retiring into the country for a few months, considering that the small-pox does not prevail in Boston, but after long periods; since the first settlement of Boston the small-pox was epidemical or popular only 1649, 1666, 1677 and 1678, 1689 and 1690, 1702, 1721, 1730, the present small-pox 1752, perhaps may spread or not spread. All other persons, especially children, may continue in town and run the risk in the natural way or by inoculation, after a previous proper regimen: this regimen, according to the best of my judgment, is a mercurial purge or two, a soft diet; avoid catching of cold, use no violent exercise of body or perturbation of mind; upon seizure, if the patient is plethorick, and the fever runs high, blood-letting is adviseable (but not upon or after eruption) and gives room for nature



In our colonies, if we deduct persons who die of old age, of mala stamina vitæ or original bad constitutions, of intemperance, and accidents, there are more die of the practitioner than of the natural course of the distemper under proper regimen. The practitioners generally without any considerate thought fall into some routine of method, and medicines, such as repeated blood-lettings, opiates, emeticks, catharticks, mercurials, Peruvian bark.

In our various colonies to prevent a notorious depopulation from male practice in medicine or cure of diseases; there may be acts of assembly for the regulation thereof, which at present is left quite loose. A young man without any liberal education, by living a year or two in any quality with a practitioner of any sort, apothecary, cancer doctor, cutter for the stone, bone-setters, tooth-drawer, &c. with the essential fundamental of ignorance and impudence, is esteemed to qualify himself for all the branches of the medical art, as much or more than gentlemen in Europe well born, liberally educated (and therefore modest likewise) have travelled much, attended medical professors of many denominations, frequented city hospitals, and camp infirmaries, &c. for many years.

In the expressions of Hippocrates, this is literally an ars longa, it requires long experience and observation with a peculiar sagacity; in practice a dull application (we cannot much boast of application) does not answer, there must be a suitable genius, and sometimes a particular paroxysm of imagination, as is remarkable in poets and painters, and as I have observed in myself,

ture to act her part at more liberty; in the beginning a gentle emetick or vomit is of good use, it renders the habit of the body more meable in circulation, by its shocks; during the course of this distemper, dilute plentifully, use a cool but not cold regimen; in the declension use gentle catharticks: by this management many of my small-pox patients have sustained the distemper with ease, and without decumbiture or confinement.



in the diagnostick part of our profession. Knowledge, that is, observation, and sagacity are the two great requisites in a physician.

In our colonies, how can a young man of no previous liberal education, or disposition to a peculiar knowledge in the affair, in a few years attendance in an apothecary's shop, and a few months travel, without practical knowledge, attain to any degree of perfection in this profession? These things are not mysteries or inspirations of particular persons in the case, but an impudent delusion and fraud. I shall not call upon any man's name in the question, lest it should appear a malicious or invidious resentment for secret injuries done, not in the way of medical practice, but in ——— such things we may in a christian spirit forgive, but naturally we cannot forget.

The practice of physick requires much circumspection and discretion, only to be attained by a long and attentive practice. The constitutions and other circumstances occasion the same species of a distemper to appear variously; for instance,

Inebriation, an illness very obvious and too common in our colonies; some it renders more vigorous, in others the tongue and limbs falter; some are serious, that is, praying or crying drunk; some are mad or furious, some dull and sleepy; some gay and witty, some dull and silly. Thus it is in all distempers, the symptoms vary according to the constitution, and in the general indications of cure ought to be allowed for.

In astronomy the inequality of the motions of the several planets are many and various, but by indefatigable observations they are reduced to equations or rules; but it is to be feared that in our microcosm or animal œconomy, there are so many inequalities as not to admit of any fixed rules, but must be left to the sagacity of some practitioners, and to the rashness of others.





## SECTION XVI.

Concerning the COLONY and Dominions of

## VIRGINIA.

Columbus's discoveries of America, set all trading or navigating nations into the humour of discoveries westward of Europe. The Cabots of Bristol, Italian mariners, obtained a patent from king Henry VII. (see vol. I. p. 110.) anno 1495, for all lands they should discover west of Europe, with certain royal reservations: they ranged the eastern shore of North-America, and took a formal, but imaginary possession without occupancy of sundry parts thereof. From that time, for near a century, that coast was not so much as navigated by the English; until Sir Walter Raleigh obtained a patent from queen Elizabeth, March 25, 1584, for discoveries and settlements in America. See vol. I. p. 111. Raleigh and his associates fitted out two vessels, in a round-about course by way of the Canaries and Caribee West-India islands to the coast of Virginia, they fell in with the island Roanoke upon the North-Carolina shore, at the Roanoke inlet (about 36 d. N. lat.) of Albemarle sound or river.

Sir Richard Greenville, the chief of Sir Walter Raleigh's associates, 1585, at his return to England, left 108 men upon Roanoke island, under Mr. Ralph Lane; from imprudent management they were in danger of being starved, but Sir Francis Drake in his expedition to the West-Indies, had instructions upon his return to England,



to touch in there, and carried these miserable people home to England. At the same time Sir Walter Raleigh in a ship, and about a fortnight after Sir Richard Greenville with three ships, sailed thither. Sir Walter fell in with cape Hatteras a little southward of Roanoke; having no intelligence of the people left at Roanoke, he returned to England; Sir Richard found the island, but no people; he left 50 men upon the island with two years provisions, and returned to England; these 50 men were all killed by the Indians.

Next summer, 1587, three ships with men and women settlers and provisions arrived at Roanoke, and formed themselves into a government, consisting of a governor, Mr. John White, and 12 councillors, incorporated by the name of the governor and assistants of the city of Raleigh in Virginia: this settlement when Mr. White returned to England, consisted of 115 persons.

It was two years before Mr. White could obtain the necessary recruits of supplies; after a tedious passage with three ships, he arrived at cape Hatteras, August 1590, but in a violent storm they parted from their cables, drove to sea, and returned to England, without visiting the poor settlers, to whom no visit was attempted for the 16 following years, and perhaps cut off by the Indians, being never heard of afterwards.

In pursuance of the new-charter of 1606, capt. Newport, vice admiral, with settlers, (some Poles, and Dutch to make tar, pitch, pot-ashes and glass,) arrived at cape Henry beginning of May 1607; he sailed up Powhatan or James river many miles, founded James-town, and at his return for England left about 200 persons there; these may properly be called the first settlers of the colony; many of them died, and were much molested by the Indians. 1619 there arrived a large supply of 1216 people, they made many settlements; and 1620 an assembly of representatives called burgeses was instituted, and in the year following courts of judicature were appointed.



We may observe, that capt. John Smith, called the traveller, designed for Roanoke where Mr. John White had left 115 persons, fell in between the capes of Virginia, the southernmost he called cape Henry, the northernmost cape Charles, in honour of the king's sons; the Indian name of the bay was Chesapeak; the first great river they met with was on the south side of this bay, by the Indians called Powhatan, and by the English named James river, the king of England's name: about 50 miles up this river, they made a settlement upon a peninsula, being convenient for navigation, trade, and easily fortified, and called it James-town. From that time we have had an uninterrupted possession of that country.

Capt. Smith in his history relates many misadventures of the first Virginia settlers, viz. a third supply was sent from England 1609, being 9 ships, and 500 people, under Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somers, and capt. Newport; the fleet was scattered in a storm, and only 7 vessels arrived; the commission or patent was in one of the missing ships; this Virginia settlement from 500, were soon reduced to 60 persons, almost famished by mismanagement; but Sir Thomas Gates, and Sir George Somers, who saved themselves with 150 more people in Bermudas, built two small cedar barks, set out May 10, 1610, and arrived in Virginia the 20th, to the comfort of the remaining Virginia settlers; soon finding much misery, they all embark to abandon the country, but in falling down the river, they were met by lord Delaware with three ships, and all necessaries; Sir George Somers returned to Bermudas in his former cedar bark of 30 tuns, to fetch provisions, and soon died there, æt. 60. Lord Delaware returned to England, and left capt. George Percy commander. 1611, May 10, arrived Sir Thomas Dale with 3 ships, men, cattle, and provisions: August 4, arrives Sir Thomas Gates, governor, with 6 tall ships, 300 men, 100 kine, and other cattle, provisions, and ammunition.



1612, arrives capt. Argol, with men and provisions. †  
1614, Sir Thomas Gates and capt. Argol return to England, and capt. Yearly is left commander.

1617, capt. Yearly returns for England, capt. Argol being sent over governor by the council and company; \* of the company's people, there remained 54 men, women, and children; about this time the tenants brought into the store about 400 bushels of corn per ann. rent; tobacco sold from 18 d. to 3 s. per lb. 1618, the council and company sent over lord Delaware with 200 people, in a ship of 250 tun, he died in the passage. 1619, arrives Sir George Yearly as governor.

In a book printed 1620, by the treasurer and council we find, that there were many noblemen and knights concerned, earl of Southampton was treasurer.

1621, Sir Francis Wyat is appointed governor, and arrives with 9 ships. Every person was to plant 1000 plants of tobacco, with eight leaves each plant, which is about 100 lb. of tobacco; corn sold at 2 s. 6 d. per bushel.

To resume the thread of occurrences. Sir Wal. Raleigh by his attainder, having forfeited his patent, an. 1606, || several

† 1613, Mr. John Rolfe married Pocahantes, daughter of Powhatan, the king of the Indians, and peace with the Indians continued many years; 1616, Mr. Rolfe with his Indian wife went for England, where being upon return she soon died at Gravesend; Powhatan her father died in April 1618.

\* Sometimes they are called the treasurer, council, and company.

Capt. Smith, called the traveller, some time president of Virginia, continued the history of Virginia down to 1624; he was so volatile, that after 19 years expence of time in America, he had not one foot of land there.

Capt. Argol, 1613, carried off two French vessels from Port-Royal in La Nouvelle France, or North-Virginia, now Annapolis-Royal of Nova-Scotia.

|| Upon the reports of some private traders to North-America, there was a royal grant or patent obtained April 10, 1606, by two companies in one charter, see vol. I. p. 365. The northern company insensibly vanished, and a new company by the name of the council,



several adventurers petitioned the king for grants with jurisdictions, and the first collective settlements were made (the French at the same time were making settlements in Canada) and 50 miles up Powhatan or James river, capt. Newport laid out James-town; the government was in a president and council sent from England, they had sundry supplies from England about that time, but the settlement did not thrive: at first they were called the honourable or right worshipful company of Virginia. Sir Walter Raleigh upon his attainder neglected Virginia, and by a sort of connivance of the court went to Guiana a mine hunting for gold and precious stones.

The company of 1606, did not thrive; and anno council of Plymouth had a patent or grant, Nov. 18, 1620, (see vol. I. p. 366, with a power to convey their granted lands to any of his majesty's subjects, without any formal power of government or jurisdiction.

Capt. Gosnol, a former adventurer in a small vessel with 32 men from Dartmouth, essaying a more distinct course to Virginia, than had been formerly practised, fell into the bite of Cape-Cod, (he got much cod-fish there) in New-England some Biscayers had been a fishing there; he traded with the Indians to advantage, and gave names to sundry places, Martha's-Vineyard because overgrown with wild vines, Elizabeth islands, &c. which they retain to this day; he returned the same year to Dartmouth. This profitable voyage encouraged some merchants of Bristol to send two vessels 1603, in the same tract; they made a good voyage. 1605, a single ship from London fell in with the eastern parts of Long-island in New-York government, and traded up Connecticut river. From these successes, some traders petitioned the court for the charter which they obtained 1606 as above.

Capt. Smith, 1608, with sundry vessels, being the sixth voyage to these parts, coasting along the eastern shore of North-America, he writes, that Virginia lies from Cape-Fear 34 d. N. lat. to 45 d. or New-France; he sailed up Chesapeak-bay, so far as Sesquahanna river, in quest of mines, but in vain. 1609, many people were sent over with cattle, artillery, and stores, but were much harrassed by the Indians and sickness. 1619, in the compass of one year, eleven ships with 1216 men, women, and children, arrived from England, and made many settlements upon James and York rivers.



1609, the settlers were not exceeding 277; they surrendered their charter, being tired out with charges, and no prospect of profit, and a new patent was issued in the name of the treasurer and council. This new company appointed lord Delaware general or governor by approbation of the crown; by mistake of the mariners he fell in with Pennsylvania-bay, instead of Chesapeak or Virginia-bay, and gave name to it, this was before the Dutch settled, which it retains to this day; he soon returned to England. Lord Delaware in his second voyage to Virginia 1618, died in the passage; in his first voyage he arrived in Virginia June 9, 1610, and continued governor until March following.

1626, because of the bad conduct of the managers, and hardships sustained by the settlers, by a quo warranto the patent was sued out, both property and jurisdiction became vested in the crown, where it remains to this day; the settlers pay 2 s. sterl. per annum quit-rent per 100 acres, under the direction of a king's governor and council, with an assembly or house of representatives chosen by the people; these three negatives compose the legislature or general court.

When capt. Smith, some time president of Virginia, wrote his history 1624, within 60 miles of James-town, the principal settlement, there were not above 1500 fencible men, and for want of raising provision sufficient, they could not upon any exigency bring above 700 men together.

Because of notorious bad management, the company was dissolved by king Charles I. and the colony was brought under the immediate direction of the crown as above, and settlers flocked over; particularly some of good condition to enjoy the liberty of worshipping God in their own manner; lord Baltimore, a Roman catholick, retired thither, but the people of Virginia, rigid protestants, did not use him well, and he was discouraged from continuing in Virginia, as we have more at large related in the section of Maryland.

The



The first settlers intent upon taking up large tracts of land, occasioned the several settlements to be dispersed at considerable distances from one another, and not in towns or villages.

At present the jurisdiction or government is bounded south by a line W. by compass (the variation there being small, is neglected) dividing Virginia from North-Carolina, beginning at a certain great tree in the N. lat. of about 36 d. 40 m. (in its progress it intersects the river Roanoke many times in its meanders,) and continues west indefinitely; the western boundary is the South-Sea, or lands in a prior occupancy of any christian prince; it is bounded northerly, on the east side of Chesapeak bay by a line running due east from Watkins-Point, near Wighco river on Chesapeak in about the lat. of 38 d. 10 m. to the ocean; on the west side of Chesapeak bay it is bounded by Potomack river to a certain head thereof, and thence by a west line indefinitely in lat. — This Maryland line of jurisdiction with the province of Virginia, and of property with lord Fairfax, is not hitherto finally settled; east and south, Virginia is bounded by the great ocean.

K. Charles II. having gratified some noblemen with two large grants called the northern and southern grants or necks; when these noblemen claimed them, it gave great uneasiness to the settlers, and the colony agents in England agreed with these grantees of two necks, for a small consideration.

Virginia is divided by the great rivers of Potomack, Rapanahock, York and James, into 4 necks, the two counties east of Chesapeak bay makes the fifth great division; the division between Potomack and Rapahan-nock rivers, is called the northern neck, and is at present the property of lord Fairfax of Cameron, an Englishman with a Scots title.

Lord Colpepper, who came over governor of Virginia 1679, was one of K. Charles II. patentees of the northern neck; having got assignments from the other pa-  
 tentees,



tentees 1688, 4th Jac. II. he obtained a patent for all the northern neck; and by inveigling the tenants to pay the quit-rents to his agents, he became possessed of all the quit-rents, and his heirs at present enjoy them by a kind of prescription, but without any share in the jurisdiction, because chargeable: he relinquished the government thereof to the crown. Lord Colpepper of Thorstway in England died 1719, having no male heir, the heirours are extinct, his daughter and heiress married lord Fairfax: thus Virginia consists of two properties in one government.

Here we must observe that the continuation of this historical essay was interrupted for some months, by the unlucky incident of an epidemical distemper, the small-pox, after about 22 years absence, being imported, and prevailing in Boston of New-England: the printer and his people in fear of the small-pox, left their printing office in Boston, and retired into the country.

We may also observe that the writer from an intire and unavoidable avocation of mind from all other matters but those of his profession, finds the thread of his narration affected, which with the growing remoteness of the provinces to be treated of, will render the following accounts less minute, but always avoiding any deviation from truth.

### A DIGRESSION

#### Concerning the small-pox.

The appendix † according to our first scheme would have been out of proportion too large; therefore we

† This history or rather these minutes (as we have frequently hinted) were originally designed as a common place loosely put together, but in an historical manner; if they prove informing and useful, some subsequent writers may digest them; it is as much as my leisure time does allow, to draw the plan, and lay in the materials, a good artificer may with ease erect the edifice.

shall



I shall occasionally interperse some things designed for the appendix, more especially relating to distempers at times epidemical or endemial in the British North-America colonies: as the small-pox has lately been epidemical or very general in Boston of New-England, from the beginning of April, to near the end of July 1752, I shall here insert some particular observations concerning the same, while recent in my mind.

I. There are many things inscrutable in the nature of this distemper. 1. Why it did not emerge, or at least why it is not mentioned in history sooner than the beginning of the Saracen conquests? 2. Seeing it is universally agreed that a person who has had the small-pox once, is not liable to it again, the seminum thereof being supposed exhausted: how is it that parents who have procreated after having had the small-pox, their progeny is notwithstanding liable to receive the small-pox infection? 3. How is it that a woman having the small-pox when pregnant, the foetus does not receive the small-pox from the mother, but may receive it many years after being born? this was the case of capt. B——dodge of Salem and others in my knowledge. 4. How is it that the disposition of the air (Sydenham calls them, various small-pox constitutions) in fundry years is more or less conducive to propagate the small-pox infection, and to render that distemper more or less deleterious; thus we find by the bills of mortality of London, Edinburgh, and other great towns where the small-pox is never absent, that the number of small-pox burials in various years differs much, † without regard to the varieties of seasons and weather, and without regard to the more or less pernicious modes and fashions of managing the small-pox; modes or au-

† Within the London bills of mortality there died anno 1746, of the small-pox 3236, anno 1751, there died of the small-pox 998: in Edinburgh and West-Kirk parish, there died anno 1743, of the small-pox 249, anno 1747, there died 71.



thorities of leading physicians have from time to time perniciously been introduced into medicine, witness in the small-pox, Morton's alexipharmicks, Sydenham's opiates, and the repeated blood-lettings of some present noted practitioners in Great-Britain. May physicians in writing avoid all fashionable whims and cant of the times; such as were formerly occult and specifick qualities, chemical reasonings, mechanical powers, and the like: they are of no use, and soon become obsolete.

II. I have been a sedulous attendant and observer of the small-pox, which in Boston happened to be epidemical anno 1721, 1730, and 1752. In the year 1721, being a sort of novice in the small-pox practice, I confided too much in the method of the celebrated Dr. Sydenham, particularly his cold regimen, and frequent use of vitriolicks and opiates, but from their bad success I gradually corrected myself: 1730 I abandoned the cold regimen, and substituted a moderately cool regimen: I laid aside the frequent use of *sp. vitrioli*, as occasioning nausea in the stomach, and of opiates as a remora or clog of the course of any distemper, and as it solicits the morbid affection to the brain; with success I followed the purging method in the declension of the small-pox, I had the hint from the accidental natural purgings in that period which saved the lives of many, and was confirmed therein by the observations of Freind and Mead. 1752, I depended almost intirely upon the fund or stock of my own observations, and my principal indications were from the *juvantia* and *lædientia*. †

## III.

† Where these are not followed, medicine becomes a mere whim, and a ludibrium of the people; as in the small-pox, some follow a hot regimen, some a cold regimen, some use repeated blood-lettings, some a frequent use of opiates; others declare them pernicious; some keep the body coſtive, some use the purging method, &c. it



III. I am persuaded that during the last 22 years absence of the small-pox in Boston, from 1730 to 1752, if it had been allowed its free course, considering that persons when children would have been the subjects of it, fewer would have died of it, than have died of it in a few months 1752. If it is not allowed its free course when it does invade Boston epidemically, particular persons not qualified to receive it may avoid it, by retiring into the country for a few months. The not qualified are infants, their *stamina vitæ* are too tender; pregnant women; pubescentes and for a few years after puberty, while their juices are in a juvenile fret; persons upwards of 45 æt. (I write from observation, not from abstracted imagination) because their juices become rancid; and all persons under any constitutional or habitual distemperature of body, particularly the scrophulous or strumous, who generally suffer much in this distemper; we may remark that the small-pox sometimes leaves scrophulous dispositions in persons formerly not scrophulous. All others to render the subsequent parts of their life more easy, may run the risk in the natural, that is, accidental way (by the pores of the skin, by inspiration, deglutition, &c.) or by the more favourable way of inoculation.

IV. Before I proceed further, I shall give a general numerical history of the Boston New-England periods, &c. of epidemical small-pox. From the first settling of the province of Massachusetts-Bay the small-pox has been epidemical in Boston only eight times, 1649, 1666, 1678, 1689, 1702, 1721, 1730, and 1752: I shall enumerate the periods which happened in this current century.

is only the *juvantia* and *lædientia* can determine the question, as they have in the instances of Sydenham's grand mistakes of keeping the body bound, and frequent use of opiates. The mistakes of the most celebrated practitioners ought to be more canvassed, as their authorities are dangerous precedents.



1702, beginning of July, the small-pox appeared after thirteen years absence; the alexipharmick method and hot regimen were used; about 300 white people died of this small-pox; † the most burials were in the month of December, 74. \*

1721, it was imported (from Barbadoes) by the Saltorugas fleet middle of April; it continued skulking about until the middle of June, when the eruptions appearing in many families, the watches appointed to prevent its spreading were discontinued, and it was allowed to take its course. In the next parcel of decumbents, the eruptions appeared about the 7th or 8th of July. In the end of July it spread much; in October was the highest number of deaths, and about the middle of October small-pox burials begin to decrease. Æneas Salter, employed by the select men of Boston (the prudential managers of town affairs) to make a scrutiny after the small-pox ceased, by a book in several columns of lists, he found that the number of persons who continued in Boston (many fled into the country) were 10,567, whereof about 700 escaped; the small-pox decumbents had been 5989, whereof 844 died, which is nearly one in seven. — This small-pox continued in Boston 8 months, about 80 died with purples and hæmorrhages, which is about one in ten of the deaths. — In and about Boston 286 were inoculated, whereof the inoculators acknowledge six to have died, which is about one in forty-eight.

The small-pox of 1730 was imported from Ireland

† Hitherto petechiæ (purple spots) and hæmorrhages, of which many died, were called a mortal scarlet fever invading the town at the same time with the small-pox, but an entirely distinct distemper: 1721 I was the first who in New-England introduced them as deleterious symptoms in the small-pox.

\* In the beginning of this century, the inhabitants of Boston, blacks included, were about 6750, and the burials communibus annis about 230. Anno 1720, the inhabitants were circiter 11,000, and burials communibus annis about 350. Anno 1735, (1729 and 1730 were measles and small-pox years) the inhabitants were about 15,000, and burials communibus annis 500.



in the autumn 1729, and was shut up in a few families during winter; beginning of March following it spread much, the watches were removed, and 4th of March 1729-30 it had a free course, and inoculation was allowed. The highest number of burials after nine years absence was in June, it ended with the month of October. The decumbents were estimated at about 4000 (no exact scrutiny was made) whereof about 500 died, which is nearly one in eight, and of these about 75 with purples and hæmorrhages. Of not quite 400 inoculated in Boston twelve died, is about one in thirty-three; the inoculated small-pox was not so favourable as 1721, they were more loaded, and a more protracted confinement; many of their incisions suffered much, and required the special care of a surgeon for a considerable time; of the twelve deaths three proceeded from the incisions ulcerating and putrifying, S—ry W—d's child, col. Ch—ley's child, Mr. G——e's foreman.

The small-pox of 1752. A ship from London, capt. Cousins, with the small-pox aboard, was bulged Dec. 24, 1751, in Nahant bay near Boston; the people of Chelsey, the adjacent town, compassionately assisting to save the ship's crew, received the small-pox; about one in four or five died; v. f. or blood-letting was blamed and happily lost its reputation in the subsequent Boston small-pox. It arrived in Boston in January following, by a sailor belonging to the ship, and got into five or six families, but did not much spread till 20th of March 1752, and Monday 23d inoculation was let loose; some greedy practitioners indiscriminately inoculated any persons who could be persuaded to receive it, even pregnant women, puerperas, old negroes, and the like; upon a scrutiny made July 24, by the select men and the overseers of the poor in the several wards, the select men request the practitioners to inoculate no more after 27th of July. To take at one view the state of the small-pox in Boston from Jan. 1752, to July 24, the following table may serve.

Small-



	Whites	Blacks
Small-pox in the natural way	5059	485
Whereof died	452	62
By inoculation	1970	139
Whereof died	24	7
Sick in 17 families	23	
Persons who have not received it	174	

There died of inoculation 31 persons, not including the dubious deaths of Mr. Coleman's son, who died by subsequent nervous disorders and sore eyes, and the two daughters of Mr. Goldthwait who died under inoculation, but as it is said by the sore throat illness. The scrutiny reported, that the total of residents, so called, at that time were 15,734, including 1544 negroes, and about 1800 absentees who had fled from the small-pox. Died of an inoculated small-pox, about one in eighty-two whites, and one in twenty blacks.

V. The small-pox in cold countries is more fatal to blacks than to whites. In the Boston small-pox of 1752, there died whites in the natural way about one in eleven, by inoculation one in eighty; blacks in the natural way one in eight, by inoculation one in twenty. In hot countries it is more fatal to whites than blacks. In Charles-town of South-Carolina, when the small-pox prevailed 1738, upon a scrutiny, it was found that in the natural way, of 647 whites, died 157, is one in four; by inoculation of 156 whites, died nine, is one in twenty: of 1024 blacks in the natural way there died 138, is one in seven and half; of 251 blacks by inoculation there died seven, is one in thirty-six.

VI. In autumn the small-pox is the most deleterious; in all autumnal fevers there is a putrid complication from the declining and less vegetative season; in winter the season does not allow it to spread; the spring, if not too



too wet, and the summer, if not too hot, are the most favourable seasons for the small-pox.

VII. We improve in the management of the small-pox: in the natural way 1721, died about one in seven; 1730 about one in eight; 1752 nearly one in eleven, which may be attributed to the gradually relinquishing alexipharmicks, and a hot regimen formerly recommended by many, being one extreme; and of a cold management the other extreme: by this Sydenham has done much damage; as nature's helmsmen, we have varied from a more cool to a more cordial regimen, according to the constitutions of different patients, and the various stadia, and other circumstances of the same patient: v. s. or blood-letting, was seldom used; scarce any use of opiates: the patient was kept in a natural temperature with a plentiful use of diluters; the body kept soluble in all the stadia, and when the maturation was compleated, cordial purges for two or three days.

VIII. The greater or smaller mortality in the small-pox is not principally owing to the seasons, regimen, and the like; but somewhat inscrutable in the various constitutions of families and individuals; 1721, Mr. Bond, a carpenter, and five of his children, died with purples and hæmorrhages in Boston; 1752, four children of Mr. Wier of Charles-town died, whereof one was inoculated. The commonly received notion of the small-pox being fatal to the New-England born, is not true and just, and is of bad effect in depressing the spirits of New-England men when seized abroad; 1752 of the small-pox decumbents in Boston died about one in eleven; it is seldom so favourable in any part of Great-Britain.

The small-pox is a malignant contagious eruptive pustulary fever, observing certain stadia; communicable only by personal infection: it is not known to be ende-



mial in any country as the plague is in Turkey, it was not known in America until the colonies from Europe introduced it. In the natural way, from infection received to the first eruptions, allowing a latitude for varieties of ages and constitutions, are 14 to 21 days; in the inoculated way, are 7 to 14 days; but I suspect these of 14 days, to have received the infection in the natural way from the inoculator, or from the effluvia of his variolated doffils. The small-pox generally is not infecting, until a concocted pus is formed. In the small-pox time 1752, the chicken or spurious pox was frequent, and sometimes passed for the small-pox, and some persons have ineffectually been inoculated from thence: but if there has been an apparatus of two or three days, though the pustules are watery or ichorous with a thin cystis, if the bases be red with a circular florid cuticular expansion, we may pronounce it a genuine small-pox. There are vast varieties of the genuine small-pox; in general, the sooner the several stadia are accomplished, the more benign is the small-pox, and frequently the danger is in proportion to the number of pustules, especially in the face. In the small-pox natural and ingrafted, some patients a few days before decumbiture, have transient intermitting complaints; some after the genuine small-pox pustulary eruption is compleated, have eruptions of spurious pustules.

To form a general idea of the small-pox, we may take the distinct plump kind as a STANDARD. It begins with the common symptoms of a fever (in the apparatus of many, there are no chills, rigors, and horripulations perceivable; a cough is no symptom) particularly with a pain in the head, back, and limbs; oppression e regione ventriculi, nausea, or vomitings, sore throat in general, but no dangerous symptom, it gradually vanishes after maturation; nervous affections, deliria,



deliria, phrenfies, and sometimes convulfions in children; † the end of the third or beginning of the fourth day, the small-pox pustules begin to appear; in some few, the eruptions make their appearance without any apparatus symptoms; generally, the younger the subject, the sooner all the stadia of any distemper, particularly of the small-pox, are performed; the fifth day they are round and inlarge their bases of a lively red; the sixth day they come to a point; the seventh day the points or apices turn white; the eighth they turn yellow; the ninth there is a laudable digested pus; the tenth they begin to crust or scab; the twelfth they are dry scabs.

X. There are so many varieties of the small-pox appearances, they cannot be reduced to classes; we may observe that the very young and very old are scarce susceptible of the small-pox, perhaps their vis vitæ is too feeble for bringing the variolous leaven received, to leaven the whole lump. I shall enumerate some of the most noted varieties. 1. A distinct dry sort, few, not large, basis scarce inflamed, very small digestion, being warty or horny; the fifth or sixth day from eruption, they begin to dry and soon vanish, leaving no pittings, only freckles. 2. The distinct plump kind as above described for a standard. 3. The coherent, not well described by the writers concerning the small-pox; I suppose they mean a frequent or clustered small-pox depressed, generally pitted or umbilicated in the center, and upon the maturation frequently attended with a second or secondary fever. 4. The confluent, which are very irregular in their first appearances and subsequent stadia; frequently they appear erysipelas like, and after

† Sydenham and some others reckon them a good prognostick, whereas many such die in the apparatus and beginning of eruption; all practitioners observe that purgings and convulsions are generally the most fatal distempers of children, therefore they must be bad symptoms in the apparatus of their small-pox; I know of no distemper where convulsions are a favourable prognostick.



the period of maturation, they become an ash-coloured crust or white skin; their second fever frequently becomes a hectic, not mortal until after some weeks, months or years. 5. The small-pox interspersed with petechiæ, vesiculæ miliares, or small blisters of a limpid or bluish serum; with purple spots more or less diluted; and hæmorrhages, which are more mortal than the plague itself. N. B. In some there is at first, a flush or rash-like formidable appearance, but soon disappearing, the small-pox looks favourable. N. B. A round turgid small-pox with florid interstices is the best.

XI. Among the bad symptoms in the small-pox, we may enumerate the following: † mild symptoms in a small-pox of a bad appearance; universal feebleness or prostration of strength; pain from the nape of the neck all along the spine; nausea, and aversion to any drink; fetid anhelous breathings; groans, vigiliæ, inquietudes or languid tossings, comas, a sparkling piercing bright eye threatening a phrensy; colliquations of any kind in the eruption, such as profuse sweatings, many stools, menstruatio tempore non debito, purples and hæmorrhages. A miliary eruption, or like rank measles, or erysipelas like; a spanish brown unequal eruption, a crystalline small-pox; a filiquous small-pox, where the pustules of a cream colour run together, waved of various figures, spongy not mellow; a sessile small-pox; where the confluent sort dry in the beginning of maturation; after the eruption is compleated, miliary blisters or purples appearing in the interstices containing a dark red serum; a sudden subsidence of the pustules

† Excepting in bad cases of the small-pox, in Europe, physicians are seldom called upon; it is left in the management of the matrons and to nature: it is reckoned a distemper of children, such as are red gum, tooothing, worms, and the like; the Dutch with good propriety call it kinderen packies, but few of the adults are to receive it, because when children they are allowed to have it in common course.



and swelling of the face; the eyes shut up, opening suddenly; pustules sessile dry subsiding in the center; interstices livid or pale; in the desquamation or declension, where a sanious gleeting scab returns with a tedious expectoration of viscid phlegm, and hectick; a cold respiration; carrion like fetid stools; a strong vibration of the carotide arteries; the first eruptions more general in the extremities than in the face and neck: scarce any die but in the drying desquamation or declension period; this drying sometimes happens in the first of maturation, or any time of the maturation protracted but not perfected; indigo coloured stains in the pustules; scabs or crusts of a bees-wax colour are the most laudable, the ash-coloured are bad, the black are very bad; where the pustules after maturation seem to be at a stand, and do not scab or corrugate, the patient is weak, and the case dubious.

#### The management of the small-pox in general.

To receive the small-pox, when expected, in the natural or inoculated way; keep an easy undisturbed mind, avoid catching of cold, refrain from violent exercise, use a soft diet, take a mercurial purge or two. 1. In the beginning \* of the apparatus fever, give a gentle vomit (a rude vomit hurts as much as does violent exercise) it not only cleans the stomach, but by its shocks removes obstructions, renders the œconomy meable for a regular circulation. 2. When the design of nature is obvious, and her intentions laudable, give no disturbance by medicines, dilute plentifully because of the caustick acrimony, let nature keep its course; if any extra-

\* When the symptoms of the small-pox appear; the temper ought not to be too much lowered by a cold regimen, by v. s. or any unnecessary evacuation; occasioning a late, imperfect, unequal, second crop eruption, of bad consequence; neither should the temper be raised by cordials and a hot regimen to force the circulating juices to a separation of a greater load of small-pox than nature intended.



ordinary symptom happen, as is the custom in Great-Britain, call in the advice of a neighbouring honest practising apothecary or surgeon; or rather of some experienced discreet physician. 3. During the eruption and maturation periods, keep the belly rather soluble than bound, (Sydenham by a grand mistake recommends costiveness even to the thirteenth day) and upon maturation, a purging natural or procured, are salutary and have saved the lives of many, particularly in rigors and anhelous breathings. 4. In the whole course of the distemper, the patient is to be kept in a moderate or natural temper, an increased heat inflames the habit, cold depresses the spirits too much. 5. Give vegetable acids (mineral acids I have found too rude, and do hurt by occasioning a nausea or vomitition) because there is a notorious animal or urinous acrimony in the case. 6. When the maturation is compleated, to prevent or alleviate a second fever, from some part of the variolous pus being absorbed by the circulating fluids, give some cordial purges † for two or three days; upon any unlucky translation, it is easier to solicit the intestines to a discharge, (as being more under command, than any other secretion or evacuation) than the salivary ducts or urinary passages: this purging moderates the suppuration, and consequently prevents much pittings and scars, moreover it procures sleep like an anodyne, and more benignly, because opiates protract all the stadia; a protracted desquamation, with a sharp sanies or corrosive

† In the small-pox of 1730, I observed some patients with violent second fever symptoms, upon maturation compleated, seized with a natural purging which gave great relief; but as a blind follower of Sydenham, I check'd it by opiates, which occasioned a return of the violent threatening symptoms; until the effect of the opiate being over, the purging returned with great relief, and so toties quoties: this gave me a strong hint, that purging upon maturation compleated was salutary: I used it with success, and introduced the good opinion of it with many practitioners, to the saving of many lives; soon after I found this purging method recommended by Dr. Mead, Freind, and other physicians in England.



ichor, gleeing from under the scabs, occasion pittings and scars; so does picking and scratching of the small-pox scabs, before a new scurf skin is formed underneath to prevent the injuries from the external air. 7. Towards the end of the desquamation give a mercurial purge or two to defecate the blood and other juices. †

We may further observe, 1. That there are such anomalies in constitutions, that a few extraordinary instances proof against all pernicious management, are by no means to be adduced as precedents for forming of a regimen: Dr. Fuller in his *Exanthematologia*, writes, that a son æt. 15, of Dr Hooper, bishop of Bath and Wells, in a very bad small pox, for twelve days when awake, every half hour drank a bumper of strong beer, mountain wine, or brandy; he recovered: some drank only cold water and did well: Sydenham's history of a young man, who in the absence of his nurse was thought by the standers by to have died and was laid out on a cold board, the nurse upon her return, perceiving some signs of life, put him to bed and he did well. 2. Let not numbers of decumbents be put up in one close room, the congeries of putrid effluvia, renders the ambient air a puddle of corruption, and without a proper spring to continue the circulation of our juices, which is the life of animals. 3. Let not nature or the spirits (this ought to be regarded in all acute distempers) be disturbed by noise or confabulation. 4. Where medicines are required, administer no medicine that continues to be disagreeable to the stomach. 5. Any violent symptom appearing, must be immediately obviated; delays here are dangerous. 6. Let the belly be kept soluble; formerly from an implicit faith in Sydenham, I lapsed into that error, that the belly ought not to be kept soluble, lest nature should be confounded in her proper course; whereas in truth, nature is thereby alleviated. 7. Avoid

† Sometimes a hec tick fever remains to the 20th, 30th, 40th day or longer, and the patient dies hec tick or consumptive; sometimes a scrophulous disposition remains for life.



grief, intense thinking, or the like, particularly avoid fear; they hinder perspiration, and all other tendencies to the surface or ad extra of the body. 8. Upon the maturation, where the circulation is much crowded, the swelling of the face and arms, a ptyalism, a diabetical profuvium are of great relief; cordial purges answer the same intention, and are more at our command; spitting frequently begins with the eruption, and ought not to decline until about eleventh day of illness; it gradually becomes thick and ropy and requires plentiful diluting. 9. Purples and hæmorrhages are more mortal than the plague itself.

#### Concerning inoculation of the small-pox.

The novel practice of procuring the small-pox by inoculation, is a very considerable and most beneficial improvement in that article of medical practice. It is true, the first promoters of it were too extravagant, and therefore suspected in their recommendations of it; and some medical writers instance sundry disorders arising in the animal œconomy from some foreign liquids being directly admitted into the current of blood: these considerations made me, 1721, not enter into the practice, until further trials did evince the success of it; but now after upwards of thirty years practice of it in Great Britain, and the dominions thereto belonging, we found that the small-pox received by cuticular incisions has a better chance for life and an easy decumbiture; that is, the small-pox so received is less mortal, and generally more favourable, than when received in the accidental or natural way, by inspiration, deglutition, pores of the skin, and the like. We must still acknowledge, that it falls short of the recommendations given by its first promoters, being no absolute security against death and other calamities of the small-pox; it produces all the varieties as in the natural way, from the most favourable dry horny distinct kind,



kind, to the most deleterious attended with purples and hæmorrhages; the consequential boils and impostumations are more than in the natural way, besides their incisions ulcerating and putrifying. We hinted before, that in Boston 1730 of the twelve inoculated deaths three were occasioned by their incisions; two in three a few days after inoculation complain in their axillary, inguinal, or parotid glands, \* before the apparatus fever makes its appearance. We are informed that of the first inoculations in England, nine in ten were afflicted with sores, so as to require the immediate care of a surgeon or dresser for some time. †

To alleviate the crisis and deleterious symptoms of the small-pox, 1. We find good success in the Circassian way of procuring it by variolous pus applied in any manner to fresh cutaneous incisions. The manner which I happen to use, is a small cuticular sacification by the point of a crooked bistoury or scalpel, in the inside of the upper arm, and in this incision I lodge a very small variolated dossil in the form and bigness of a barley corn, || contained or secured by some sticking

\* Where the circulation labours, the glandular parts are the most liable to complain.

† If the small-pox procured by inoculation was so favourable as at first pretended, it would require only a barber surgeon or cupper; the incision or scarification is done with less risk than common blood-letting, and requires only a soft diet and short confinement under the small care of a nurse or attendant, and a practitioner's large bill would appear ridiculous and imposing.

|| At present in London, they generally use a small scratch, or scarification in one arm, and lodge therein a small bit of variolated thread. There is no proportion or dose of variolous matter requisite for inoculation; Pylarini writes, that by pricking the skin with needles dipt in variolous matter or pus, people have been inoculated: the variolous miasm is inconceivably subtle; 730 I accidentally inoculated Mr. W. Phips, by using in v. f. inadvertently a lancet (wiped clean and dry as usual) by which I had the preceding day taken some variolous pus for inoculation; it is true I inoculated him afterwards in the common manner, but all the stadia of the small-pox took their date from the v. f. and the orifice festered accordingly.



plaister for 48 hours, and afterwards dressed daily with some gentle digestive. 2. More incisions than one, is an unnecessary running the risk of more ulcerating incisions. 3. Hitherto we have not perceived any difference in the small-pox received from a laudable distinct kind, and that from a dismal confluent kind, which some of our audacious inoculators have used in want of a better, that they might not lose the benefit of an inoculated patient. Dr. Wagstaffe writes, that the criminals in Newgate 1721, were inoculated by pus from a fluxed sort of a person who died before the inoculations were performed. 4. The caution that persons who are to be inoculated take, not to receive at the same time the infection in the natural way, is a vulgar error; the receiving of infection upon infection does not add to its intenseness, as we may observe in persons who receive it in the natural way and are continually exposed to repeated infections, because whatever infection first takes place, renders the subsequent infections effect or abortive, and as the inoculated small-pox is more expeditious in its course, any other infection would prove abortive.

The history of inoculation relating to New-England, is briefly as follows. The Circassians living between the Euxine and Caspian seas, time out of mind, have carried on a considerable branch of trade with Turkey and Persia, in selling their own children and young slaves taken by excursions from their neighbours; but more especially their young women, they are beautiful, and in great request in the seraglios and harems of the Turks and Persians; while young they give them the small-pox by inoculation or otherwise, and they who retain their beauties are carried to market. This Circassian traffick conveyed the practice into Turkey; the Turks at first from their principle of predestination would not come into it, the old women of the Greek church practised it for some time among the meaner sort of people; Pylarini writes, that 1701, it first began to be used among the better sort in Constantinople.



1713, Timonius from Constantinople sent to the royal society in London incredible recommendations of this practice, "that for the preceding eight years some thousands had been inoculated, and none died, while at the same time, half of the affected in the common way died in Constantinople; and what is valued by the fair, inoculation never leaves pits or scars; children have no convulsions." Pylarini, the Venetian consul at Constantinople, 1714, sent to the royal society a more modest account of the same. "I was not an eye-witness to all that I now relate; inoculation sometimes does not take place; with some, in the glandulous parts and emunctories, abscesses do arise after some time." Dr. Le Duc, a native of Constantinople, and who was himself inoculated, assured Dr. Jurin, that out of many thousands, in the space of about forty years past, who had been inoculated in and about Constantinople by one Greek woman, not so much as one person had miscarried.

1721, I lent these communications to Dr. Cotton Mather, a clergyman of Boston; being very credulous, that is, of great faith, when the small-pox appeared in Boston, that he might have the imaginary honour of a new tangled notion, surreptitiously without my knowledge let a rash undaunted operator † to work, and by three practitioners in town and country, about 286 were inoculated, whereof about one in forty-eight died in Boston.

These communications were regarded in England, only as virtuoso amusements, until 1721, Mr. Maitland, a surgeon in the retinue of Sir Robert Sutton, the British ambassador at Constantinople, upon his arrival in London, from some scanty observations, but mostly from

† This undaunted operator imagined, that by going to London with a quack-bill of his inoculation performances in New-England, he might acquire a fortune in London; but so it happened, that void of common discretion to couch his ignorance and silly mean assurance, he returned to Boston without being called upon to perform any inoculation.

hear-say,



hear-say, with the merveilleux of a traveller, broached this novel practice, and a few were inoculated with success; which induced the royal family to think well of it, and by way of experiment some condemned criminals were inoculated in Newgate with their own consent. In the spring following by direction of the princess of Wales, six hospital children, and soon after five more hospital children from æt. 14 weeks to 20 years of age were inoculated; some did not receive the infection, as having had it formerly, or from some other impediment, but none died or suffered much: upon this encouragement, Mr. Amyand, serjeant surgeon, was ordered to ingraft the small-pox on princess Amelia, æt. 11, and princess Carolina, æt. 9, they had them favourably; this encouraged the practice; and from the accounts of Dr. Jurin, secretary to the royal society (a great promoter of inoculation) in the first three years, 1721, 1722, and 1723, of the practice, in all Great-Britain were inoculated 477 persons, whereof nine are suspected to have died, and as of these twenty-nine did not receive the infection (this is one in sixteen) the deaths were nine in 448, or two per cent. in this period of three years; the principal inoculators in England, were Dr. Nettleton in Yorkshire eighty patients, Mr. Amyand, serjeant surgeon, sixty-two, Mr. Maitland eighty-five, &c.

The first promoters were so incredibly marvellous in their accounts, as would have discouraged any sober man to have attempted it, if the subsequent more moderate accounts of its success had not given a reasonable encouragement. Timonius wrote, that of many thousands inoculated in the space of eight years none died. Le Duc writes, that in the space of about forty years, out of many thousands inoculated by one Greek woman in and about Constantinople, not so much as one person had miscarried, as is before hinted. Mr. Maitland in his printed account says, "Dying is a case which never happened in ingrafting; that the giving of the small-pox by inoculation never yet failed, nor ever



ever can ; no head-akes, thirst, inquietudes, and other fever symptoms, not one in a thousand, the pustules never leave any pits behind them." Dr. Brady of Portsmouth writes, "not one ever died of inoculation rightly performed, it always is favourable." Dr. Harris says, that "inoculating is a certain remedy against the confluent kind." Mr. Colman, a clergyman, and principal promoter of the practice in Boston of New-England, published, that "none die, no blains or boils follow the practice." Mr. B——ton the first operator, published, "there is no truth in the reports of people dying under inoculation ;" his accounts are so absurd they invalidate themselves, and require no other animadversion.—Other inoculators have published, the inoculated small-pox is always favourable,—never infecting ;—so safe as to require no physician ;—the pustules never exceed ten to a hundred, and do not pit. †

Dr. C. Mather, who first set up inoculation in Boston, in his published accounts of it, shows what small dependence there is upon weak authorities, "some cats 1721, in Boston, had a regular small-pox, and died of it." \*

—During the small-pox, the pigeons and dunghill fowls did not lay nor hatch.—He never knew blistering misgiving of saving life in the small-pox.—The patient is more healthy after inoculation, it is useful to women in child-bed,—it dries up tedious running ulcers,—makes the crazy consumptive people hearty,—and rids people of their former maladies. ||

In

† It would be idle in me, formally to confute these unguarded assertions, daily experience evinces the contrary.

\* He had not discretion sufficient to observe, that the small-pox is a contagious distemper, peculiar to mankind, as is also the measles, and plague ; that other animals have their peculiar epidemical or malignant distempers, murrain among neat cattle, rot among sheep, and the like : we may also observe, that some species of trees only are susceptible of peculiar blasts ; that male animals only imprgenate females of their own species.

|| Dr. Berkley's tar-water is lately recommended in the same manner



In making of medium estimates, we ought to take large numbers in a long series of time, but not the cases of singular families, where some may say that notorious circumstances were not avoided or attended to, such as pregnant women, child-bed women, old negroes, and the like; we had a remarkable instance in the inoculations of Boston, 1752, of five persons in one family, Mr. Sherburn's inoculated by Mr. G — r \* three died; — of 72 or 73 persons inoculated 1721 in Roxbury and the adjacent country towns by Mr. B — n, five died; which is about one in fourteen.

In short, the risk seems to be only two to three per ct. and by the purging method, and some prudential cautions, might be further reduced.

I am at a loss for the reasons, why inoculation hitherto is not much used in our mother country, Great-Britain; considering that it has with good success been practised in our colonies or plantations, particularly in Boston, New-York, Philadelphia, and Charles-town of South-Carolina.

The advantages of inoculation are, 1. The choice of suitable seasons. 2. A previous proper regimen. 3. A laudable (this is the most eligible) variolous pus or leaven. 4. We have no instance of any who received the small-pox by inoculation, receiving the small-pox again. 5. By many trials for upwards of 30 years in the dominions of Great-Britain, it must be acknowledged a more favourable manner of receiving the small-pox. 6. In a place of trade, it gives the small-pox a quick course, and the interruption of commerce short; in the very general small-pox of Boston 1752, the ti-

ner as a panacea: the principal advantage I found in it, is, when a physician is tired out with some tedious chronical case to turn the patient over to the use of the bishop's tar-water; valeat quantum valere potest.

\* This is not designed as a personal reflection upon my friend Mr. G — r, but to illustrate that inoculation is very far from being a preservative against death, as was alledged by some of its promoters.



morous fled from the small-pox beginning of April, and with the trade generally returned beginning of September.

The disadvantages of inoculation, whereof some are obviated. 1. Inoculated deaths being criminal: the royal family by their example, have removed this suspicion. 2. Procuring of abortion to women with child, is a sin in foro divino, though connived at by us. 3. A fordid mercenary manner of persuading child-bed women to receive the small-pox by inoculation, upon pretext of cleansing: whereas the puerpera fret in the circulating juices, is by this leaven increased, colliquative purgings ensue, and finally death: I can adduce some notorious instances in Boston. 4. The communicating † of personal or family chronical and constitutional distempers to the inoculated (a man has or ought to have a proper regard for his progeny and succeeding generations) has been a considerable stumbling block with me: on the other hand, from many trials in the space of upwards of thirty years practice of inoculating the small-pox in the British dominions, no such communications have been observed; the itch itself, a notorious cutaneous distemper, is not said to have been

† Chronical distempers have been received by cutaneous or external applications: we have a notorious instance of this, some years since in Cork of Ireland; a nurse reputed for drawing of child bed women's breasts; from a venereal ulcer under her tongue, infected the nipples of her women; these women in coition infected their husbands, and the city became generally poxed. All constitution distempers have some idea or seminum in every drop of our juices; the acute distemper according to its nature soon shews itself, the chronical ails act imperceptibly and slowly in the body; the distempers ex tra-duce, sometimes intermit a generation or two, and again appear in succeeding generations, such as the pſora of North-America, called a salt rheum, that is, a scurvy, negro yaws, scrophulous disorders or king's-evil, venereal diseases, manias and other hereditary nervous disorders, arthritick or gouty ails, nephritick cases, and the like, which may occasion inquietudes in the minds of the inoculated, and render them incapable of the greatest happiness in life, mens sana in corpore sano.

thus



thus communicated: and if after a series of years or generations any such fears should become real, such distant views cannot affect much where the present relief or better chance are in the case. 5. It spreads infection very quick, and endangers the neighbourhood not prepared to receive it: this is one of the reasons that it is felony or criminal for a man to set his own house on fire, because it endangers the vicinity: it is a hardship upon the publick, to oblige people abruptly to leave their habitations and business; some civil regulations seem requisite to obviate some difficulties which occur in this practice. 6. It promotes the practice of P—fraudes, as bishop Tillotson in another case writes, that some men had got a scurvy trick of lying, in favour of what they imposed upon people as truth, as lately happened in the Boston inoculations; upon an actual survey it was found that in about 2000 inoculations, 31 had died (others including some disputed cases, say 34) the promoters gave out 3500 inoculated, but gradually reduced the number to 3000, and afterwards to 2500, (see the Boston gazettes published in June 1752) and at last acquiesced in the actual scrutiny of about 2109: in policy of insurance offices, this false representation would be reckoned an imposition, because people who would run a risk at 1 per ct. may not run the same risk at 2 or 3 per ct.

#### Virginia settlements.

At first there were only a few general patentees, but at present every freeholder may be reckoned a patentee.

The government of Virginia pretend to extend their settlements so far back westward as the great lake Erie, and some branches of the Mississippi river, comprehending an immense quantity of land unsettled; and as their settlements extend gradually towards the mountains, they create new counties from time to time, for the convenience of attending inferior courts of judicature.

The



The frontier or furthest back counties being of great extent, no navigation, and not much foreign trade, hold quarterly county courts only; all the others have monthly courts; there are variations from time to time; at this time anno 1752, they are as follows.

Quarterly county courts.

Brunswick,	}	Last Tuesdays in March, June,
Fairfax,		September, December.
Lunenburg,	}	First Tues. in Jan. April, July, Oct.
Frederick,		Second Tuesdays in February, May,
Albemarle,	}	August, November.
Augusta,		Fourth Tuesdays in said months.

Monthly county courts.

Henrico,	}	First Mondays in every month.
Richmond,		
Williamsburg,		
James city,	}	Second Mondays.
Northumberland,		
Nansemond,		
York,	}	Third Mondays.
Prince William,		
Cumberland,		
Middlesex,	}	Fourth Mondays.
Elizabeth city		
Spotsylvania,		
Prince George	}	First Tuesdays.
King and Queen,		
Northampton,		
Stafford,	}	Second Tuesdays.
Essex,		
Gooch land,		
Princess Anne,	}	Third Tuesdays.
Surrey,		
Louisa,		
		Fourth Tuesdays.



Westmoreland,	} Last Tuesdays.
Accomack,	
Charles city,	First Wednesdays.
Warwick	} First Thursdays.
Isle of Wight,	
Hanover,	
New-Kent,	
Southampton,	} Second Thursdays.
Norfolk,	
Culpepper,	} Third Thursdays.
Gloucester,	
Orange,	} Fourth Thursdays.
Chesterfield,	
King George,	} First Fridays.
Lancaster,	
Carolina,	} Second Fridays.
King William,	
Amelia.	} Third Fridays each month.

Thus the government is divided into forty-five counties, whereof six hold quarterly courts, and thirty-nine hold monthly courts; see the proper article of legislative and executive courts.

The country between James river and York river is the best inhabited, cultivated, and produces the best tobacco.

Lunenburg, their remotest settlement, is about 100 miles S. W. from Hanover; Hanover is 60 miles from Williamsburg, the metropolis.

The lands west of the Virginia settlements are claimed by the Six nations, called by the French Iroquois, and by the British, Mohawks; they are also claimed by the southern Indians; see vol. I. p. 187; and by the French of Canada. The best lands are above the falls of the rivers; the first falls of each river must be the barcadiers for the back or inland countries, and in time become great towns or corporations.







The Government is divided into four parts: the  
 Executive, the Legislative, the Judicial, and the  
 Administrative. The Executive is the most powerful  
 branch, and is headed by the President. The  
 Legislative is composed of the Congress, which  
 is divided into two chambers: the Senate and  
 the House of Representatives. The Judicial  
 branch is headed by the Supreme Court, and  
 the Administrative branch is headed by the  
 President. The President is elected for a  
 term of four years, and may be re-elected  
 once. The President is the commander in  
 chief of the armed forces, and has the  
 power to declare war, make treaties, and  
 appoint and remove judges. The Congress  
 has the power to make laws, declare war,  
 and control the budget. The Supreme Court  
 has the power to interpret the laws, and  
 to declare laws unconstitutional. The  
 Administrative branch is responsible for  
 the day-to-day operations of the government.

The country between Lake Erie and Lake  
 Ontario is the best inhabited, cultivated, and  
 improved. The soil is fertile, and the  
 climate is healthy. The people are industrious  
 and enterprising. The country is well  
 watered, and the navigation is easy. The  
 roads are good, and the communication is  
 rapid. The country is a good place for  
 agriculture, and for the raising of stock.

The most fertile soil is found in the  
 valley of the River. The soil is rich, and  
 the climate is healthy. The people are  
 industrious and enterprising. The country  
 is well watered, and the navigation is  
 easy. The roads are good, and the  
 communication is rapid. The country is  
 a good place for agriculture, and for  
 the raising of stock.

The land and of the Province of Ontario  
 is the best, called by the French Indians  
 the *Terre des Hurons*, and by the English  
 the *Province of Ontario*. The land is  
 fertile, and the climate is healthy. The  
 people are industrious and enterprising.  
 The country is well watered, and the  
 navigation is easy. The roads are good,  
 and the communication is rapid. The  
 country is a good place for agriculture,  
 and for the raising of stock.







